962.6.7.

A NEW and ACCURATE

HISTORY

OF

South-America:

CONTAINING

A particular Account of ſome Accidents leading to the Diſcovery of the NEW WORLD; of the Diſcovery made by *Columbus*, and other Adventurers; of the ſeveral Attempts made to find out a North-Eaſt and North-Weſt Paſſage; and what Parts of AMERICA are ſubject to the different *European* Powers.

WITH

A full Deſcription of the SPANISH Provinces of *Chili*, *Paraguay*, *Peru*, and *Terra Firma*. Of GUIANA; particularly of *Surinam* belonging to the DUTCH, and of *Cayenne* belonging to the FRENCH; of *Brazil*, ſubject to the Crown of PORTUGAL; of that Part of *Paraguay* poſſeſſed by the JESUITS, where they have eſtabliſhed a New Monarchy; and of the various Nations of INDIANS throughout this extenſive Territory: As alſo of all the moſt remarkable Iſlands adjacent to its Coaſts.

Including the Geographical, Natural, Political, and Commercial Hiſtory of every Province: With the Religion, Manners, and Cuſtoms of the Inhabitants.

With DISSERTATIONS on the *Britiſh*, *Spaniſh*, *Portugueſe*, *French*, *Dutch*, and *Indian* Settlements.

By Mr. ROLT.

LONDON:

Printed for T. GARDNER, at *Cowley*'s Head, facing *St. Clement*'s Church in the *Strand*; and Sold by all the Bookſellers in *Great-Britain* and *Ireland*.

M. DCC. LVI.


BRITISH MUSEUM

TO THE

Right Honourable

THE

Lords Commiſſioners

OF

TRADE and PLANTATIONS;

And to the

Merchants of *Great Britain:*

THIS

Hiſtory *of* AMERICA,

Is humbly inſcribed

by their moſt reſpectful, obliged,

and obedient Servant,

R. ROLT.

TO THE

Right Honourable

THE

Lords Commiſſioners

OF

TRADE and PLANTATIONS,

And to the

Merchants of Great Britain,

THE

Hiſtory of AMERICA,

Is humbly inſcribed

by their moſt reſpectful, obliged,

and obedient Servant,

R. ROLT.

BRITISH MUSEUM

PREFACE.

AMERICA *is the largeſt of the four grand diviſions of the world; and is now become of the greateſt importance to the others. It has ſuch a variety of climates, and ſuch abundance of the moſt valuable productions, that all the principal* European *powers have been very attentive to their particular intereſts and connexions in this part of the globe, which they have colonized with great aſſiduity, and cultivated with amazing ſucceſs. The* Spaniards *owe all their opulence to their poſſeſſions in* Chili, Peru, Mexico, *and the* Antilles. *The* Portugueſe *have aggrandized their nation by eſtabliſhing their ſettlements in* Brazil. Great Britain *is indebted to her colonies in* North America, *and her iſlands in the* Weſt-Indies, *for the augmentation of her trade, the increaſe of her wealth, and the ſupport of her navy.* France *has alſo extended her commerce, ſo as to rank herſelf a maritime power, by means of her poſſeſſion in* Canada, Louiſiana, Cayenne, *the* Leeward Iſlands, *and* Cape Breton. *The* Dutch *receive no inconſiderable advantage from* Surinam, *and their iſlands adjacent to the* Spaniſh *main. The* Danes *and* Hamburgers *have ſome trade to the iſland of* St. Thomas, *and the* Virgins. *The* Courlanders *have attempted to ſettle in ſome of the* Antilles, *and the* Swedes *in* North America; *but without ſucceſs: from whence it is evident, that the general commerce and naviga-*

tion of Europe *are greatly dependent upon the colonies in* America.

THOSE powers who moſt tenderly cheriſh, and moſt prudently encourage, their plantation-trade and navigation in America, *in due ſubſerviency to the proſperity of their mother countries, are likely to have the greateſt ſhare of mercantile ſhipping, the beſt nurſery for ſeamen, the greateſt fund of wealth, and to be the moſt capable of maintaining the dominion and ſovereignty of the ocean. The trade to theſe colonies may be conſidered as ſo many branches of foreign commerce, carried on, and conducted ſolely, under the direction and regulation of the reſpective mother countries; whereby* Europe *is prodigiouſly enriched. A communication is carried on by the* Spaniards *between* America *and* Aſia; *which is productive of mutual advantages to both thoſe diſtant quarters of the globe. And* Africa *is of the moſt eſſential ſervice to the* American *colonies, by furniſhing them with negro ſlaves, to be employed in thoſe laborious and miſerable ſtations which could not be ſo well executed by* Europeans.

THE gold of Chili *and* Brazil; *the ſilver of* Peru; *the tobacco of* Virginia, *and* Maryland; *the ſugar and indico of the* Caribbee Iſlands, *and the greater iſlands adjacent; the furs of* Canada; *the hides of* Buenos Ayres, Hiſpaniola, *and* Cuba, *with the precious ſtones, pearls, balſams, drugs, dying-woods, and other commodities, produced in the different parts of* America, *have afforded a very beneficial commerce to the* Europeans; *particularly to the* Engliſh, French, *and* Dutch. *Bars of ſilver and gold are imported by many nations from* Spain *and* Portugal; *where it is impoſſible to prevent its extraction, and eſpecially in* Spain, *though the penalties extend to forfeiture*

feiture of life and effects; which will be perpetually the caſe, till Spain *is no longer in debt to other nations; and this point is only attainable by ſelling more than they buy, or of turning their paſſive into an active commerce.*

THE trade to Spain *is certainly the moſt advantageous of any to* Great Britain; *whereby ſhe receives a very conſiderable balance; as ſhe alſo does from* Portugal: *but the trade between* Great Britain *and* France, *is manifeſtly prejudicial to the former. However, the moſt profitable traffic of* Great Britain, *is carried on with her own plantations in* America; *and it is to be obſerved, that thoſe colonies, if properly encouraged, would ſoon be enabled to take off all the manufactures the mother country could ſpare.*

THE Britiſh *colonies in* America, *contain near a million and half of white inhabitants: they employ near* 2000 *ſhips; whereby* Great Britain *exports goods to theſe colonies, to the value of about* 850,000*l. a year; and imports from thence to the amount of* 2,600,000 l. *a year; gaining about* 1,750,000 l. *upon the balance, which remains in the hands of the people of* Great Britain. *This may ſerve to ſhew the advantage of the* American *colonies in general; and to account for the conduct of the* French *in their encroachments upon the* Britiſh *ſettlements. For the* French *are become our rivals, in the ſugar-trade; they are now ſupplanting us in the fur-trade; they have long ſince excelled us in the cod-fiſhery; and, perhaps, may endeavour to make their* Canada *rival our* Virginia *in tobacco: upon which account, the* Britiſh *colonies ought to be the principal care of the* Britiſh *government.*

PREFACE.

TRADE is now become the general ſtudy of all civilized nations, and the American *trade in particular. Therefore, it is neceſſary to ſhew how that country was diſcovered, conquered, and colonized: to give a particular account of all its reſpective diviſions; with their principal towns and rivers: to deſcribe its productions, both natural and artificial: to point out how far the different* European *ſettlements have connexions with each other: to ſhew the ſtate of the* Indians; *the trade of the country in general, and of each colony in particular; wherein old branches of trade are eſſentially to be ſupported, and new ones encouraged: with many other important matters that may ſerve to elucidate the preſent aſpiring views of the court of* France, *and the incertainty of depending upon the friendſhip of* Spain.

THIS firſt volume contains an account of South America, *which is in the poſſeſſion of the* Spaniards, Portugueſe, French, Dutch, *and* Indians. *It muſt be confeſſed, that the ſubject is not ſo conſequential or entertaining as that of* North America, *or the iſlands: yet* South America *is ſtill neceſſary to be known; becauſe it has been hitherto very imperfectly deſcribed. Beſides, it ſerves other* European *powers for carrying on a conſiderable trade, as well as the* Spaniards, *though illicit and dangerous: on which account the* Engliſh *and* Dutch *have made ſeveral attempts to gain a ſettlement upon the coaſts of* Terra Firma, Guiana, Patagonia, *and* Chili: *but this will be particularly repreſented in the diſſertations in the ſecond volume.*

THE remaining part of this work will contain the deſcription of North America, *and the iſlands; which will afford very intereſting matter, with reſpect*

ſpect both to the commercial and political ſyſtems of the European *powers. The lover of hiſtory will ſee how theſe countries were colonized and regulated: the naturaliſt will perceive how they were cultivated and improved: the merchant will be more able to diſtinguiſh between the different commodities of each particular colony, to what market they may be moſt advantageouſly brought, what commodities are requiſite for the plantation conſumption, how beneficial the colonies are to the mother country, and in what they are prejudicial; as alſo how far their different intereſts render them ſerviceable or inconvenient to each other: and all mankind, as well as the ſtateſman, will be made ſenſible of what encroachments have been attempted upon the* Britiſh *ſettlements and how much it is incumbent upon* Great Britain *to conſult the beſt means for the farther improvement of her colonies, particularly the ſugar iſlands, and the northern and ſouthern provinces on the continent.*

THE foreign trade of Great Britain *is now become the ſtrength and riches of the kingdom; as it diſperſes that blood and ſpirit throughout all the members, by which the body politic ſubſiſts, and is the living fountain from whence we draw all our nouriſhment. The price of land, value of rents, our home commodities and manufactures, riſe or fall, as it goes well or ill with our foreign trade; which has long been in a flouriſhing condition: but other nations are beginning to be induſtrious, and to be ſenſible that commerce is the ſoul of power. Even military ſtates, and arbitrary princes, throw by the terror of their arms, and moderate the exerciſe of their power, to invite commerce to their dominions, and protect property under their government. The* French *have been moſt diligent in directing their ſagacity to the promotion of their commercial intereſts;*

reſts; and they not only rival us in every conſiderable branch of trade, but in ſome have abſolutely beat us out of the foreign markets. The Spaniards *have at laſt opened their eyes, and are awakened from that lethargic diſpoſition, which has hitherto made them negligent of the benefits of trade, and the emolument of their colonies. This makes it neceſſary for* Great Britain *to keep her eye ſtedfaſtly on all the advances of a dangerous rival; and to have a ſtrict obſervation on all the ſchemes of every nation that is aſpiring to an addition of power by the increaſe of trade: which cannot be more effectually done than by properly underſtanding the reſpective intereſts, ſtrength, and connexions, of the different* European *powers in* America: *upon which account, it is preſumed, that a* General History *of that country will be very acceptable to the* Britiſh *nation.*

2 JY 61

CONTENTS.

CONTENTS.

VOL. I.

PART I.

CHAP. I.

The situation and extent of AMERICA. *Some account of its natives, and in what manner they first peopled that country; with a general view of its produce and commodities. A summary account of what the ancients thought about a new world; and some accidents leading to the discovery of* AMERICA.

Page 1.

CHAP. II.

Some remarks on the commerce and navigation of the ancients. The discovery and use of the loadstone. Some observations on the difference between the complexions of the EUROPEANS, AFRICANS, *and* AMERICANS. *An account of the birth and education of* Christopher Columbus; *his reasons for believing there was a* new world *to be discovered; and some reflections on the dishonour done him by having that country named after* Americus Vesputius. 22

CHAP. III.

In what manner the proposals of Columbus *were rejected by the republic of* GENOA, *and the king of* PORTUGAL. *How his application to the king of* ENGLAND *miscarried; and how he entered into an agreement with their Catholic majesties, for the discovery of* New Countries. *An account of his first voyage, and the difficulties he sustained before he discovered the* BAHAMA *islands. The discovery of* CUBA *and* HISPANIOLA; *with the reception of* Columbus *among the* Indians. *An account of the garrison he left at* HISPANIOLA; *and of his return to* Europe. *The detention of his men at the* Azores, *by the* PORTUGUESE; *his arrival at* LISBON; *and the honourable reception he met with from the king of* PORTUGAL. *His arrival in* SPAIN; *and the great honours which were conferred upon him by their Catholic majesties. In what manner* Columbus *undertook his second voyage. And the dispute between the king of* PORTUGAL *and their Catholic*

tholic majeſties, concerning their rights and pretenſions to the new diſcovered countries. 34

CHAP. IV.

The ſecond voyage of Chriſtopher Columbus *to the* Weſt-Indies: *with the diſcovery of* Dominica, *and ſome other of the* Caribbee-Iſlands, *and* Porto Rico. *His return to* HISPANIOLA; *and the tranſactions there. His diſcovery of* Jamaica; *and his return to* SPAIN, *to anſwer ſome complaints exhibited againſt him to their Catholic majeſties: with the reception which they gave him, and the account which he gave them of the natives of* HISPANIOLA. *How he vindicated himſelf; and undertook a third voyage to diſcover the continent of* AMERICA: *his diſcoveries there, and his return to* HISPANIOLA.—*A ſhort account of the voyage, undertaken by* Alonſo de Ojeda, *and* Americus Veſputius; *as alſo by* Peter Alonſo Nino, Vincent Yanez Pinzon, *and* James de Lepe, *for the farther diſcovery of the continent of* AMERICA.—*In what manner* Columbus *was ſent a priſoner to* SPAIN. *How he was employed on a fourth expedition: with his farther diſcoveries on the continent; and what diſtreſs he met with at* Jamaica. *His arrival at* HISPANIOLA; *and in what condition he found the iſland. His return to* SPAIN; *where the neglect ſhewn him at court, occaſioned his death at* Valladolid. *His character, and epitaph.* 88

CHAP. V.

In what manner Americus Veſputius *got the new world called* AMERICA, *after his own name, in prejudice to that of* Columbus. *How king* Henry VIIth *of* England, *employed* John Cabot, *and his ſon* Sebaſtian, *to make diſcoveries on the north coaſt of* AMERICA. *The diſcovery of* BRAZIL, *by the* Portugueſe. *The Expedition of* Vaſco Nunez de Bilboa, *to the continent of* AMERICA; *and the diſcovery of the* South Sea. *A ſhort account of what was diſcovered by other adventurers; particularly, the paſſage of* Ferdinand Magellan *into the* South Sea, *the firſt circumnavigation round the globe, and what other commanders alſo performed. With a repreſentation of the different attempts to find out a north-eaſt and north-weſt paſſage to* AMERICA: *as likewiſe, what parts of that country are now enjoyed by the different* European *powers.* 128

PART

CONTENTS.

PART II.

CHAP. I.

The DESCRIPTION *of* CHILI.

SECTION I.

The general diviſion of AMERICA: *with an account of the poſſeſſions belonging to the* Spaniards, *and in what manner their provinces are governed.* 149

SECTION II.

Containing a deſcription of the audience of CHILI; *with its boundaries, the face of the country, the ſeaſons, air, and climate. An account of the* Andes, *or* Cordillera *mountains; with their phænomenas, vulcanoes, ſprings, lakes, and rivers. And alſo, a ſhort account of the* Chileſian Indians; *their perſons, cuſtoms, and government.* 153

SECTION III.

The firſt invaſion of CHILI *by Don* Diego de Almagro: *his expedition; and death. The ſecond invaſion, under Don* Pedro Baldivia: *the ſettlements which he eſtabliſhed: his war with the* Indians; *and death. The conduct of* Francis de Velagra *againſt* Caupolican *the* Indian *general. The war undertaken by Don* Garcia Hurtado de Mendoca, *againſt the* Indians, *and the death of* Caupolican. *In what manner the* Spaniards *eſtabliſhed themſelves in* CHILI, *and made peace with the* Indians. *How the* Dutch *and* Engliſh *attempted to ſettle in* CHILI. *Reflections on the peace between the* Spaniards *and* Indians. *The number of inhabitants in* CHILI: *and ſome farther account of the* Indians. 172

SECTION IV.

An account of the produce of CHILI; *its vegetables, mines, and animals. A deſcription of the diſtrict of* CUYO; *with the method of travelling through it to* Buenos Ayres. *Some account of the* South-Sea, *or* Pacific Ocean. *And a general view of the trade of* CHILI. 193

SECTION V.

An account of the three grand diviſions of CHILI: *with a particular deſcription of their cities, and principal towns; their ſituation, government, and trade.* 213

SECTION VI.

The iſlands of CHILI; *containing a particular deſcription of* JUAN FERNANDEZ. 248

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. II.

The DESCRIPTION of PARAGUAY, *or* RIO DE LA PLATA.

SECTION I.

The extent, and nature of the country; with some account of the Indians. *In what manner the* Portuguese *first invaded this country, under* Alexius Garcia. *What discoveries were made here by* Sebastian Cabot; *and how the* Spaniards *made their settlements in this country, under Don* Pedro de Mendoza: *with some remarks on the jesuits of* Paraguay. *The six districts, or sub-divisions, of this province; with a particular account of those of* Paraguay proper, *and* Tucuman; *their principal towns, number of inhabitants, rivers, and trade.* 267

SECTION II.

A particular account of the provinces of RIO DE LA PLATA, GUAYRA, PARANA, *and* URAGUAY: *their principal towns, number of inhabitants, rivers, and trade: but more particularly of the commerce of* Buenos Ayres; *and of the* Assiento *treaty, for furnishing it with negroes.* 281

CHAP. III.

The DESCRIPTION *of* PERU.

SECTION I.

The extent and boundaries of this country: the nature of the soil, and climate; with a farther description of the South Sea. *An account of the lakes, springs, and rivers of* PERU. *Of the produce of the country; its vegetables, minerals, and animals: but particularly of the quinquina, or* Peruvian *bark; and the balsam of* PERU: *as also of the mines of gold, silver, and mercury; the method of getting and refining those metals; with observations upon their nature, value, and utility: as likewise of the* Peruvian *sheep, and the bezoar-stone.* 292

SECTION II.

An account of the customs of the ancient Peruvian Indians: *the rise and power of the incas; their religion; and reigns, from* Mangocapa *to* Atabalippa: *with a representation of their form of government.* 341

SECTION

CONTENTS.

SECTION III.

The invasion of PERU *by the* Spaniards, *under the command of* Pizarro *and* Almagro. *The seizure and death of* Atabalippa; *with the reduction of his empire. The civil dissentions between* Pizarro *and* Almagro; *the destruction of both; and the other civil commotions between the* Spaniards. *An account of the present situation of the* Peruvian Indians, *and of the* Spaniards *established among them: with a concise view of their trade and navigation.* 356

SECTION IV.

An account of the three grand divisions of PERU, *with a description of their cities, and principal towns; their situation, trade, and number of inhabitants.* 388

SECTION V.

A description of the principal islands upon the coast of PERU; *as also of the* Gallapagos, *and the islands of* Solomon. 418

CHAP. IV.

The DESCRPITION *of* TERRA FIRMA, *and* GUIANA.

SECTION I.

A particular representation of the province of TERRA FIRMA: *its boundaries, extent, climate, and soil. The discovery of it, and the settlements made there, by the* Spaniards. *The eight sub-divisions, or districts, of this country; with an account of their rivers, and principal places of trade; as also of the native* Indians, *the produce of the country, and the commerce of the* Spaniards. 428

SECTION II.

A description of the several ISLANDS, *on the coasts of* TERRA FIRMA, *both in the* South *and* North Seas. 486

SECTION III.

A description of the country of GUIANA. *Its three divisions, of* Dutch GUIANA, *or* Surinam; French GUIANA, *or* Cayenne; *and* Indian GUIANA, *or* Caribana: *with an account of the commerce carried on by the* Dutch *and* French *colonists.* 497

DISSERTATION I.

On the SPANISH *Colonies in* SOUTH AMERICA.

The nature of colonies; and how they were established in AMERICA: *with observations on the gold and silver brought from thence into* Europe, *and re-exported to* Asia. *The claim of the*

the Spaniards *to the dominion of the* American Seas; *with remarks thereon. Their polity in their colonies; and in what manner their trade is conducted by the galleons, and regiſter ſhips. An eſtimate of the value of the gold, ſilver, and other commodities, annually imported into* Spain, *from* AMERICA: *with reaſons why the former country has been rather impoveriſhed than enriched by the latter.* 504

PART III.

The DESCRIPTION *of* BRAZIL.

CHAP. I.

The extent, and boundaries, of this country: how the PORTUGUESE *eſtabliſhed themſelves there; and in what manner they were diſturbed by the* DUTCH. *The face of the country; its animals, vegetables, and commodities; with a particular deſcription of the brazil-tree. The cruelty of the* PORTUGUESE *to the* INDIANS. *An account of the preſent inhabitants of* BRAZIL, *and of the fifteen captainrics into which the country is divided; with their rivers, towns, and trade: to which is added an eſtimate of the annual produce of the gold and diamond mines; as alſo of the brazil-wood, imported into* EUROPE. 533

CHAP II.

An account of the different countries of SOUTH AMERICA, *which are ſtill poſſeſſed by the* Indians. *The deſcription of* PARAGUAY, *and of the government eſtabliſhed there by the* Jeſuits. *The republic of* St. PAUL. TERRA MAGELLANICA; *with its bays, and iſlands; particularly* TERRA DEL FUEGO, *and* STATEN Iſland. *An account of the* Indians of CHILI; *and of the country of the* AMAZONS: *as alſo of the* Indians *of* POPAYAN, *and* TERRA FIRMA. 552

DISSERTATION II.

Reflections on the PORTUGUESE *colony of* BRAZIL; *the trade there; and the extraction of gold from* PORTUGAL. 572

2 JY 61

A NEW

A

NEW HISTORY

OF

AMERICA.

PART I.

CHAP. I.

The ſituation and extent of AMERICA. *Some account of its natives, and in what manner they firſt peopled that country: with a general view of its produce and commodities. A ſummary account of what the ancients thought about a new world; and ſome accidents leading to the diſcovery of* AMERICA.

ACCORDING to the rules of geography, the terreſtrial globe, conſiſting of earth and water, is 360 degrees, each degree containing 60 miles: ſo that the whole circumference of the globe is 21,600 geographical miles, and the diameter 7200. But, if the computation is made by *Engliſh*

liſh miles, the globe will be 25,020 miles round, and 8,340 in diameter; becauſe $69\frac{1}{2}$ miles of *England*, are equal to one degree, or 60 geographical miles. Two thirds of the ſurface of this globe, at leaſt, are compoſed of water; and the remainder of earth. The waters are divided into three extenſive oceans, called the *Atlantic*, the *Pacific*, and the *Indian* oceans; beſides the *Mediterranean*, and other leſſer ſeas. The land is divided into the two great eaſtern and weſtern continents, with ſeveral iſlands; or, into the old and new world, ſeparated from each other by the *Atlantic* and *Pacific* oceans; the *Atlantic* being about 3000 miles wide between ſouth *America* and *Africa*; and about the ſame breadth between north *America* and *Europe*: the *Pacific* being about 9000 miles wide between *America* and *Aſia*. The eaſtern continent is ſubdivided into three parts; *Europe* on the north-weſt, *Aſia* on the north-eaſt, and *Africa* on the ſouth: but the weſtern continent conſiſts only of *America*, which is the ſubject under our preſent conſideration.

AMERICA is the largeſt part of the four grand diviſions of the world; being ſituated between 35 and 145 degrees of weſtern longitude; and between 80 north, and 58 degrees of ſouth latitude: bounded by the lands and ſeas about the arctic pole, on the north; by the *Atlantic* ocean, which ſeparates it from the eaſtern continent, or old world, on the eaſt; by the great ſouthern ocean on the ſouth; and by the *Pacific* ocean, which divides it from *Aſia*, on the weſt: ſo that it is between 8 and 9000 miles in length from north to ſouth, and between 3 and 4000 broad; though the iſthmus, that joins north

north and ſouth *America*, is not 60 miles over: yet, from thence, both parts of this continent ſtretch themſelves out, eaſt and weſt, till they make the above-mentioned breadth: to which may be added, the ſeveral iſlands in the ſouth and north ſeas, adjacent to the coaſts of *America*.

THIS great and populous continent remained unknown, to the reſt of the world, for all the ages that paſſed from the creation to the year 1492, when it was firſt diſcovered by *Chriſtopher Columbus*; though this brave adventurer was deprived of the honour of giving his own name to the new world, by *Americus Veſpuſius*, who only continued the diſcoveries begun by *Columbus*, before whoſe time the inhabitants had no general name for their country; but, as *Americus* gave it his name, it has retained it ever ſince. However, the *Spaniards* afterwards honoured it with a more magnificent title, by calling it the *new world*; and with no great impropriety, as it is ſo much ſuperior in extent to any of the three parts of the *old world*; or rather is ſo little inferior in that reſpect to them all put together. A third name, that of the *Weſt-Indies*, was alſo given to it by *Columbus*, to excite the princes he was treating with the more, and to authoriſe his enterpriſe by that title, on account of the gold, ſilver, pearls, and ſpices, he imagined were to be found there; which might vie with thoſe of the *Eaſt-Indies*, and was a great reputation to the undertaking. Beſides, his intention being to find out the eaſt by way of the weſt, and the *Eaſt-Indies* being at the extremity of the eaſt, he conceived the country he wanted to diſcover,

muſt be at the fartheſt part of the weſt; therefore the one might as well be called *India*, as the other; and, *Peru* having been diſcovered after *New Spain*, they were in the plural number called *Indies:* though the term of *Weſt-Indies*, is now generally underſtood to be only the *Caribbees*, and ſome other iſlands in the north ſeas, as the *Bahamas*, *Jamaica*, *Cuba*, *Hiſpaniola*, and *Porto-Rico*; to which ſome have added, the province of *Terra Firma* on the continent.

VARIOUS are the conjectures about the firſt inhabitants of this country: for, as the *Indians* had no written records, there is no penetrating by their traditions into their antiquities; the moſt learned men among the *Europeans*, being ignorant of every original thing relative to *America*. The ſtature, form, and features of the *Americans*, are ſimilar to thoſe among *Europeans*; only their complexion is browner, or more upon the olive-colour: the frame and turn of their minds are the ſame as the ancient *Europeans*; they adored the ſame ſupreme God, erected temples, and ſacrificed to him in the ſame manner. They retained a tradition, that their continent was gradually peopled from a ſmall number. Their military weapons, ſuch as ſwords, ſpears, lances, bows, ſlings, and darts, were like what were uſed by the *Europeans*; with this only difference, that, as they had loſt the uſe of iron, their wooden ſwords were edged with ſharp flints; while their ſpears, arrows, and darts, were pointed with the bones of fiſh, or other animals However, it is highly probable, that *America* was peopled very early; becauſe the inhabitants were ignorant of almoſt every art and ſcience, when the *Spaniards* came among them: and, for the ſame reaſon, it may be concluded,

that

that no adventurers arrived there, in theſe latter ages, before *Columbus*.

THERE is ſome reaſon to imagine, that *America* joins either to the north part of *Aſia*, or *Europe*; or, perhaps, to both: which made ſome writers conceive, that this continent was originally peopled from *Tartary*, the land of *Jeſſo*, or ſome other tracts by way of the north pole. Others have ſuppoſed, that the country might have been coloniſed by means of the ſea, from ſome of the *Aſiatic* territories; becauſe there is a kind of reſemblance between the complexion, hair, beard, cuſtoms, and manners, of the *Chineſe* and *Japaneſe*, with ſome of theſe natives. But there is more reaſon to imagine, that *America* was peopled by ſea, either by the *Phœnicians*, or *Carthaginians*; who were the beſt navigators among the ancients.

IT is not probable, that *America* could be peopled by fleets or colonies from *China*, or any other part of *Aſia*: becauſe, the ſouth-ſea, which ſeparates the one country from the other, is about 9000 miles broad; and the *Chineſe*, who are the only people furniſhed with ſhipping in the eaſtern parts of the world, were never inclined to make long voyages, or viſit diſtant regions. Nor could it be peopled by land from the north, or ſouth; becauſe our mariners, in their late voyages to the north-eaſt, and to the north-weſt, have diſcovered, that the ſea extends more than 80 degrees to the northward; and they have alſo ſailed to near 70 degrees ſouthward: ſo that if *America* was peopled by any of theſe ways, the perſons who went there muſt be ſuppoſed to have travelled

ſo near the poles, as to paſs thro' many parts which may be neither paſſable, or habitable. Therefore, we may affirm, that *America* was firſt peopled from *Africa*, either by the *Phœnicians* or *Carthaginians*; who had ſhips capable of carrying a thouſand perſons, ſome of which might have been accidentally driven to *America*, by an eaſt wind, when it is not more than three weeks ſail from *Africa*, or the *Canaries*, to that continent. It is certain, that part of the weſtern coaſts of *Africa*, and the *Canary Iſlands*, were planted by the *Carthaginians*, about 500 years before the chriſtian æra: but, when their ſtate was deſtroyed by the *Romans*, all the diſcoveries and plantations of the *Carthaginians*, were loſt and ruined, by the neglect of navigation: ſo that when the *Spaniards* made a new diſcovery of the *Canary Iſlands*, in the 15th century, the natives could not tell from whence to derive their original; and, like the *Americans*, imagined they were the only people in the world. Beſides, the climate of *America* was ſuitable to the conſtitution of the *Africans*; who fixed the two great empires of *Mexico* and *Peru*, within the torrid zone; which the inhabitants of the more northern latitudes would not have done.

IT may be aſked, how every ſpecies of beaſts, birds, and inſects, firſt came into *America?* Whether by the extremities of the north or ſouth pole? Or, whether it was by ſea?

IT may be anſwered, by ſea, rather than by land: becauſe, it is yet uncertain, whether *America* is joined either to *Europe*, or *Aſia*. It is alſo improbable, that many animals, bred in hot climates, would leave their temperature, to make any migrations

migrations into the frozen regions: to which may be added, that there were no horſes, oxen, or mules, found in *America*, when the *Spaniards* firſt diſcovered the country; though theſe animals were the beſt adapted for the conveniency of carriage; as the *Americans* have neither camels nor elephants.

THE natives of *America* differ very much from one another, according to their various nations, ſoils, laws, and governments. They are repreſented, as naturally paſſionate and revengeful, ſavage and cruel; eſpecially where they have not been civilized by *Europeans*: but, their genuine character ſhould be conſidered with caution; becauſe the *Spaniards* found it their intereſt to traduce them in that ungenerous manner, to excuſe the horrid treatments, and bloody maſſacres, which the poor *Americans* ſuffered from theſe haughty invaders. It is certain, that the *Americans* in general, are endowed with many excellent natural qualifications; being ſenſible and ingenious, brave and generous, ſtrong and active. The *Spaniards* found ſome polite governments among them, particularly the well-governed monarchies of *Mexico* and *Peru*; with ſpacious and populous cities, magnificent temples, rich palaces, and other noble ſtructures. They alſo found one common-wealth, called *Tlaſcala*, which was well regulated and civilized. It is true, ſome inferior governments were to be met with, ſcattered on each ſide of the two grand monarchies, as well as in the iſlands; where the people were leſs polite, and more uncivilized; living in villages, and being

governed by petty princes; which is what may be reaſonably expected in ſuch a great extent of country, and variety of nations.

THE generality of the *Americans*, eſpecially thoſe of inferior rank, and in the hot countries, go almoſt naked; ſome of them entirely ſo; and the others wear only a kind of ſhort garment, reaching from about the waiſt to the knees; though ſome have a ſhort cloak thrown over their ſhoulders; both made either of the ſkins of beaſts, or of ſome light ſtuffs of their own weaving, or of the feathers of ſome birds; in the joining and mixing of which they are extremely expert. They likewiſe paint their faces and bodies with figures of animals, flowers, or other things of different colours, and ſome of them raiſed like a baſs relief. However, there are others, particularly thoſe of the higheſt rank, and more civilized countries, who cover their bodies in a more elegant manner; wearing ornaments on their heads, chiefly compoſed of the fineſt feathers, beautifully variegated and adjuſted. Their laws and cuſtoms were very different: but, in general, their religion was the ſame, which is ſtill retained by thoſe who have preſerved their liberty; their worſhip being commonly paid to the ſun, moon, ſtars, fire, water, beaſts, and demons; though there are ſome who acknowledge a ſupreme being above them all, whom they worſhip as their creator, and the ſole director of the univerſe. Learning was alſo as great a ſtranger as the true religion among the *Americans*, who were unacquainted with the uſe of letters; ſo that what records they had, conſiſted principally in the diſpoſition of a certain number

number of knots, tied in a peculiar manner, in a kind of bundle of ſtrings like packthread; or a number of notches on pieces of wood; or at beſt in ſome ill-ſhaped figures of men, beaſts, birds, trees, and flowers, traced, or painted on the leaves or barks of trees, or ſome ſort of ſtuff, that ſerved them inſtead of paper: whereby they were entirely ignorant of all the ſciences.

A COUNTRY of ſuch great extent, not only on each ſide of the equinox, but extending ſo very far beyond each of the tropics, muſt neceſſarily be ſuppoſed to have as great a difference of ſoils, as it has of climates: though, upon the whole, excepting the moſt northern and ſouthern parts, which are naturally cold and barren, the reſt is an immenſe treaſury of nature, productive of moſt, if not of all the plants, grains, fruits, trees, and minerals, that are found in the other parts of the world; not only in as great quantities, but many of them more ſo, and in much greater perfection: beſides which, it has almoſt an infinite variety of others peculiar to itſelf, that will not grow, or flouriſh, in any other country. But theſe are nothing in compariſon to the numerous and inexhauſtible mines of gold and ſilver; which are ſo far from being impoveriſhed, that they ſeem rather to want ſome freſh ſupplies of hands to draw out theſe endleſs treaſures, and gorge the inſatiable avarice of mankind; notwithſtanding all the art and labour of man has been employed in endeavouring to drain them for theſe two laſt centuries. However, gold and ſilver are far from being the only precious commodities that this country produces, which has alſo a great abundance of diamonds,

pearls,

pearls, emeralds, amethyſts, and other valuable ſtones, ſent into *Europe* in ſuch quantities as to render their value inconſiderable, in compariſon of what it was formerly. To theſe may be added a great number of other commodities, which are of great utility; as the conſtant and plentiful ſupplies of ſugar, tobacco, cochineal, indigo, anatto, logwood, braſil, fuſtic, lignum vitæ, ginger, pimento, cocoa, cotton, red-wood, furs, hides, ambergreaſe, and bezoar; balſams of *Tolu*, *Peru*, and *Chili*; jeſuits bark, mechoacon, ſaſſafras, ſarſaparilla, caſſia, and tamarinds; with many kinds of other woods and plants, to which the *Europeans* were utter ſtrangers before the diſcovery of theſe *American* parts; or were obliged to buy them at an extravagant price from *Aſia* and *Africa*, perhaps at the ſecond, third, or fourth hand; many of the moſt valuable ones alſo adulterated by the *Jews*, who were the chief merchants and brokers of them in thoſe parts, from which they were brought at an immenſe charge and trouble. *America* alſo abounds in excellent fruits, that grow in great perfection; ſuch as pine-apples, pomegranates, citrons, lemons, oranges, limes, malicatons, cherries, pears, apples, figs, and others; with an abundance of culinary, medicinal, and other herbs, roots, and plants. To all theſe may be added, the ſurpriſing fecundity of the ſoil, which makes it nouriſh many exotic productions, in as great a perfection as their own native ground: this being evidently remarkable in the coffee and rice, which have been lately cultivated there with great ſucceſs, and might be extended to many other

vegetables

vegetables that *Europeans* are obliged to have, from *Aſia* and *Africa*, at extravagant prices.

YET, with all this great plenty and variety, *America* laboured under the want of many very neceſſary and uſeful commodities: for the *Europeans*, on their firſt landing there, found neither corn, wine, nor oil; the inhabitants making their bread of ſome kind of pulſe, or roots; their drink was little better; and they were quite unacquainted with the uſe of money. There were neither beeves, horſes, aſſes, ſheep, goats, or hogs, though the land abounded with excellent paſtures; and the very ſight of any of them, eſpecially of a horſe, would throw a whole troop of thoſe wild inhabitants into a pannic. But all theſe have long ſince been ſent thither in ſuch plenty, and have propagated ſo well, that there is not any want of them; which may particularly be ſeen by the great quantities of hides, eſpecially of oxen, that are continually brought away from thence. However, inſtead of theſe *European* animals, they had ſeveral kinds of others, equally uſeful and valuable, which were unknown to *Europeans*. The ſame may be ſaid of that prodigious number of birds which are to be ſeen there; ſome of them greatly ſurpaſſing all that can be found in any other parts of the world, for their beautiful ſhapes and colours. Beſides, there was an abundance of fiſh, of all kinds, both in their ſeas and rivers.

THE rivers of *America* are univerſally allowed to be the largeſt in the whole world; not only with regard to their breadth and depth, but alſo on account of their extenſive courſe. The mountains are of a moſt ſurpriſing height and extent;

and

and there are ſome very large woods, deſarts, and lakes.

BEFORE the diſcovery of *America*, the generality of mankind were ſo far from imagining that there could be any ſuch continent, that the very thought of ſuch a thing was looked upon as extravagant: for it was believed, that the land terminated at the *Canary Iſlands*, and that all beyond them to the weſtward was ſea; though ſome of the ancients gave hints that there were ſome other countries to the weſt. *Plato*, in two of his dialogues, mentions the iſland of *Atlantis*; and there is ſtill extant a deſcription of it in *Greek* verſe, aſcribed to *Solon*, on whoſe credit the whole ſtory depends; who relates that he was informed, by an *Egyptian* prieſt, of a tradition of this iſland; which ſeems to be either an allegory, or a fable. The next authority is taken from a book generally attributed to *Ariſtotle*, wherein it is alledged, that the *Carthaginians* diſcovered an iſland beyond the *Streights* of *Gibraltar*, large in extent, fertile in its ſoil, and full of navigable rivers; at the diſtance of ſome days ſail from the continent, but uninhabited: that the firſt diſcoverers fixed there; but the *Carthaginians* ordered, that none of their ſubjects ſhould ſettle there for the future, and diſlodged thoſe who were already ſettled. *Diodorus Siculus* gives a far more accurate and probable account of this matter, deſcribing this iſland at large, and then ſhewing why it remained uninhabited. He ſays, "The *Tyrians* would have planted a co-"lony there, but that the *Carthaginians* oppoſed "it for two reaſons: firſt, becauſe they were "afraid too many of their citizens would be inclined

"to

"to tranſport themſelves into this iſland, which "might be prejudicial to their affairs as a trading "people. Secondly, becauſe they deſired to reſerve "this iſland as an aſylum, to which they might "retreat at any time, if oppreſſed by intolerable "misfortunes." Some authors take this iſland to be the largeſt of the *Canaries:* but that ſeems improbable, for many reaſons; particularly, becauſe the *Canaries* are very indifferently provided with water: whereas the *Greek* authority expreſsly ſays, there were ſeveral navigable rivers. There is yet another paſſage in an author, perhaps, more ancient than any of theſe, which was *Theopompus*, a *Greek* writer, of whoſe works there remain now only ſome fragments, and among them one relating to a new world, wherein are ſaid to be two great cities, one inhabited by warriors, and the other by prieſts; but the whole is only an allegory. *Pliny* reports, that *Hanno*, the *Carthaginian*, ſailed round *Africa*; though he alſo affirms, that the middle region of the world, where the ſun continually runs its courſe, is parched and burnt up with fire: therefore, the opinion that *Hanno*, or any of the ancients, ſurrounded *Africa*, muſt be falſe; becauſe they would not only then have known that thoſe countries were habitable; but they muſt have known another hemiſphere, have ſeen a new ſett of ſtars, and have had the ſun to the northward of them at noon-day; which were ſuch remarkable diſcoveries, that, if they had been once made, could never have been forgotten. And yet we meet with no mention of theſe particulars, either in *Greek* or *Roman* writers, or the leaſt deſcription of any people or country in *Africa* ſouth of the equator:

equator: beſides, it is exceeding ſtrange, that, when men paſſed to the fartheſt bounds of *Africa* beyond the equator, none ever returned to inform the more northern regions that thoſe parts were habitable. *Seneca*, the tragedian, in his *Medæa*, ſays, that a time would come when the ocean ſhould be ſailed on, a great continent diſcovered, and a new world found: though this was rather like a prophecy, than a deſcription: however, this was alſo the opinion of ſome other great men among the ancients, founded upon that diſproportion there appeared to be between the land and water then diſcovered.

ST. GREGORY, on the epiſtle of St. *Clement*, ſays, that beyond the ocean there is another world, or rather worlds: but the other fathers derided thoſe philoſophers, who believed the earth to be globular, and ſurrounded by the heavens equally on every ſide: they imagined, that the heavens conſtituted but one hemiſphere; and that the earth was flat and round like a table, ſerving as a baſis, or foundation, to ſupport the fine vaulted roof over their heads; ſo that nothing was more exploded by them than the notion of antipodes. "Is it poſſible, ſays *Lactantius*, that any perſon "can be ſo credulous to believe there are a people, "or nation, walking with their feet upwards, "and their heads downwards; that trees and "corn grow downwards; or that rain, ſnow, "and hail, aſcend to the earth?" And St. *Auſtin* not only diſbelieved the antipodes, but alſo ſaid, "It is not agreeable to reaſon, or good "ſenſe, to affirm, that men may paſs over ſo vaſt "an ocean as the *Atlantic*, from this continent,

"to

" to a new-found world; or that there are inha-
" bitants there; all men being deſcended from the
" firſt man *Adam*."

Some of the wiſeſt among the ancients, imagined there might poſſibly be a large proportion of the world undiſcovered in their time; and therefore made choice of it, as a proper ſcene for laying ſchemes of ſuch common-wealths as exiſted only in their fancies: they dreamt of a new world, and left behind them ſome broken accounts of theſe dreams. However, many of them were of opinion, that all the climates between the tropics were uninhabitable; founding their judgment upon a point of their philoſophy, which was, that the preſervation of the animal demanded by its temper the juſt proportion of the firſt four qualities, which they ſuppoſed could not be found under the torrid zone; for ſo they called it, becauſe of the force of the ſun there, being all the year almoſt perpendicular to it. Therefore, having obſerved its effects on this ſide of the tropics, how it dries the earth in ſummer, and conſumes the fountains; alſo thinking, that if it did not withdraw to the other tropic, it would have entirely fired the earth, though refreſhed by the nights; it is no wonder if they were perſuaded, that when the beams of the ſun were continual, there could be no habitation for man. However, experience has diſcovered not only that thoſe regions contained under the zodiac, have been, and are inhabited by many nations; but alſo, that there are, even under the equinoctial line, ſome places, particularly *Quito*, ſo temperate and healthful, that they are preferable to ſeveral in the temperate zones.

There

THERE are alſo ſome fabulous accounts relating to the diſcovery of *America*; particularly the following, which is recorded in Doctor *Powel's* hiſtory of *Wales*. "*Owen Gwyneth*, who was prince of north *Wales*, being dead, left three legitimate ſons, *Edward*, *David*, and *Madoc*; alſo, an illegitimate ſon, named *Howel*. The eldeſt ſon *Edward*, whoſe right it was to rule, was laid aſide, on account of ſome blemiſh in his face; therefore *Howel* had the preſumption to take the government on himſelf: upon which, *David*, the ſecond ſon, raiſed all the forces he could againſt him, ſlew him in battle, and thenceforth quietly enjoyed the government, until his nephew, the ſon of *Edward*, came of age. In the mean time, the youngeſt brother, *Madoc ap Owen Gwyneth*, reſolving to get out of danger, provided himſelf with ſhips and men; and, about the year 1170, ſet ſail from *Wales*. He left the coaſt of *Ireland* far north, and kept a weſterly coaſt till he arrived at a ſtrange land; where he left moſt of his people, returned back to *Wales*, and upbraided his kinſmen and countrymen with their folly, in quarrelling about their wild and barren lands; which induced a great many families to go with him to that new-found country, where every thing flouriſhed in plenty. Accordingly, he ſet ſail a ſecond time, with ten ſhips: but, as his colony was ſmall, in reſpect of the inhabitants which he found there, his people, by degrees, dwindled into their language and cuſtoms; and, it muſt be ſuppoſed, intermixed with the natives in marriages: ſo that the inhabitants, found there by the *Spaniards*, were certainly deſcendants from theſe *Britons*;

Britons; for it appears, by the hiſtory of *Francis Lopez de Gomera*, that the natives of the iſland of *Cozumel* honoured the croſs, and made uſe of ſeveral words in their language, which are of *Welch* ſignification; for inſtance, the iſland of *Pengwin*, and the birds of that name, in *Welſh*, ſignifies, Whitehead; for theſe birds, in reality, have white heads: likewiſe there is a kind of fruit growing in that country, called *Gwyneths*, which is a *Welſh* word. Moreover, it appears from the evidence of the *Spaniſh* chronicles, that the ſpeech made by *Montezuma*, the great emperor of *Mexico*, in the preſence of *Hernando Cortez*, about the year 1520, is a further confirmation of what is related of that *Welſh* ſettlement: for when *Cortez* had made the emperor a priſoner, and found that his ſubjects were unanimouſly reſolved to reſcue him, and deſtroy the *Spaniards*; *Cortez*, fearing the worſt, ſoothed *Montezuma* with ſuch fair ſpeeches, as prevailed on him to deſire his ſubjects to lay down their arms; to which purpoſe he harangued them in the following manner: "My kinſmen, friends, "and ſervants, you well know, that eighteen "years I have been your king, as my father and "grandfathers were, and always I have been un-"to you a loving prince, as you have been unto "me good and obedient ſubjects, and ſo, I hope, "you will remain unto me all the days of my life. "You ought to have in remembrance, that either "you have heard of your fathers, or elſe our di-"vines have inſtructed you, that we are not na-"turally of this country, nor yet is our kingdom "durable; becauſe our forefathers came from a "far country, and their king and captain, who

" brought them hither, returned again to his na-
" tural country, ſaying, he would ſend ſuch as
" ſhould rule and govern us, if he returned not
" himſelf."

THAT the country, which the *Britiſh* prince diſcovered, was really *America*, is more than can be poſitively proved; but that this tale was invented, after the diſcovery of that country, to ſet up a prior title is moſt certainly falſe: for *Meredith ap Rheſe*, a famous *Welſh* poet, who died in 1477, compoſed an ode in honour of this *Madoc*, wherein was contained an account of his diſcoveries. Now, as this was ſeveral years before *Columbus* made his firſt voyage, we may be ſatisfied that this was really a *Britiſh* tradition, and no tale of late invention. Beſides, the above oration of *Montezuma* carries with it a ſtrong preſumption in favour of the *Welſh* hiſtory; for though the *Americans* were deficient in literature, yet they handed down every thing of moment, by tradition, from father to ſon: nor were their prieſts leſs remarkable in predicting future events; which, as they were more worthy of obſervation, made the ſtronger impreſſions on the people; and, therefore, this prediction, that concerned the revolution of their ſtate, which had been foretold them for many years before, was greatly conducive to the advantage of the *Spaniards*, when the *Indians* ſaw that time probably come to paſs, which they ſo much dreaded; and, as it carried with it the plain appearance of the deſtruction of their monarchy, they were the ſooner brought into ſubjection; for they put ſo much confidence in this prophecy, that they thought it in vain to oppoſe the *Spaniards*. Upon

this

this preſumption, ſome ſtateſmen were for proving the right of Queen *Elizabeth* to theſe countries; but they were diſſuaded from it by others, who conſidered that *Welſhmen*, as well as other people, might be caſt upon thoſe parts by tempeſtuous weather, and might eaſily implant ſome few words of their own, among the original inhabitants.

ANOTHER early diſcovery was made by the *Engliſh*, which claims the precedence of any other Chriſtian nation: this is relative to the iſland of *Madeira*, which was firſt diſcovered by one *Macham*, an *Engliſhman*, in the year 1344, in the following manner, which is recorded in the hiſtory of *Portugal*, written by *Antonio Galuano*.

"This *Macham* having ſailed out of *England*, "with intent to retire into *Spain*, with a woman "whom he had ſeduced from her friends, was ac- "cidentally drove, by a tempeſt, upon the iſland "of *Madeira*, where he landed with her, and "ſome of his company, in a bay or haven, "which after him was called *Machio*, in order to "recover her from her ſea-ſickneſs and fright. "But the ſhip being afterwards drove off from "the coaſt, ſailed away with the reſt of the crew, "leaving *Macham* with his miſtreſs, and ſuch as "landed with him, without any hope of returning "from the iſland, which gave her ſo much grief "as to occaſion her death; when *Macham*, to "commemorate his affection for her, and the oc- "caſion and manner of their coming there, built "a little chapel, and a monaſtery to bury her in, "whereon he engraved the whole ſtory. He af- "terwards made a canoe, by hollowing a large "tree, in which, without ſails or oars, he ven-

"tured to ſea, and was drove upon the coaſt of "*Africa*, where the *Moors* took him, and his "companions, whom they preſented to their "king as a great wonder, who ſent them all to "the king of *Caſtille*."

THIS diſcovery put others upon ſimilar enterprizes; in conſequence of which king *Henry* iii. of *Caſtille*, and ſeveral perſons in *France*, went upon the further diſcovery of *Madeira*, and of the *Canary Iſlands*, in the year 1395, which was forty-nine years after the diſcovery made by *Macham*. *Antonio Galuano*, the *Portugueſe* hiſtorian, alſo ſays, that in the year 1417, during the reign of king *John* ii. of *Caſtille*, and the regency of his mother *Catherine*, Monſieur *Ruben* of *Bracamont*, who was admiral of *France*, obtained from the queen-regent of *Caſtille*, a permiſſion to conquer the iſlands of the *Canaries*, with the title of king for one of his relations, whoſe name was *John de Betancourt*; for which purpoſe ſhe likewiſe aſſiſted him with a conſiderable number of ſoldiers, with whom he departed from *Seville*: but, at the ſame time, it was generally imagined, that his principal aim was upon the iſland of *Madeira*, which *Macham* had already diſcovered.

HOWEVER, the *Spaniards* took poſſeſſion of the *Canaries* in 1405, which were anciently called the *Fortunate Iſlands*; being ſeven in number, ſituated in the *Atlantic* ocean, between 12 and 21 degrees of weſt longitude, and between 27 and 29 of north latitude, about 150 miles S. W. of *Morocco*, in *Africa*. Theſe iſlands were firſt diſcovered and planted by the *Carthaginians*; but, when the *Romans* deſtroyed that ſtate, they put a ſtop to navigation,

gation, eſpecially on the weſt coaſt of *Africa*; ſo that theſe iſlands lay afterwards concealed from the reſt of the world, till the *Spaniards* took poſſeſſion of them, who found that the natives had a language which none of the people of the continent underſtood; even when they had learned *Spaniſh* enough to render themſelves intelligible, they could give no account of their anceſtors, or from what country they came; and, though they reſembled the natives of the north of *Africa*, in their ſtature and complexion, they retained none of their cuſtoms, were maſters of no ſcience, and ignorant of any other country in the world beſides their own iſlands. But the *Madeira* iſlands, which are ſituated about 100 miles north of the *Canaries*, were not planted till the year 1425, when the *Portugueſe* took poſſeſſion of them, and found them uninhabited; ſince which time the *Canaries* have been ſubject unto *Spain*; as the *Madeiras*, the *Cape Verd Iſlands*, and the *Azores*, have been ſubject to *Portugal*. Before the diſcovery of theſe iſlands, the cleareſt and moſt intelligible report, concerning another part of the world, which preceded the diſcovery of *America*, was the tale of the iſland of the *Seven Churches*, which briefly was this. Some *Portugueſe* ſailors, having been driven in a ſmall bark ſeveral days to ſea, reported, on their return, that they had been on ſhore in a certain iſland, the inhabitants of which were Chriſtians, deſcended from the *Spaniards*, who fled from their country on the firſt invaſion of the *Moors*, when they diſcovered and planted this iſland. Theſe *Portugueſe* were compelled to put again to ſea, to recover the land of which they pretended

to have made a diſcovery: but they were never heard of again; though the ſtory continued to be credited, and much talked of, among the vulgar. However, the honour of the diſcovery of the new world was reſerved for *Chriſtopher Columbus*.

CHAP. II.

Some remarks on the commerce and navigation of the ancients. The diſcovery and uſe of the loadſtone. Some obſervations on the difference between the complexions of the Europeans, Africans, *and* Americans. *An account of the birth and education of* Chriſtopher Columbus; *his reaſons for believing there was a* new world *to be diſcovered; and ſome reflections on the diſhonour done him by having that country named after* Americus Veſputius.

AS the world increaſed in the number of its inhabitants, governments were eſtabliſhed, and colonies planted. *Minos*, king of *Crete*, deſtroyed all the pirates in the *Mediterranean*; when the ſeas became free for trade, which induced the people to live upon the coaſts of *Greece*, and to apply themſelves to the art of navigation. The antiquity of commerce is almoſt coeval with the world; for neceſſity was its parent; the deſire of conveniency improved it; while vanity, luxury, and avarice, have brought it to its preſent maturity. The *Egyptians*, *Phœnicians*, and *Carthaginians*, who were a *Tyrian* colony, were the firſt, the moſt daring, and moſt experienced traders of all

all antiquity; at leaſt, it is evident they were the firſt who undertook long and hazardous voyages, and eſtabliſhed a traffic by ſea, between coaſts very remote. Under the *Aſiatic* and *Grecian* empires, ancient hiſtory conveys, from time to time, the traces of a commerce cultivated by ſeveral nations: it flouriſhed among the *Carthaginians*, and was encouraged for ſome time by the *Romans*; but the deſtruction of the *Roman* empire, by the irruptions of the barbarians, occaſioned the declenſion of commerce; for ſome time ſuſpending its ordinary operation, untill it recovered itſelf in *Italy*, among the *Piſans*, *Florentines*, *Genoeſe*, and *Venetians*, who furniſhed *Europe* with the commodities of the eaſtern countries, 'till the latter end of the fifteenth century, when the *Portugueſe* diſcovered a paſſage to *India* by ſea, round the *Cape of Good Hope*; by which means the principal part of trade came into their hands.

The ancients never attempted to double the *Cape of Good Hope*, or undertake any extenſive voyages; becauſe they were unacquainted with the uſe of the loadſtone, which is ſo very eſſential to the preſent practice of navigation. The diſcovery of the mariner's compaſs has been of more general and important uſe to human ſociety, than any other inſtrument; and the invention of it is uſually aſcribed to *Flavio de Melfi*, or *Flavio Giori*, a *Neapolitan*, about 1302. It is a point in which divines, philoſophers, and politicians, unanimouſly agree, that ſciences have their ſeaſons; or that arts, of the greateſt conſequence to mankind, have, by a concurrence of happy circumſtances, been quickly brought to perfection in one age; though

little progreſs had been made in them in others; ſo that the general fund of knowledge, poſſeſſed by mankind, increaſes irregularly, as well in point of time as of place; for, as ſcience firſt travelled from the eaſt, ſo, in the courſe of ages, it became a grand point of knowledge to find the way there again; and a deſire of finding a new route to the *Eaſt-Indies*, occaſioned the firſt diſcovery of *America*; the former of which brought immenſe treaſures into the kingdom of *Portugal* for a conſiderable time, and the latter ſtill forms the opulence of *Spain*. It need only be added, that in examining the reaſons why commerce paſſed ſucceſſively from the *Italians* and *Germans* to the *Portugueſe* and *Spaniards*; as alſo from thoſe again to the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*; it may be eſtabliſhed as a maxim, that the relation between commerce and navigation, or rather their union, is ſo intimate and neceſſary, that the ſubverſion of the one inevitably draws after it the ruin of the other, and that they will always either flouriſh or dwindle together.

IN the fifteenth century, many ingenious men, and ſome great princes, applied themſelves to the improvement and encouragement of navigation; which had, for ſome years before, been much neglected, and left to men of mean education. The diſcovery, or rather the retrieving of the *Canaries*, in 1417, by *John de Betancourt*, a *French* gentleman, though in virtue of a *Spaniſh* commiſſion, was one of the firſt fruits of that laudable ſpirit of encouraging the uſeful and noble art of navigation, which, ſince the invention of the mariner's compaſs, began to diſcover itſelf in ſeveral parts of the world. The *Portugueſe* ſoon after diſcovered

the

the *Madeira* iſlands, and the *Azores*; but the great advantages which the crown of *Portugal* derived from its commerce, in the new courſe to the *Eaſt-Indies*, occaſioned ſuch diſcourſe in the world, as to put many perſons of genius, and enterprizing ſeamen, upon aiming at a farther proſecution of ſuch profitable adventures. The uſe of the compaſs being thoroughly underſtood, mariners were no longer afraid of ſteering without ſight of land: by which means they gave the winds and the waves a greater opportunity to facilitate their views, by carrying them ſometimes out of their intended courſes, and thereby affording them occaſion of making remarks, which otherwiſe they never could have done.

VASCO DE GAMA firſt diſcovered the route by the *Cape of Good Hope* to the *Eaſt-Indies*, for the king of *Portugal*; and *Chriſtopher Columbus* had the honour of firſt diſcovering *America*, in the ſervice of the king of *Spain*. The brave and judicious Sir *William Monſon* obſerves, "That if men conſider "the divine work of God, and the end of his "working, it is marvellous to behold, that *Ame-* "*rica*, being a continent, and equal to all the "reſt of the world in bigneſs, ſhould be conceal- "ed from the creation, 'till one thouſand four "hundred and odd years after the birth of Chriſt; "and not ſo much as thought of, though ſome "philoſophers ſeemed to rove at it. And when it "pleaſed his divine majeſty to caſt that bleſſing "upon *Europe*, if we conſider the time he did it, "and the occaſion why he did it, it will put us "into admiration and acknowledgment of the "power of Chriſt, againſt the opinion of *Jews*

"and

" and *Turks*: for could he ſhew himſelf a more " juſt and loving God, than in pouring upon " Chriſtendom ſuch a bleſſing of wealth, at the " time it was likely to be ſwallowed up by bar- " barous *Turks* and *Moors*, who were only with- " ſtood by the wealth of the *Indies*?" In another place, he alſo ſays, " It is ſurprizing, that out of " ſo many flouriſhing nations as God hath created " and civilized, he ſhould elect the kingdom of " *Portugal* for the diſcovery of the *Eaſt-Indies*; " becauſe *Portugal* was a country, in thoſe days, " of leſs eſteem and reputation, of leſs renown and " fame, of leſs ability and valour, than any other " Chriſtian monarchy; and to aſſign them ſuch a " time to effect it, when they enjoyed a happy " peace with their neighbours, and had no ene- " my to oppoſe or hinder their deſigns." The *Portugueſe* diſcovered the coaſt of *Guinea*, in the year 1471, which gave the light to all future diſ- coveries, as it led them to the *Cape of Good Hope*, and from thence to *India*. As *Guinea* yielded a complexion to its inhabitants, as different as white and black from the *Europeans*; ſo *America* was ſoon afterwards found to produce a ſort of people, diſ- fering from the *Europeans* in whiteneſs, and the *Africans* in blackneſs, having a colour like an olive, and being a medium between both; which ſeems ſtrange, conſidering that *Guinea* and *America* lie eaſt and weſt all in one parallel, ſo that, in rea- ſon, there ſhould be no ſuch difference. How- ever, this alteration in complexion, and the plen- tiful increaſe of gold, in theſe climates, is equal- ly attributed to the heat and operation of the ſun;

per-

perhaps not improperly, as may be ſhewn by the following reaſons.

THE ſun, riſing to the eaſtward, betwixt the two tropics, runs its courſe weſtward over *Aſia* and *Africa*, till it comes to the ocean; in which circuit its extreme heat engenders the rich metal of gold, and changes the complexions of creatures to a black hue, reflected by the heat of the earth. The ſun then paſſes over the air of the ſea, and is cooled by it, as it was before heated by the land; ſo that by the time it draws near to the continent of *America*, it has loſt great part of its vigour and force, which renders it unable to produce the ſame effect as in *Africa*; therefore it does not enrich the earth ſo as to make it become gold, as it afterwards does, when it has run its courſe the breadth of *America*, where it again ripens the matter and ſubſtance of gold; for we ſee, by experience, that the greateſt quantity of gold is ſent into *Spain* from *Peru*, which is the moſt weſtern part of *America*; when *Guiana*, and other places in the moſt eaſtern parts of this country, never afford that metal.

THOUGH there was an opinion maintained for ſeveral years, among ſome particular people, that there was another continent to the weſt; yet no perſon undertook to prove it by probable arguments, as alſo that a paſſage from this to that part of the world was practicable, before the time of *Chriſtopher Columbus*; who began, and very ſoon effected this diſcovery.

THIS excellent perſon, whom the *Spaniards*, for the more eaſy pronunciation called *Colon*, was born in the neighbourhood of the city of *Genoa*: he is ſaid to have been deſcended from the lords of the caſtle

caſtle of *Cucaro*, in the dukedom of *Montferrat*; though others ſay, his anceſtors were natives of the city of *Placentia*; but which was the moſt certain deſcent was left to be decided by the ſupreme council of the *Indies*, who, as well as his own ſon Don *Ferdinand*, could make no determination about that matter. However, his parents were not in ſuch mean circumſtances as to be incapable of beſtowing a liberal education upon their ſon, who was put to ſchool at *Pavia*, where he was inſtructed in arithmetic, navigation, and aſtronomy; as alſo in drawing and painting, at leaſt ſufficient to draw a landſkip, or deſcribe the ſituation of a place. When he came from ſchool, where he made the theory of navigation his principal ſtudy, he was reſolved to make himſelf maſter of the practical part of that buſineſs; and accordingly went very early to ſea, where he ſerved under an admiral of his own name, who was a remarkable corſair, and had ſeveral engagements with the *Turks*, *Venetians*, and other nations; in one of which, his ſhip was burnt upon the coaſt of *Portugal*, when *Chriſtopher Columbus* had the good fortune to eſcape to ſhore upon a plank. He immediately went to *Liſbon*, where he found ſeveral of his countrymen and acquaintance were ſettled, with whom he reſided ſome time; after which he made ſeveral voyages to the north and ſouth, and particularly to *Guinea* on the coaſt of *Africa*. While he was in the ſervice of *Portugal*, he improved his fortune by marrying *Donna Philippa Muniz de Pereſtrelo*, who was daughter to the governor of *Porto Santo*, the leaſt of the *Madeira* iſlands; by which marriage *Columbus* came into the poſſeſſion of ſeveral charts, maps,

maps, and journals, belonging to his father-in-law, who had been concerned in ſeveral naval enterprizes; which may have given him the firſt hint of making diſcoveries to the weſtward.

COLUMBUS ſtill applied himſelf attentively to ſtudy coſmography, aſtronomy, and geometry; appearing from his youth to have a more than ordinary inclination to be acquainted with the ſtate of all countries on the face of the globe, and to make new diſcoveries; which probably was his reaſon for ſettling at *Liſbon*, as no nation at that time had carried their diſcoveries farther than the *Portugueſe*; among whom he was perpetually drawing maps and charts, in which he received great encouragement from that enterprizing people.

THIS eminent man had many reaſons to believe that there were other countries: for he conſidered, that the heavens being round, and moving circularly about the earth, that the earth and the water compacted together, formed a globe of the two elements; that the part diſcovered was not all the earth, but that there was ſtill much undiſcovered in the ſpace of 360 degrees, which made the whole circumference, and ought to be inhabited; becauſe the creator of the univerſe had not created it to lie waſte and deſolate: he alſo conceived, that though many perſons doubted whether there were land and ſea, towards both poles, it was neceſſary that the earth ſhould have the ſame proportion with the antarctic pole, as it has in the arctic; from whence he poſitively concluded, that all the five zones were inhabited in all parts; in which he was the more confirmed, after he ſailed to the northward, as far as 75 degrees of latitude.

IT ſhould be obſerved, that *Columbus* formed a right concluſion from falſe premiſes; and, by the happineſs of his genius, ſtruck out this important truth from a ſuppoſition that was abſolutely falſe. He was of opinion that the *Indies*, which the *Portugueſe* had lately diſcovered in the eaſt, made no other than a great continent, belonging to thoſe parts of the univerſe already known; therefore, he conceived that thoſe who ſailed eaſt, muſt come to their weſt coaſts; and that conſequently, by ſailing weſt, it was as practicable to reach their eaſtern ſhores: from which ſuppoſition, he called the iſlands he diſcovered, the *Weſt-Indies*; and when the continent of *America* was firſt found out, the *Spaniards* looked upon it to be part of the continent of *India*, till it was known that the ſouth-ſea, or pacific-ocean, lay between *India* and *America*.

COLUMBUS was confirmed in the opinion of a continent that lay to the weſtward, by Signor *Paul*, a phyſician of *Florence*, with whom he conſtantly correſponded during his reſidence at *Liſbon*; and who acquainted him that the voyage to *China*, through the atlantic-ocean, by the weſt, could not be farther than the voyage from *Portugal* to *Guinea*; which was a great error, though it gave *Columbus* encouragement to attempt that voyage. For Signor *Paul*, computed the diſtance between *Liſbon* and *China*, ſailing weſtward, to be about five thouſand miles; in which he was miſtaken about two thirds: However, he was ſo far accidentally in the right, that the ſpace between ours, and the next continent to the weſtward, was much thereabouts; and gave *Columbus* a no-

a notion that he ſhould make a diſcovery of ſome land about five or ſix thouſand miles to the weſtward.

BESIDES theſe reaſons for undertaking ſo great an enterprize, *Columbus* alſo went upon very probable experience: for, diſcourſing with ſome mariners who had navigated the weſtern ocean, and particularly to the *Azores*, he was informed by *Martin Vicente*, a *Portugueſe* pilot, that, being once 450 leagues to the weſtward of *Cape St. Vincent*, he took up a piece of wood, artificially wrought, and, as he imagined, not with iron; for which reaſon, and as the wind had continued many days together weſterly, he was of opinion that the ſtick came from ſome iſland. *Peter Correa*, who was brother-in-law to *Columbus*, alſo aſſured him, that, in the iſland of *Porto Santo*, he had ſeen another piece of wood brought by the ſame winds, which was wrought in the ſame manner; as alſo that there had been thick canes drove upon thoſe ſhores, unlike any that grew in this part of the world; and, when the weſt winds blew, pines were frequently driven on the *Azores*, or weſtern iſlands. Others, who had ſailed to the weſtward of the *Azores*, ſome hundreds of leagues, affirmed they had ſeen an iſland in thoſe ſeas: and one mariner aſſured *Columbus*, at *Port St. Mary*, that as he was ſailing to *Ireland* he had ſeen land, which the reſt of the crew imagined to be *Tartary*; that it bore away to the weſtward, and has ſince appeared to be the coaſt called *Baccalaos*, in the north of *America*; but that they were prevented from coming at it, by the violence of the winds. *Peter de Velaſco*, a *Gallician*, ſaid, that as he was ſailing for *Ireland*, he ran ſo far to the northward

ward as to ſee land to the weſtward of that iſland. But what principally encouraged *Columbus* to this undertaking, according to ſome authorities, were the ſea-charts and journals of a pilot who died at his houſe in *Liſbon*, that appeared to have diſcovered ſome land far to the weſtward: however, his ſon rejects this ſtory, as derogatory to the honour of his father *Columbus*, who he inſiſts was the firſt diſcoverer of the new world; as he moſt certainly was; at leaſt, he was the firſt who diſcovered it to any purpoſe, ſo as to plant colonies, and make ſettlements there, in theſe latter ages, which is an honour that might ſatisfy his deſcendants. Though, as thoſe ſeas about the *Azores*, the *Canaries*, the *Cape Verd* iſlands, and the coaſt of *Guinea*, were then conſtantly navigated by the *Portugueſe* and *Spaniards*, it is not improbable, that ſome one of their ſhips ſhould have been driven a fortnight or three weeks ſail to the weſtward of the intended courſe, and diſcovered either the iſlands or continent of *America*; as it is reported this pilot did, who died at the houſe of *Chriſtopher Columbus* in *Liſbon*. Upon the whole, it is evident that *Columbus* had ſome certainty, or the higheſt expectation, and probability, of ſucceeding in this attempt: otherwiſe, for a man to venture to ſail ſo many thouſand miles upon an ocean, 'till then eſteemed illimitable, muſt have been deemed an act of temerity, rather than the reſult of wiſdom. Beſides, by his perſiſting ſo long in the reſolution of ſailing in ſearch of a country beyond the *Atlantic* ocean; by applying to ſo many princes and ſtates for aſſiſtance; and by ſtipulating for no other pay or reward, than the government of the lands and ſeas he

ſhould

ſhould diſcover; it is plain, that he was well convinced of the honour and proſperity of his noble and unparalelled enterprize. The *Phænicians* deified *Hercules*, only for paſſing the ſtreights of *Gibraltar*, and diſcovering *Spain*, which he took to be the fartheſt bounds of the world: and the *Roman* ſenate decreed *Julius Cæſar*, a proceſſion of twenty days, on his return from his firſt expedition into *Britain*; becauſe they imagined he had diſcovered, and led them to the conqueſt of a new-world. Then what honours ſhould not have been paid to *Columbus*, the diſcoverer of *America?* and how ſhamefully were theſe honours with-held from ſo great a man; who was not illuſtrious, like *Cæſar*, for his martial actions, and the ſlaughter of more than a million of people; but was of ſervice to ſociety, like *Hercules*, in diſcovering new countries, and eſtabliſhing colonies, for the advantage of trade, and the utility of mankind? No man deſerved to have the new world called after his name but *Columbus*, who diſcovered it: though he was ſo unworthily and ingratefully treated by the *Spaniards*, that they ſuffered this great country to be called *America*, in honour of *Americus Veſputius*, a *Florentine*, who was leſs intitled to that honour than any of thoſe who took upon them to make farther diſcoveries after the return of *Columbus:* for *Americus* was ſo far from performing any conſiderable thing, that he could not diſcover the river of *Plate*, though he was ſent on purpoſe to make that diſcovery.

CHAP. III.

In what manner the propoſals of Columbus *were rejected by the republic of* Genoa, *and the king of* Portugal. *How his application to the king of* England *miſcarried; and how he entered into an agreement with their* Catholic *majeſties, for the diſcovery of* New Countries. *An account of his firſt voyage, and the difficulties he ſuſtained before he diſcovered the* Bahama *iſlands. The diſcovery of* Cuba *and* Hiſpaniola; *with the reception of* Columbus *among the* Indians. *An account of the garriſon he left at* Hiſpaniola; *and of his return to* Europe. *The detention of his men at the* Azores, *by the* Portugueſe: *His arrival at* Lisbon; *and the honourable reception he met with from the king of* Portugal. *His arrival in* Spain; *and the great honours which were conferred upon him by their* Catholic *majeſties. In what manner* Columbus *undertook his ſecond voyage. And the diſpute, between the king of* Portugal *and their* Catholic *majeſties, concerning their rights and pretenſions to the* new diſcovered countries.

A BRAVE *Engliſh* admiral obſerves, that as God choſe the *Spaniſh* nation, for ſome ſecret judgment of his own, above all other people, to ſpread forth his holy name; ſo he remarked three things in them worthy of reprehenſion; their ingratitude, their cruelty, and the baſe condition of the people who were the authors of their proſperity. However, he is ſo far from derogating in the leaſt from the honour of *Columbus*, that he points out

out their ingratitude as entirely levelled at him, who, he ſays, was a man of more deſert to the Chriſtian world, than any other God ever created.

COLUMBUS had fully formed his project, about the year 1480; and was reſolved to make it public: but, as the enterprize was of ſuch great importance, he choſe to apply to ſovereign princes and ſtates for their aſſiſtance and encouragement, rather than give any invitations for private adventurers to be concerned in his grand undertaking; becauſe he was ſenſible, that if he ſhould himſelf, or in conjunction with others, diſcover any rich country, the prince, to whom they owed allegiance, would claim the ſovereignty of ſuch places, and diſpoſe of them according to his pleaſure; or that other princes might ſend other armaments, after he had found the way to the countries he wanted to diſcover, and deprive him, and his fellow adventurers, of the advantage of their diſcovery. He, therefore, made his firſt propoſal to the republic of *Genoa*, imagining it would be embraced by the governors of his native country; but they, injudiciouſly, treated him with contempt, and looked upon his propoſal as a dream. *Columbus* then offered his ſervice to *John*, king of *Portugal*, to find out a way to the *Eaſt-Indies* by the weſtern ocean; and gave ſuch ſubſtantial reaſons for the attempt, that the king granted him a favourable audience, referred the matter to Don *Diego Ortez*, biſhop of *Ceuta*, and to two *Jewiſh* phyſicians, on whom he relied in affairs of diſcoveries and coſmography; but, though they eſteemed the deſign of *Columbus* as a fabulous notion, they were ſo far from abſolutely rejecting the project, that they adviſed the king to ſend a veſſel, under pre-

tence of ſailing to *Cape Verd*, to endeavour, by the courſe which *Columbus* propoſed, to diſcover the ſecret; however, the veſſel, after having been ſeveral days at ſea, and in great ſtorms, returned without making any diſcovery; when the crew derided *Columbus* for his project, who was not ignorant of their attempt.

COLUMBUS was ſo greatly incenſed with this unexpected and ungenerous treatment, as to take an averſion to *Portugal*, and withdraw himſelf into *Spain*, to lay his propoſals before that court; diſpatching his brother *Bartholomew Columbus*, at the ſame time, to *Henry* vii. king of *England*, with charts and maps for the illuſtration of his deſign, and to requeſt the patronage of that monarch in his undertaking. *Bartholomew Columbus* was taken by pirates in his paſſage to *England*; ſo that, not making the neceſſary diſpatch, *Columbus* imparted his ſcheme to *Ferdinand* and *Iſabella* king and queen of *Aragon* and *Caſtille*; whereby *England*, unhappily, loſt both the honour and profit of this important diſcovery.

IT was in the year 1484, that *Columbus* laid his propoſals before their Catholic majeſties, who then kept their court at *Cordoua*, a large city in the province of *Andaluſia*; where he met with the greateſt encouragement from *Alonſo de Quintanilla*, comptroller of the revenue of *Caſtille*, who delighted in great undertakings, looked upon *Columbus* as a man of worth, and gave him his maintenance during the ſollicitation of his tedious ſuit, which was ſo ſtrongly preſſed, that their Catholic majeſties referred the affair to *Ferdinand de Talavera*, prior of *Prado*, and confeſſor to the queen, who

who was afterwards the firſt archbiſhop of *Granada.*

The prior of *Prado* held an aſſembly of coſmographers, to debate upon this important matter; but, as they were little acquainted with the ſubject, and as *Columbus* would not give a full explanation, for fear he ſhould be treated as he had been in *Portugal*, they came to a reſolution very different from what he expected. Some alledged, that ſince, during ſo many ages as there were from the creation of the world, men, very converſant in maritime affairs, had known nothing of thoſe countries, which *Columbus* imagined were to be diſcovered; it was not probable that he could know more than all of them together. Others, adhering more to coſmographical reaſons, urged, that the world was ſo large that there would be no coming to the utmoſt extent of the eaſt in three years ſail, where *Columbus* ſaid his voyage was intended: in confirmation of which they alledged, that *Seneca* affirmed, there were many diſcreet men who could not agree upon the queſtion, whether the ocean was infinite, and doubted whether it could be ſailed over? or, ſuppoſing it to be navigable, whether there was any country inhabited on the other ſide, and whether it was poſſible to go to it? To this they added, that no part of this inferior ſphere was inhabited, except a ſmall compaſs, which was left in our hemiſphere above the water, and that all the reſt was ſea. There were ſtill others, who affirmed, that if *Columbus* ſhould ſail away directly weſtward, he would not be able to return to *Spain*, on account of the roundneſs of the globe; becauſe, whoever went beyond the he-

miſphere, known by *Ptolomy*, would fall down ſo low that it would be impoſſible ever to return, as it would be like climbing up a hill. *Columbus* fully anſwered, and contradicted, theſe arguments: but the aſſembly could not comprehend him; for which reaſon they judged the enterprize to be vain and impracticable; as alſo that it was unbecoming the grandeur of ſuch illuſtrious princes to proceed upon ſo imperfect an account.

THEIR Catholic majeſties, after much delay, ordered *Columbus* to be informed, "That as they "were engaged in ſeveral wars, and particularly "in the conqueſt of *Granada*, they could not en- "ter upon freſh expences; but, when that was "over, they would cauſe farther enquiry to be "made into his propoſals." With this anſwer, *Columbus* was diſmiſſed the court of *Spain*, at preſent; but he afterwards returned, and was taken into its ſervice. At firſt, he retired to *Seville*, very melancholly and diſcontented, after having been five years at court to no effect. He then cauſed the affair to be propoſed to the Duke *de Medina Sidonia*, and to the Duke *de Medina Celi*; who alſo rejected him: upon which he applied to the *French* monarch; and intended, if he would not employ him, or aſſiſt him, in his undertaking, to go over to *England*, in ſearch of his brother, of whom he had received no intelligence for a conſiderable time.

HOWEVER, he was perſuaded to continue in *Spain*, by the advice of *John Perez de Marchena*, guardian of the monaſtery of *Rabida*, near *Palos*, in *Andaluſia*, who was well acquainted with coſmography and polite literature: but, to be better informed

informed of the probability of the ſcheme which *Columbus* went upon, he ſent for *Garci Hernandez*, a phyſician, who conferred with them both, and expreſſed great ſatisfaction at what *Columbus* propoſed. This occaſioned *John Perez*, to write to queen *Iſabella*, to whom he was perſonally known, having confeſſed her ſeveral times; when her majeſty ordered him to repair to court, which was then at the town of *Santa Fe*, while the ſiege of *Granada* was carrying on; and to leave *Columbus* at *Palos*, giving him hopes of ſucceſs in his buſineſs. *John Perez* was introduced to the queen, who ordered 20,000 maravedies, or about 7 *l.* ſterling, to be ſent to *Columbus* to make his appearance at court, where he ſoon after arrived, and the affair was again taken into conſideration. But the prior of *Prado*, and ſome others, oppoſed the opinion of *Columbus*, who demanded high terms, particularly to have the titles of admiral and vice-roy of whatever countries he ſhould diſcover; which, they ſaid, was demanding too much, if the enterprize ſucceeded; and, if it ſhould not, they repreſented that it would be a great diſcredit to the undertakers, and a diſhonour to the nation: upon which the treaty ſeemed entirely to ceaſe, and *Columbus* was now determined to proceed to *France*, being equally reſolved never to return to *Portugal* upon any account.

While *Chriſtopher Columbus* was thus diſconcerted at the court of *Spain*, and while the *Spaniards* were upon the verge of depriving themſelves of the treaſures of a new world, *Bartholomew Columbus* was for a long time equally unſucceſsful in his views at the court of *England*; for, as before mentioned, he was unfortunately taken

priſoner on the ſea, by ſome pirates, who ſtripped him of his cloaths, as well as of every thing elſe he had in the ſhip; by which, and a violent ſickneſs, he was reduced to great neceſſity. However, by his induſtry in making globes, and ſea charts, wherein he was very expert, he retrieved himſelf, ſo as to be in a condition of appearing at the *Engliſh* court, where he laid the propoſals of his brother before king *Henry* vii. who joyfully embraced the offers, and gave orders that *Chriſtopher Columbus* ſhould be immediately invited over to *England*. But, as *Chriſtopher* had heard no account of his brother *Bartholomew*, ſince his departure from *Portugal*, he grew impatient at the delay; having juſt cauſe to apprehend, that ſome perſon of penetration, either at *Genoa* or *Liſbon*, might endeavour to put his ſcheme in practice, ſo far as to deprive him of the honour and benefit of the diſcovery. He reflected, that through the pains he had taken to perſuade his unbelieving countrymen, and the king of *Portugal*, to give credit to what he had advanced, in relation to that part of the globe, he, perhaps, had unwarily laid open the whole ſecret; or at leaſt divulged it, with that poſitive ſanguinity peculiar to perſons, who, knowing the veracity of their aſſertion, are apt to grow too warm and unguarded in their expreſſions, againſt the obſtinate incredulity of thoſe who will ſubmit to nothing but abſolute demonſtration, in matters which their weak capacities cannot otherwiſe comprehend. Beſides, he knew it was too frequently eſteemed as a refined piece of policy, to work up the paſſions of a man, by unreaſonable contradictions, in hopes of fermenting the ſecret out of his brain; or elſe, by pretended offers

of

of doing him ſervice, on a ſuppoſition that the ſcheme is practicable to be carried into execution, ſome miniſters put a man under the indiſpenſible neceſſity of communicating to them the whole nature of the affair, not only in hopes of their patronage and aſſiſtance, but for fear of diſobliging them by a refuſal.

THESE conſiderations made *Chriſtopher Columbus* continue ſo long in his ſollicitations to the court of *Spain*; while the king of *England* would have readily taken him into his ſervice, and have ſpeedily enabled him to undertake the diſcovery of another world: but the misfortunes which happened to *Bartholomew Columbus*, prevented his brother from going early enough to the *Engliſh* court; and, when he was determined to go there, he was prevented by the court of *Spain*.

WHEN *Chriſtopher Columbus* had met with ſuch treatment from the commiſſioners, ſome ſenſible *Spaniards* were much concerned to think that this enterprize ſhould be diſappointed; particularly *Alonzo de Quintanilla*, and *Lewis de Santagel*, a clerk of the revenue of the crown of *Aragon*; who, together with *John Perez*, recommended *Columbus* to the patronage of the cardinal *Don Pedro Gonzalez de Mendoza*. But the commiſſioners alſo objected, that as *Columbus* ventured nothing in the diſcovery, and made himſelf admiral of a fleet belonging to their Catholic majeſties, he would not regard any diſappointment in his enterprize: upon which *Columbus* offered to lay down the eighth part of the expence; provided that it ſhould be refunded, and that he ſhould have his ſhare of the return that ſhould be made, proportionable to what he

he advanced; yet this propoſal was alſo diſregarded: ſo that, in *January* 1492, *Columbus* ſet out from *Santa Fe* for *Cordoua*, in great anxiety; the city of *Granada* being then in the poſſeſſion of their Catholic majeſties.

THE ſame day, *Lewis de Santagel* told the queen, he was ſurprized, that ſhe, who had never wanted a ſpirit for the greateſt undertakings, ſhould now fail to ſupport an expedition where ſo little could be loſt, and ſo much might be gained: for, if the affair ſucceeded, and fell into the hands of another prince, ſhe might readily conceive how prejudicial it would be to her crown; eſpecially as *Columbus* demanded no reward if he made no diſcovery, and was willing not only to venture his perſon, but alſo to defray a part of the charge. He repreſented, that the propoſals made by *Columbus* were not ſo impracticable, as the coſmographers had reported; nor could it be eſteemed a levity, to have attempted ſuch a mighty enterprize, though it ſhould prove unſucceſsful; becauſe it became great and generous monarchs to be acquainted with the wonders and ſecrets of the world, by which many princes had obtained everlaſting renown, and ſhone faireſt in the annals of fame. Beſides, he acquainted her majeſty, that *Columbus* demanded only a million of maravedies, or 350*l.* ſterling, to fit himſelf out for the expedition; and therefore, he entreated the queen not to ſuffer the apprehenſion of ſo ſmall an expence, to diſappoint ſo great an enterprize. Her majeſty was alſo importuned, on the ſame account, by *Alonzo de Quintanilla*, who was greatly in her favour: ſhe thanked them both for their advice, and told them ſhe accepted of it; but deſired they would

would ſtay till ſhe could a little recover her finances after the expences of a war; though, if they were of opinion that the affair ſhould be immediately put into execution, ſhe would conſent that they ſhould borrow what money was requiſite upon ſome of her jewels. Upon this reſolution, a meſſenger was ſent to *Columbus*, with a command for him to return to court; which he readily obeyed, and was well received upon his arrival at *Santa Fe*; when the ſecretary *John Coloma*, was ordered to draw up the conditions and diſpatches; after *Columbus* had ſpent eight years ineffectually, and endured many difficulties in his ſollicitations.

In a conference, held between *Columbus*, and the ſecretary *Coloma*, on the 17th of *April* 1492, the following conditions were agreed upon.

" *Firſt*, Their highneſſes, as ſovereigns of the " ocean, conſtituted Don *Chriſtopher Columbus*, " their admiral in all thoſe iſlands and continents, " that, by his induſtry, ſhould be diſcovered, or " conquered, in the ocean, during his own life; " and, after his death, to his heirs and ſucceſſors " for ever; with all the preheminencies and prero- " gatives appertaining to that office, in the ſame " manner as their great admiral of *Caſtille*, and his " predeceſſors in that office, had enjoyed the ſame " within their diſtricts. That their highneſſes " appointed *Columbus* their viceroy and governor " general of all the iſlands and continents which " he ſhould diſcover and conquer in the ocean; " and that he ſhould nominate three perſons for " the government of each of them, for each office; " and that one of them ſhould be appointed by " their highneſſes. That *Columbus* ſhould have

" the

" the tenth part of all the pearls, precious ſtones, " gold, ſilver, ſpice, or other commodities, that " ſhould be bought, exchanged, found, won, or " had within the limits of his admiralſhip; de- " ducting the charges that ſhould be made towards " the ſame: but the other nine parts ſhould remain " for their highneſſes. THAT if any law-ſuit " ſhould ariſe, on account of the merchandize, " which *Columbus* ſhould bring from any of the " iſlands or lands he ſhould diſcover, or conquer; " and if it ſhould belong to him, as admiral, to " take cognizance of ſuch controverſy, it was " agreed, that he, or his deputy, and no other " judge, ſhould try the ſaid cauſe, if it appertained " to the office of admiral, as the ſame had been " enjoyed by the great admiral of *Caſtille*, or his " predeceſſors, in their diſtricts, and according to " juſtice. AND THAT *Columbus*, if he thought " proper, ſhould be at liberty to lay out the eighth " part of what ſhould be expended on all the ſhips, " which ſhould at any time be fitted out for the " ſame trade; and receive the eighth part of the " profits of ſuch ſhips."

UPON the execution of theſe articles, and after receiving the proper diſpatches, with the million of maravedies, *Columbus* left *Granada*, on the 12th of *May*, and ſet out directly for the port of *Palos*, where he had ſeveral friends, and where there were many able ſeamen fit to undertake his voyage: but the ſailors were very unwilling to engage in ſo uncertain an expedition. *Columbus* carried orders to the magiſtrates of the town of *Palos*, to ſupply him with two caravels, or ſmall ſhips, which the town was obliged to furniſh for the ſervice of the crown,

crown, during three months every year: *Columbus* alſo fitted out another ſhip to be admiral, which he called the St. *Mary*, and commanded himſelf: the ſecond was called *Pinta*, of which *Martin Alonſo Pinzon* was captain, who had his brother *Francis Martinez Pinzon* on board: and the third ſhip was called *Nina*, which carried ſquare ſails, and was commanded by *Vincent Yanez Pinzon*, who was of great ſervice to *Columbus* in this affair, and lent him half a million of maravedies towards defraying the expence. As the *Pinzon*'s, who were the moſt ſubſtantial inhabitants, and moſt ſkilful mariners, in the town of *Palos*, had expreſſed ſo much approbation of the enterprize, and ſo chearfully engaged in the voyage; their example gave ſuch encouragement to the other ſailors, that *Columbus* had ſoon a ſufficient number of hands to proceed on the diſcovery of a new world; though the court, and the common people, little expected he would perform what he had promiſed: but they ſoon found, that two of the moſt fortunate events which ever happened to the *Spaniſh* monarchy fell out the ſame year; the expulſion of the moors, and the diſcovery of *America*.

THEIR Catholic majeſties ſtrictly enjoined *Columbus*, that he ſhould not touch at the mine in *Guiney*, nor come within a hundred leagues of the *Portugueſe* conqueſts: but they gave him their letters patents, directed to all kings and princes in the world; requiring them to give him a favourable and honourable reception, as their officer and commander. The ſhips were victualled for a year, having on board ninety men, and every thing was ready for beginning this important expedition; which,

which, though ſo little approved of at that time, has ever ſince been the only ſupport of the *Spaniſh* nation, and the greateſt ſource of wealth to all *Europe*: but it proved fatal to the inhabitants of *Africa*, from whence many thouſands have been tranſported as ſlaves to the new world, which *Columbus* was now going to diſcover; while the natives of *Aſia* have been prodigiouſly enriched by the ſilver, which the *African* ſlaves have laboriouſly dug out of the *American* mines.

COLUMBUS, with his little ſquadron, ſet ſail from *Palos de Moguer*, on the 3d of *Auguſt* 1492; launching into the great *Atlantic* ocean, and beginning this then unparalelled navigation, with no leſs confidence in himſelf, than admiration among thoſe who ſaw him leave the ſhore, and ſteer a courſe never before attempted, by new rhumbs of winds. The admiral directed his courſe for the *Canary* iſlands; and, on the 12th of *Auguſt*, arrived at the grand *Canary*, which is ſituated in 16 degrees of weſt longitude, and between 27 and 28 degrees of north latitude. But, as the caravel *Pinta* had loſt her rudder in the paſſage, and as it was neceſſary to change the ſquare ſails of the *Nina*, into thoſe called ſhoulder of mutton ſails, that ſhe might follow the other ſhips with more ſteadineſs, and leſs danger; the admiral remained there to refit, and take in freſh proviſions, till the 6th of *September*; when he ſet ſail again upon his grand deſign: though he was informed, before his departure, that three *Portugueſe* ſhips were hovering about the *Canaries* to ſeize him, and prevent his expedition; becauſe the king of *Portugal* was under great concern,

cern, when he underſtood that *Columbus* was engaged in the ſervice of their Catholic majeſties.

On the 7th of *September*, they loſt ſight of the *Canaries*; when many of the ſeamen expreſſed the greateſt ſigns of fear: but *Columbus* encouraged them with the ſtrongeſt aſſurances of ſucceſs, and the higheſt hopes of acquiring an immenſe ſhare of wealth.

On the 11th of *September*, being 150 leagues from the iſland of *Ferro*, the moſt weſterly of the *Canary* iſlands, they ſaw a piece of a maſt, which appeared to have been carried away by the current. Somewhat farther on, in the ſame latitude, the currents ſate ſtrong to the northward: and 50 leagues farther weſtward, on the 14th of *September* towards the evening, *Columbus* obſerved, that the needle varied to the north-weſt about half a point, as it alſo did at break of day; by which he perceived, that the needle was not directly pointed at the north ſtar, but at another fixed and inviſible point; and to vary north-weſt, was to ſhift from the north, to the left hand.

This variation had never been obſerved before, and occaſioned great admiration among the mariners; who were more aſtoniſhed the third day after, when they were advanced 100 leagues farther, holding the ſame courſe; becauſe the needle varied as before, to the north-weſt about evening, and in the morning again pointed upon the very ſtar.

On the 18th, they were about 370 leagues to the weſtward of the iſland of *Ferro*; having, in their paſſage, ſeen a flame of fire fall into the ſea; and obſerved that the currents ſtill ſet to the north-eaſt: they alſo ſaw ſome water-wagtails, which they

they imagined never fled above 18 or 20 leagues from land; but they were more ſurprized to ſee ſpots of green and yellow weeds on the ſurface of the water, which ſeemed to have been waſhed away from ſome iſlands or rocks, and made ſeveral of the ſailors conclude they were near land; eſpecially as they found a little locuſt, or graſhopper, alive upon the weeds: but others fancied there might be rocks or lands under water; and, being much intimidated, murmured againſt the continuance of the voyage. The ſame night the wind freſhened, after they had continued their courſe right before it to the weſtward, without handling their ſails: during which time, the admiral wrote down every thing worthy of notice that occurred; obſerving what winds blew, what his courſe was, what fiſh and birds were ſeen, making obſervations, and ſounding very frequently.

BEING all unacquainted with the voyage, and perceiving no hopes of diſcovering land, as nothing appeared but air and water for ſo many days, the ſeamen began to ſhew a general diſſatisfaction with the expedition. On the 22d of *September*, they let their murmurs burſt out into open complaints; reflecting on the king for having given orders for the voyage, and moſt of them agreed to proceed no further in the diſcovery; alledging, that the admiral, in a mad humour, was attempting to make himſelf great at the hazard of their lives; and that, though they had performed their duty, by ſailing farther from land than any men had ever done before, they ought not to contribute to their own deſtruction, ſtill proceeding without any reaſon till their proviſions failed

failed them, and their ſhips would be unable to carry them back. However, *Columbus* prevented their mutiny, by encouraging ſome with aſſurances of the ſhortneſs and good ſucceſs of their voyage; or by threatening others with the force of the royal authority.

As they were under the torrid zone, and impatient of heats, which they had never before experienced in the temperate climates of *Europe*, their uneaſineſs ſtill increaſed with their diſtance from *Spain*: ſo that they renewed their inſtances for returning back again; while *Columbus*, with a generous and undaunted mind, remained deaf to all their perſuaſions, and purſued his voyage with courage and conſtancy. As the ſailors every day perceived the conſumption of their water and proviſions, they began to call that temerity in the admiral, which before they ſaid might be reſolution: for they alledged, that the time was increaſed, their proviſions leſſened, the winds ſcarce, and calms to be feared; no land in view, and its diſtance not to be known, or gueſſed at; that the danger was certain, and there was no avoiding to periſh if they continued any longer; therefore, they ſeemed determined to diſcontinue the voyage. Some of them even went ſo far, as to ſay, that, to put an end to all debates, the beſt way would be to throw the admiral privately into the ſea, and ſay he had unfortunately fell in, as he was attentively gazing at the ſtars. It cannot be denied, but this was an urgent danger, and greater perhaps than can be imagined by thoſe who never were in the like trials: beſides, theſe allegations were of themſelves of great conſideration, and capable of ſhaking the greateſt conſtancy

and valour: yet the courage of *Columbus* was invincible, and his prudence ſo ſingular, that ſometimes diſſembling, and ſometimes taking no notice of what he heard, but talking with one man or other in private, and then comforting them all in general, he at laſt brought his project to a happy iſſue.

THEIR catholic majeſties had offered an annuity of ten thouſand maravedies, being about 3*l.* 10*s.* ſterling, as a reward, to the firſt perſon who ſhould diſcover land; which made all the mariners diligently attend that part of their duty. But they were now ſo diſconſolate about the diſcovery, and ſo anxious about their return, that every hour ſeemed a year, until the 25th of *September*, at ſun-ſetting; when *Columbus*, as he was talking to *Vincent Yanez Pinzon*, cried out, *Land! Land!* and ſhewed a body towards the ſouth-weſt, that appeared like an iſland, about twenty-five leagues from the ſhips. This greatly encouraged the men; and the admiral ſteered his courſe that way a great part of the night, as if he believed it to be land: though this was only an artifice, between *Columbus* and *Pinzon*, to give a ſhort joy to men who were ſinking under deſpair.

IF *Columbus* had inclined a little more to the ſouthward, he would have made either the *Caribbee-Iſlands*, *Hiſpaniola*, or *Cuba*, which lay on the left or larboard ſide of him; ſome of them a-ſtern, or rather on his larboard quarter: but he held his courſe towards the *Bahama-Iſlands*. However, the next morning they all perceived that what they had taken for land, were clouds, which often look like land: but *Columbus* held on his courſe weſtward,

to the great regret of his men; curbing the inſolence of ſome of them with fear, and encouraging others with hope. They obſerved many weeds in a line from weſt-north-weſt to eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, and ſaw ſeveral water-wagtails; which gave them freſh hopes of land: they alſo perceived that the currents were not ſo ſtrong as before, and turned back with the tides. But the admiral obſerved, that the polar ſtars were on the weſt quarter at night, and when day came on they were at the north-eaſt quarter. He alſo perceived, that towards night the needles varied a whole degree, and that in the morning they were right with the ſtar; which very much troubled and confounded the pilots, till he told them, that the occaſion of it was the compaſs which the north ſtar took about the pole; and this gave them ſome ſatisfaction: for that variation made them apprehenſive of danger, as being ſo far diſtant from land.

On the 1ſt of *October*, the pilot told the admiral, that they were then 588 leagues to the weſtward of the iſland of *Ferro*: but the admiral ſaid it was 584 by his reckoning; though he was of opinion it was 607. On the 3d of *October*, the pilot of the caravel *Nina* ſaid he found they had ſailed 650 leagues, and the pilot of the *Pinta* ſaid 634; wherein they were miſtaken, for they had always ſailed before the wind: but *Columbus* ſtill took no notice, for fear his men ſhould be diſpirited at this great run; becauſe the greateſt ſea, till then known, was nothing like that extent.

The admiral ſtill continued his courſe due weſt; as he would not loſe the credit of his undertaking by turning at random from one ſide to the other, to diſcover that which he always affirmed he knew

for a certainty. This renewed the mutiny among his men; nor was it ſtrange, conſidering that ſo many men were led by one, of whom few of them had any knowledge, expoſed to ſo many dangers, and without knowing what would be the end of ſuch a long voyage. But, on the 4th of *October*, they ſaw above forty ſparrows and two gulls, which pacified them a little; and they were encouraged to proceed, by the good words given them by the admiral.

ON the 7th of *October*, ſome ſign of land appeared to the weſtward: but no man would venture to ſpeak of it, becauſe of the thickneſs of the weather; eſpecially as it was agreed, to prevent their crying land at every foot, in hopes of getting the annuity, "that whoever ſaid it, if the ſame "was not made good in three days, ſhould be for "ever excluded from that reward, though he "ſhould really afterwards make the diſcovery." However, thoſe on board the caravel *Nina*, which was much a-head, concluded it was certainly land, fired their guns, and put out their colours: but the farther they ſailed, the more their joy abated, till it entirely vaniſhed.

THEIR comfort was again revived with the ſight of great numbers of birds, and among them many land-fowls, flying from the weſt to the ſouth weſt; ſo that, conſidering, after he had ſailed ſo great a length, ſuch ſmall birds could not be far from land, *Columbus* concluded it muſt certainly be near; therefore, he altered the courſe he then held due weſt, and ſteered ſouth-weſt; alledging, that though he altered his courſe, he deviated little from his firſt deſign, following the example of the *Portugueſe*,

tugueſe, who diſcovered moſt of the iſlands in the *Eaſt-Indies*, by purſuing the flight of ſuch birds.

THE mariners ſtill continued to treat *Columbus* with contradiction and contempt: but, on *Thurſday*, the 11th of *October*, they perceived ſeveral manifeſt tokens of their being near land: for the men aboard the admiral ſaw a green ruſh near the ſhip, and a kind of large green fiſh which keep generally cloſe about the rocks. Thoſe on board the caravel *Pinta*, took up a cane artificially wrought; and ſaw abundance of weeds, freſh torn off from the ſhore. Thoſe aboard the caravel *Nina*, ſaw the branch of a thorn, with the berries on it, which appeared to be newly broke off. Theſe ſigns confirmed them in the opinion that they were approaching to ſome land, eſpecially as they brought up ſand upon ſounding, and as the wind ſhifted, which ſeemed to come from the ſhore.

COLUMBUS, being ſatisfied that he was near land, aſſembled his men together, and told them how merciful the Almighty had been to them, in carrying them with ſo much health and ſafety through ſo long and perillous a voyage; and that, as the ſigns of land were hourly more conſpicuous, he deſired them to be ſtrictly upon the watch all night; ſince they knew, by the firſt article of the inſtructions he had given them when they came out of *Spain*, that, when they had run ſeven hundred leagues without diſcovering land, they were to lie by after midnight till day, and be upon the watch; which he now ſtrongly recommended to them, as he was very confident they would diſcover land that night; and that, beſides the annuity of ten thouſand maravedies, he would alſo give a

velvet doublet to the perſon who ſhould make the diſcovery.

ABOUT ten at night, as he ſtood on the poop, *Columbus* ſaw a light: upon which he called *Peter Gutierres*, groom of the chamber to the king, and deſired him to look at it; who anſwered, that he ſaw it: but *Roderic Sanahez*, purſer of the fleet, could not diſcern it, till it was afterwards ſeen twice, appearing like a little candle raiſed up, and then taken down. However, *Columbus* was aſſured it was a true light, and that they were near land; which was ſoon proved to be the caſe; for the light was made by people paſſing from one houſe to another; and, about two in the morning, the ſhip called the *Pinta*, being the beſt ſailor of the three, and therefore uſually a-head of the admiral, gave the ſignal of land, which was firſt ſeen with the naked eye, when they were within two leagues of the ſhore, by *Roderic de Triana*, one of the common ſeamen on board the *Pinta*: but their Catholic majeſties afterwards adjudged that the admiral was intitled to the reward offered to the firſt diſcoverer of land, becauſe he ſaw a light on the iſland before; and ordered him to be paid out of the ſhambles of *Seville*, as the beſt fund for his ſecurity.

ON the appearance of day, they perceived it was an iſland about fifteen leagues in length, plain, watered with a great lake, and well planted; but generally flat low lands, without hills. The iſland was very populous, and the natives came crouding down to the ſhore, expreſſing the greateſt aſtoniſhment at the ſight of the ſhips, which they imagined to be ſome monſters, and waited with the utmoſt impatience

impatience to know what they were; while the *Spaniards* were equally eager to get upon land, and met with no oppoſition from the natives. *Columbus* believed there was no danger to be apprehended from the *Indians*, and went on ſhore in his boat, with the royal colours flying; being followed by the captains *Martin Alonſo Pinzon*, and *Vincent Yanez Pinzon*, who carried the colours of their enterprize, adorned with a green croſs and ſome crowns, about which were inſcribed the names of their Catholic majeſties.

As ſoon as they came on ſhore, they proſtrated themſelves to the earth, which they kiſſed on their knees; returning thanks to the Almighty God for the goodneſs he had ſhewn them in making this diſcovery of another world. The admiral then ſtood up, and gave the name of St. *Salvador*, or St. *Saviour*, to the iſland, which the natives called *Guanaham*; being one of thoſe afterwards called the *Lucayo*, or *Bahama* iſlands, 950 leagues from the *Canaries*, and diſcovered after they had ſailed thirty-three days. *Columbus* immediately afterwards formally took poſſeſſion of the iſland, in the name of their Catholic majeſties, for the crowns of *Caſtille* and *Leon*, teſtified by *Roderic de Eſcovedo*, notary of the fleet, in the preſence of a great multitude of the natives. After this, the *Spaniards* acknowledged him for their admiral and viceroy; ſwearing obedience to him, as the repreſentative of their king in that country, with all the joy and ſatisfaction that naturally reſulted from ſo great and ſingular an event; all of them imploring his pardon, for the trouble and uneaſineſs which they had given him, by their timidity and inconſtancy.

THE *Indians*, all this time, ſtood amazed, and gazing at the *Spaniards*; without attempting to give them the leaſt interruption, while they were thus taking poſſeſſion of their country, which was to be ſoon after followed by the deſtruction of its inhabitants; who conceived, from the motion of the ſhips, that they were living things; and, from their magnitude, they took them for ſome ſtrange ſea monſters never before ſeen on thoſe coaſts. But, when the *Spaniards* landed, the natives were more aſtoniſhed at their beards, complexion, and apparel: nor were the *Spaniards* in leſs admiration at the mien and ſhape of the *Indians*; who, being in their original ſimplicity, were, both men and women, entirely naked; moſt of them young, or not above thirty years of age. They were of a middle ſtature, well ſhaped, fleſhy, and their ſkins of an olive colour, like the natives of the *Canaries*. They had good features, though their faces were ſomewhat diſguiſed by their extraordinary high foreheads; as alſo by painting themſelves with black, white, and red colours, not only on their faces, but on their bodies. They wore their hair, which was black, down to their ears, and ſome of them to their necks, tied to the head with a ſtring like treſſes; but the principal ornament among them was a thin gold plate, in the form of a creſcent, which hung from the noſe over the upper lip. Their arms were ſpears pointed with the bones of fiſh; for they had no knowledge of iron metal, inſtead of which they made uſe of ſharp ſtones in their timber-work.

THE admiral, believing the *Indians* to be a gentle and ſimple people, ordered ſome ſtrings of glaſs-

glaſs-beads, caps, and toys of ſmall value, to be diſtributed among them; at which they ſeemed infinitely pleaſed, and immediately hung the beads about their necks; teſtifying, by all imaginable ſigns, the eſteem they had for theſe preſents: in return for which, they gave the *Spaniards* gold, proviſions, and javelins.

When the admiral returned to his ſhips, the *Indians* followed him; ſome ſwimming, and others rowing themſelves in their canoes, which are veſſels made out of the body of a tree, ſome of them holding forty men, and others only two. The *Spaniards* invited them on board, where they brought parrots and cotton yarn, being all the merchandize they had, to exchange for European triffles; on which they ſet ſo high a value, that they gathered up the bits of glazed diſhes, or broken earthen-ware, with as much joy as the *Spaniards* would have taken up pearls and gold. But all things borrow their value from their rarity; for which reaſon the *Indians* little eſteemed gold and pearls; as they were as common and unneceſſary among them, as bells, and other toys, were among the *Spaniards*, whom they looked upon with admiration, imagining they were men come from heaven; and therefore they were anxious of having any thing from them to keep as a memorial to their honour.

The admiral enquired of the *Indians*, as well as could be done by ſigns, how ſeveral of them came by ſcars on their bodies; when they made him underſtand, that the people of ſome other iſlands wanted to make them priſoners, and that they received thoſe wounds in defending themſelves. *Co-*

lumbus

lumbus alſo perceived, that the *Indians* had much ſenſibility and ingenuity; which made him enquire, from whence they had their gold plates? They anſwered, it came from the ſouthward; where they gave the *Spaniards* to underſtand, there were ſeveral large countries well repleniſhed with that metal.

THE admiral, having this information that there were other lands, was determined to go in ſearch of them. Indeed, the iſland he had diſcovered, was but a very inconſiderable part of what was to be found among the other iſlands, excluſive of the grand continent of *America*: for this iſland was only one of the *Lucayas* or *Bahamas*, which are very numerous, and about twelve of them of a conſiderable extent; being ſituated between 73 and 81 degrees of weſt-longitude, and between 21 and 27 degrees of north-latitude. Accordingly, on the 14th of *October* in the morning, the admiral, with the boats, took a view of the coaſt to the north-weſt, till he came to a ridge of rocks, where there was a ſafe and ſpacious harbour: but, as the ſeamen were tired with rowing, and as *Columbus* perceived that it was improper to make any long continuance upon the iſland, he took ſeven *Indians* to learn the *Spaniſh* tongue, and returned to the ſhips; after which, he ſet out on the diſcovery of the other iſlands.

ON the 15th of *October*, they arrived at an iſland, about ſeven leagues diſtant from the firſt; having obſerved a great many others in their paſſage. The admiral called this iſland St. *Mary of Conception*; and, finding that the natives were like thoſe of *Saint Salvador*, he proceeded farther, till the

the 17th, when he came to another iſland, which he called *Ferdinanda*, in honour of the king. This iſland appeared to abound in water; being beautified with many meadows and groves, interſperſed with ſome little agreeable hills, which there were not in the others; and affording a great variety of birds, that ſung ſweetly, and flew in flocks together, different from what are to be ſeen in *Europe*. There were alſo ſeveral lakes, and near one of them they ſaw an alligator, about ſeven feet long, which they killed. The inhabitants were like the other *Indians*; but appeared to have more ſagacity, covering their nakedneſs with cotton cloths, and managing the exchange of their commodities to a greater advantage.

ALL the *Indians*, which the *Spaniards* had hitherto diſcovered, inhabited little towns, conſiſting of ten or twelve houſes, like tents; ſome round, and others long, with an open portal before them, covered with leaves of trees, well fitted againſt the inclemency of the weather, with vents for the ſmoke, and ridges at the top; but they had no houſhold furniture. Finding nothing more in *Ferdinanda* than in *St. Salvador*, and the *Conception*, the admiral proceeded to another iſland, called *Saomoto*, by the *Indians*, which he named *Iſabella*, in honour of the Catholic queen; taking poſſeſſion of it before witneſſes, and the notary, as he had done in the others. The natives were like thoſe of the other iſlands, and informed the *Spaniards*, by pointing to the ſouth, that there was a large iſland, called *Cuba*; which the admiral believed to be *Cipango*, and therefore would not loſe time to viſit the adjacent iſlands; but ſteered weſt ſouth-weſt,

and

and afterwards ſouth-eaſt, when he diſcovered eight iſlands, lying north and ſouth, which he called *del Arena*, or ſand iſlands, becauſe there was ſhoal-water about them; and, on the 27th of *October*, he diſcovered the iſland of *Cuba*, to which he gave the name of *Juana*, or *Johanna*.

THIS iſland, which ſtill retains the name of *Cuba*, is ſituated between 74 and 87 degrees of weſt longitude, and between 20 and 23 degrees of north latitude; being about 800 miles long, and about 70 broad. The country yielded a beautiful proſpect of hills and plains, riſing grounds and ſhores; the woods looking very thick, and the trees tall, being loaded with fair bloſſoms, and rich fruit, about which were abundance of birds. The admiral anchored in a great river, and called it *St. Salvador*; from whence he diſcerned two houſes; and, being deſirous of obtaining ſome information about the country, ſent ſome of his men there; at whoſe approach the *Indians* fled, leaving their nets and fiſhing-tackle behind, as many others did wherever the ſhips appeared. Upon this, the admiral ſent two *Spaniards* on ſhore, accompanied with two *Indians*, ſupplying them with things to barter, and ſetting them ſix days for their return, with inſtructions how to ſpeak in the name of their Catholic majeſties; ordering them to go up the country, and get him what intelligence they were able, without committing the leaſt prejudice to any of the natives.

IN the mean time, the ſhips were refitted, and the *Spaniards* returned on the 5th of *November*, with three of the native *Indians*; when they informed the admiral that they had travelled twenty-two leagues,

and

and found a village of fifty houſes, containing about a thouſand inhabitants, who came out to meet them, led them by the arms, and lodged them in one of their beſt houſes, where they treated them with the moſt extraordinary reſpect, kiſſing their feet and hands, as believing they came from heaven; and giving them boiled roots to eat, which taſted like cheſnuts. They alſo intreated the *Spaniards* to continue among them, or at leaſt to repoſe themſelves for a ſhort time; and, when they ſaw them returning to their ſhips, they offered to bear them company; for the two *Indians* had informed the natives there was no danger to be apprehended from the *Spaniards*. The *Spaniſh* ſailors likewiſe reported, that they had ſeen ſeveral other towns in their journey, where they were entertained with great hoſpitality: they alſo ſaid, the country was well planted with roots, and indian corn or maize; that it abounded in oaks, pines, palms, and cotton ſhrubs; that they ſaw a great variety of birds, among which were partridges and nightingales; but found no other beaſts than a few dogs, which never barked; that the *Indians* had great quantities of cotton-yarn, which they made into nets for their beds, and little clouts to cover their privities, all the reſt of their bodies being naked; but that they would exchange a little baſket full of cotton, for a leather thong, a piece of glazed ware, or a bit of a looking-glaſs; and, on being aſked if they had any gold or pearls, they pointed to the eaſtward, ſaying, there was abundance at *Bohio*.

THE admiral then enquired of the *Indians*, on board the ſhips, if they knew where gold was to

be

be had; when they anſwered, *Cubanacan*; by which the *Spaniards* imagined they meant the Great Cham, and that *Tartary* or *China* was not far off, becauſe the *Indians* made ſigns as if it was only four days journey; but they ſoon underſtood that *Cubanacan* was a province in the middle of the iſland of *Cuba*, where there were mines of gold.

UPON this intelligence, the admiral ordered ſome *Indians* to be taken from ſeveral parts, and carried into *Spain*, that every one might give an account of his own country, as witneſſes of the diſcovery. Accordingly, twelve men, women, and children, were taken; which was ſo far from giving any offence, that, as they were ready to ſail, an *Indian*, who was huſband to one of the women, and father to two boys on board, came to the ſhip, and deſired to be taken along with his wife and children; when he was admitted, and all of them treated with great civility.

ON the 14th of *November*, the admiral ſtood to the eaſtward, for the diſcovery of *Bohio*, or a land full of cottages; the word *Bohio* ſignifying a cottage among the *Indians*: but the wind was contrary, and obliged *Columbus* to ſpend three or four days about the iſland of *Iſabella*, where he was afraid of landing, leaſt the *Indians* ſhould make their eſcape. As there were great hopes of diſcovering gold in *Bohio*, *Martin Alonzo Pinzon* deſerted the admiral, with a view of getting there before him, and enriching himſelf; which occaſioned *Columbus*, as the wind continued againſt him, to return to *Cuba*, where he ſailed 107 leagues to the eaſtward along the coaſt; and ſet out from the eaſtern point, on the 5th of *December*, for *Bohio*;

where

where he arrived the next day, being 18 leagues from *Cuba*.

The admiral entered a port, which he called *St. Nicholas*; being ſafe, ſpacious, and deep, encompaſſed with thick woods; though the land was hilly, and the trees ſmall. A pleaſant river diſembogued itſelf into the harbour; and there were ſeveral canoes on the ſhore capable of carrying 50 or 60 perſons. However, as they found no people, the admiral proceeded farther to the northward, till he came to a place which he called the port of *Conception*, to the ſouthward of an iſland, which he called *Tortuga*, ten leagues from *Bohio*. He now found that the iſland of *Bohio* was very large; that the ſoil and the trees were like thoſe of *Spain*; as alſo that they took ſeveral fiſh known in *Spain*; and that they had heard the nightingale ſing, with other *European* birds: he therefore called the iſland *la Eſpanola*, or the *Spaniſh* iſland, afterwards corruptly called *Hiſpaniola*: for having named the firſt iſland *San Salvador*, or *St. Saviour*, in honour of God; the ſecond the *Conception*, with reſpect to the virgin *Mary*; the third *Ferdinanda*, for king *Ferdinand*; the fourth *Iſabella*, in honour of the queen; and the fifth *Juana* for the prince their ſon; he thought proper the name of *Spain* ſhould have the ſixth place; though ſome of his people told him, it would be more proper to call it *Caſtellana*; becauſe only the kingdoms of *Caſtille* and *Leon* were concerned in that conqueſt.

The admiral was deſirous of taking a view of the country, and of making an enquiry about the gold which he expected to find there: but the natives fled from the *Spaniards*, and gave one another

ther notice where they were by fires. *Columbus* then ſent ſix men well armed to travel up the country, who returned without finding any people, and repreſented it as a very delightful place: but, as three ſailors were in a wood adjacent to the mouth of the harbour, they ſaw a great number of naked *Indians*, who fled from them; when the ſailors run after them, and ſeized a woman, who had a little plate of gold hanging at her noſe. The *Spaniards* conducted her to the admiral, who gave her hawks-bells, and ſtrings of glaſs beads: he alſo cauſed a ſhirt to be put upon her, and ſent her away with three of the *Indians* he had brought with him, and three *Spaniards* to accompany her to her habitation, which was four leagues diſtant to the ſouth-eaſt; where the next day he ſent nine *Spaniards* more, with an *Indian* of *Sal Salvador*.

THE *Spaniards* found a town conſiſting of about a thouſand houſes, which, on their approach, were abandoned by the inhabitants: but an *Indian* went after, and overtook them; who extolled the *Spaniards* in ſo high a manner, as to prevail on the natives to return. The *Indians* were aſtoniſhed at the *Spaniards*, laid their hands on their heads by way of honour and reſpect, carried them proviſions, and deſired they would ſtay that night among them. The *Spaniards* returned with an account that the country abounded in proviſions; that the people were whiter, and of better countenances, than thoſe of the other iſlands, and more tractable; as alſo, that the country which produced gold was more to the eaſtward.

HAVING received this information, though the wind was contrary, the admiral departed from the weſt end of the iſland, and ſailed along the north coaſt:

coaſt: in which paſſage, he took an *Indian* with his canoe into the ſhip, gave him ſome toys, and ſent him to land; when the *Indian* ſpoke ſo favourably of the *Spaniards* to his countrymen, that many of them were encouraged to come on board the ſhips. The *Indians* brought only ſome ſmall grains of pure gold, hanging at their noſes, which they freely gave to the *Spaniards*; and being aſked from whence that gold was brought, they anſwered by ſigns, that there was great plenty of it farther on. But when the admiral enquired for the iſland of *Cipango*, they imagined he meant *Cibao*, where moſt gold was found upon the iſland, and pointed to the place.

The admiral was informed, that the cazique, or the king of this part of the iſland, was coming to pay him a viſit, attended by two hundred men, with his tutor and counſellors; the cazique being carried on a bier on their ſhoulders; and when he came on board, the *Spaniards* were ſurprized to ſee what great reſpect they paid him, and how ſedately he behaved himſelf. The admiral gave the cazique a piece of cloth, ſome amber beads, a pair of red ſhoes, and a bottle of orange flower-water; with which he was extremely well pleaſed, and gave the admiral a gold girdle, that looked like thoſe in *Spain*, though the workmanſhip was different, and ſome plates of gold. The cazique offered the admiral any thing in his country, and expreſſed great concern that they could not underſtand one another. The admiral, by means of the *Indian* interpreter, informed the cazique, that he was commander for their catholic majeſties, who were the greateſt ſovereigns in the world: but neither the cazique, nor

his attendants, would believe any other, than that the *Spaniards* came from heaven. The *Indians* were treated with great civility and generoſity; the admiral paying great honour to the cazique, who returned with great ſatisfaction to the town where he reſided, which was twelve miles up the country.

THE admiral was reſolved to make a further diſcovery of the country, and ſet ſail on the 19th of *December*; being perſuaded that *Hiſpaniola* had many capes and harbours, with a temperate air, and a delightful ſoil. Several towns appeared on the ſhore, and many *Indians* brought proviſions to the ſhips; informing the admiral, that their king, or cazique, deſired he would make a viſit to his town; and that he was waiting for him, with ſeveral of his people, on a point of land. The admiral accepted the invitation, and went aſhore in his boats; when the king ſent him proviſions and parrots: the admiral alſo preſenting the *Indians* with hawks-bells, glaſs toys, and ſome pieces of tin; after which, he returned to the ſhips, though the *Indians*, particularly the women and children, greatly regretted his departure, all of them believing that the *Spaniards* were celeſtial beings.

ON the 22d of *December*, a meſſenger came to the admiral from *Guacanagari*, the king of the country, deſiring him to come to his town, and that he would give him all his poſſeſſions, which were extenſive, as he was one of the five ſovereigns of the iſland. The meſſenger brought the admiral a girdle, adorned with ſmall fiſh-bones, like ſeed pearl, curiouſly wrought, and four fingers broad; as alſo a vizor of beaten gold: upon which, the admiral ſent his notary, and ſix *Spaniards*, to pay his com-

compliments to *Guacanagari*, who came out to meet them; all his people gazing on them with joy and admiration. The king gave the notary ſome cotton cloths, parrots, and pieces of gold; his people giving the *Spaniards* what they were able; and valuing the *Spaniſh* toys as religious relics.

On the 24th, the admiral viſited *Guacanagari*, whoſe principal town was about fourteen miles from the port; where he continued ſometime, and then returned on board; having met with a very hoſpitable reception. The weather being fair, and the ſea calm, the ſailor that was at the helm left it to a grummet; though the admiral, during the whole voyage, ordered the ſteerſmen never to quit the helm: but the ſtill calm invited the ſeamen to ſleep, who imagined they were out of all danger, when the current carried the ſhip along very greatly, till it ſtruck on a rock, with ſuch a dreadful noiſe, that it could be heard at the diſtance of a league. When the rudder ſtruck, the admiral was firſt up; though he had not ſlept two days and a night before: the maſter then came up, and was ordered, as the boat was out, to let fall an anchor at the ſtern; by which means they might work out the ſhip with the help of the capſtain. However, inſtead of finding his orders properly executed, the admiral perceived ſome of his men were making away in the boat to the caravel that lay to the windward, half a league from his own ſhip. The admiral then ordered the ſhip to be lightened, and the maſt to be cut down: but ſhe ſprung a leak between the ribs, and lay down on a ſide, opened near the keels, and was ſoon full of water: ſo that if the

wind had blown, or the ſea been rough, every man on board muſt have periſhed; though, if the maſter had done what the admiral ordered him, the ſhip would have been got off ſafe. The boat returned to their aſſiſtance, with ſome additional hands from the caravel *Nina*: but, as there was no poſſibility of preſerving the ſhip, proper care was taken for ſaving the men. Accordin gly, the admiral ſent a meſſage to *Guacanagari*, acquainting him of this misfortune; upon which the king and his brothers immediately brought their canoes to the wreck, took off all upon decks, and carried them ſafe to land; with ſtrong aſſurances of their remaining untouched.

Two days after *Guacanagari* went aboard the caravel *Nina*, where he found the admiral in great affliction for the loſs of his ſhip; but told him what had been gathered from the wreck was ready to be delivered to him on ſhore, comforted him in his diſtreſs, and offered him all the aſſiſtance in his power: he alſo preſented him with ſome gold; and, obſerving the admiral valued this metal, he told him he would cauſe ſome to be brought him from *Cibao*. The *Indian* prince complained of the *Caribbees*, who carried away his people; aſſuring the admiral, it was on that account his people fled at firſt from the *Spaniards*, whom they imagined to be their enemies. The admiral ſhewed his arms to *Guacanagari*, offering to defend him, which gave him great ſatisfaction; but he chiefly admired the cannon, upon whoſe firing the *Indians* fell down as if they had been dead. After this the king returned to ſhore; having invited the admiral to pay him another viſit, to eat *Axis* and *Cazabi*, which was their principal diet.

As

As the admiral found the *Indians* were ſuch inoffenſive and hoſpitable people, ſo ready to afford aſſiſtance to ſtrangers in diſtreſs, and their king ſo willing to accommodate the *Spaniards* with whatever they deſired; he came to a reſolution of leaving ſome men in that part of the country, that they might make farther diſcoveries, trade with the people, and learn the language; becauſe he intended ſoon to ſail back to *Spain*, and when he returned to *Hiſpaniola*, he expected to find ſome perſons capable of giving directions how to form the ſettlements, which he thought it would be neceſſary to make upon the iſland. In purſuance of this reſolution, the admiral built a fort with the timber of his wrecked ſhip, in a harbour, which he called the port of *Nativity*. The fort had a ditch round it, and was finiſhed in ten days; being ſtrong enough to be defended againſt the natives, who were ſhewn, and dreaded the effect of the *Spaniſh* arms, eſpecially the artillery.

The admiral had ſeveral motives for leaving a garriſon here; becauſe, when it was known in *Spain*, that people had been left there to ſettle, the *Spaniards* would be more inclinable to go over: beſides, as he had only his own ſhip, all his people could not be contained in it, without great inconvenience: to which may be added, that he found ſeveral of his people very willing to continue among the *Indians*, who had ſhewn them ſo much friendſhip and affability; as alſo, that the admiral intended to carry with him ſome of the natives of the country, and of the moſt valuable things produced in it, in confirmation of the diſcovery. He made choice of thirty-nine men to ſtay in the fort,

under the command of *James de Arana*, with full power, as he had received it from their majeſties; leaving with them a ſhip-carpenter, a caulker, a cooper, a tailor, and a gunner; who were furniſhed with proviſions for a year, ſome ſeeds to ſow, and ſeveral things to barter; as alſo, all the great guns, and other arms in the ſhip, with the boat belonging to it. He exhorted the men to obey their commander, to pay reſpect to *Guacanagari*, and offer no offence to his people; giving them the ſtrongeſt aſſurances, that he would ſpeedily return to them with a greater power.

BEFORE his departure, the admiral paid another viſit to *Guacanagari*, who received him with great ſtate; being attended by five of his caziques, or tributary princes, all with crowns of gold upon their heads. The king preſented his crown to the admiral; and the caziques made him a preſent of ſome plates of gold, made of grains beat together between two ſtones. The admiral gave *Guacanagari* a collar of beautiful beads, recommended the *Spaniards* to his friendſhip, and told him he had commanded them to aſſiſt him againſt the *Caribbees*. The admiral alſo promiſed that he would ſoon return with preſents from the king of *Spain*; and *Guacanagari* anſwered him with great ſigns of ſorrow for his departure; which the admiral would not have made ſo ſoon, if he had not been apprehenſive that the caravel *Pinta* would get home ſafe, and her people give ſome information againſt him to conceal their own crime.

ON the 4th of *January* 1493, the admiral left the port of the *Nativity*, ſailing eaſtward till the 6th, when he diſcovered the caravel *Pinta* ſailing toward

toward him before the wind. They returned towards *Hiſpaniola*, and *Martin Alonſo Pinzon* made his excuſe for having parted company, pretending to have been forced away by ſtreſs of weather: but the admiral thought it improper to enter into a diſpute about the matter; though he knew he left him voluntarily, and underſtood he had got a great deal of gold by bartering with the natives of *Hiſpaniola* for trifles, half of which the captain took for himſelf, and gave the other half among his ſeamen.

THE admiral was now in ſpirits, on being happily joined by the other ſhip; and continued for ſeveral days ſailing along the iſland, giving names to ſeveral capes and harbours. He ſent ſeven men with the boat for water, on the 12th of *January*, who ſaw fifty-five naked *Indians*, with long hair, like the women in *Spain*, armed with bows and arrows, ſwords made of hard palm wood, and heavy ſpears; their heads being adorned with a kind of coronets made of beautiful feathers. They were at firſt prevailed on to ſell two of their bows to the *Spaniards*; but were ſo far from ſelling any more, that they began to offer them violence; upon which the *Spaniards* fired, and wounded three of the *Indians*, who immediately fled, and left their arms behind them. This was the firſt time that the *Spaniards* received any act of hoſtility from the *Indians* of *Hiſpaniola*, which gave the admiral ſome uneaſineſs; though he knew it would make them ſenſible of the weight of the *Spaniſh* arms,

ON the 14th, a great number of *Indians* appeared on the ſhore, and the admiral ordered the boat's crew to be upon their guard: but the *Indians*

came as if nothing had happened, and their cazique went on board the caravel, where he was treated with great reſpect, and preſented the admiral with his crown of gold. The next day, four young *Indians* came to the caravel in canoes; who acquainted the admiral with many particulars, ſhewed him the iſland of St. *John*, and appeared ſo intelligent, that the admiral reſolved to carry them into *Spain*.

As the caravels were leaky, the admiral ſet ſail on his return to *Europe*, on the 16th of *January*; advancing ſixteen leagues with the wind at weſt-north-weſt; when the *Indians* he had on board, pointed to the iſlands of St. *John*, *Martinico*, and the *Caribbees*: but, though the admiral was deſirous of taking a view of thoſe iſlands, he was afraid of diſpiriting his men, as the wind freſhened; and, therefore, ſteered directly for *Spain*, advancing ſucceſsfully for ſeveral days.

THE caravel *Pinta* was no good ſailor on a bowling, becauſe ſhe had little benefit of her mizen-maſt, ſo that they made little way, as the admiral was ſometimes obliged to lie by for her. Having ſailed ſeveral days, changing their courſe according to the winds, they endeavoured to keep their reckoning, and imagined they were to the eaſtward of the *Azores*; becauſe they reckoned more leagues than they really ſailed, being entirely miſtaken in the way they made to the northward; ſo that, inſtead of any of the *Azores*, they would more probably have fallen in with ſome of the *Madeira* iſlands: but the admiral, who was now experienced at reckoning their run, found one hundred and fifty leagues leſs than the others.

ON

On the 12th of *February*, the ſea began to ſwell with great and dangerous ſtorms; which obliged the ſhips to drive without any ſail, during the night. The next morning the wind ſlackened; but, on the 13th at night, it aroſe again, with dreadful waves: ſo that, as the danger was imminent, and as there was no other way to avoid it, the admiral let his ſhip run before the wind; his example being followed by the captain of the *Pinta*, who ſoon after diſappeared. On the 14th, after ſun-riſing, the wind blew fiercer; and the admiral was now the more afraid of periſhing, as all his people believed the *Pinta* was already loſt.

The admiral thought it was impoſſible to ſurvive the danger of this terrible ſtorm; but, that ſome knowledge might come to their Catholic majeſties of what he had done in their ſervice, he wrote a narrative on parchment of what he had diſcovered, in how many days he performed the voyage, and what way he had done it; with an account of the nature of thoſe lands, and of the inhabitants; as alſo informing them, that their majeſties ſubjects were left in poſſeſſion of what he had diſcovered. This writing was folded up, ſealed, and addreſſed to their Catholic majeſties; with the promiſe of a reward, on the outſide, of a thouſand ducats, to any perſon who ſhould deliver it to them ſealed; becauſe, that, if any foreigner found it, the promiſed reward might induce him not to give it to another. The admiral then wrapped the writing in an oiled cloth, incloſed in a ball of wax, which he put into an empty caſk, bunged it cloſe up, and threw it into the ſea. He alſo placed another caſk on the higheſt part of the

ſhip,

ſhip, with a copy of the ſame writing incloſed in the ſame manner; ſo that, if the ſhip ſunk, the caſk might ſtill remain above water.

ALL the ſeamen expected to periſh in the ſtorm, and went to their devotions: after which, they caſt lots who ſhould go on pilgrimage to the lady of *Guadalupe*, if they eſcaped, and the lot fell upon the admiral. Then they drew again, who ſhould go to the lady of *Loretto* in *Italy*, on their arrival in *Europe*, which fell on *Peter de Villa*, a mariner. As the ſtorm ſtill increaſed, they all made a vow to go barefoot, in their ſhirts, at their landing, to ſome church dedicated to the *Virgin Mary*; beſides which, every one made private vows for himſelf. But heaven, having juſt favoured the diſcovery of a new world, now alſo favoured its diſcoverer: the ſtorm began to abate; and, on the 15th of *February*, they ſaw land a-head, bearing from them eaſt-north-eaſt; which ſome took for the iſland of *Madeira*, and others for *Cape Roxent*, or the rock of *Liſbon*: though the admiral inſiſted they were the *Azores*, which they really were.

THEY plied to and fro with great difficulty; and, on the 18th, came to an anchor on the north ſide of the iſland of St. *Mary*. Soon after, three men made a ſignal to the caravel; upon which the admiral ſent the boat for them, who brought him refreſhments of bread and fowl from the governor, whoſe name was Don *John de Caſtenada*. The next day, he ordered one half of his men to go out in proceſſion to an adjacent hermitage, where was a chapel, dedicated to the *Virgin Mary*, to perform their vow; telling them, that when they returned,

he

he would go out with the other half; and ſent to the *Portugueſe*, to bring him a clergyman to celebrate maſs. The men went barefoot, and in their ſhirts, to the hermitage; where the *Portugueſe* governor fell upon them, and made them priſoners. The governor, and ſeveral *Portugueſe*, then came into the boat, and made towards the admiral, to demand hoſtages, which were offered him; but the governor would not venture his perſon. The admiral then aſked him, why, after having ſent him refreſhments, and invited him on ſhore, he had ſo baſely detained his men, notwithſtanding the two nations of *Caſtille* and *Portugal* were at peace? He alſo offered to ſhew the governor his commiſſion, to convince him that he was employed in the ſervice of their Catholic majeſties: but the governor anſwered, "He knew nothing of them, "or their commiſſions, nor did he fear them." He likewiſe told the admiral, that what he had done was purſuant to the order of his *Portugueſe* majeſty; when the admiral replied, "That, if "his men and boat were not immediately reſtored, "he would take and carry away double the num-"ber of *Portugueſe* priſoners, into *Spain*." But, the next day, the *Portugueſe* governor ſent the boat, with two clergymen, a notary, and five ſeamen, to the admiral, who gave them ſecurity to come on board the caravel, where he ſhewed them his commiſſion; upon which, they returned, releaſed his men, and reſtored the boat; when the admiral underſtood, that the king of *Portugal* had ſent orders, to all places under his dominion, to ſecure the perſon of the admiral by any means in their power.

HAVING

HAVING recovered his men, and the weather being fit to ſail for *Spain*, he left the *Azores*, the 24th of *February*, and ſteered his courſe eaſt: but, on the 2d of *March*, he met with another terrible ſtorm; when they all caſt lots who ſhould go on a pilgrimage to *St. Mary de Cinta en Guelva*, and the lot fell upon the admiral. They drove with all their ſails furled, in the greateſt danger, till the 4th of *March*, when the admiral diſcovered the land and the rock of *Liſbon*, where he reſolved to put into harbour to avoid the ſtorm; being unable to continue at *Caſcais*, a town ſituated at the mouth of the river *Tagus*, 17 miles eaſt of *Liſbon*.

THE king of *Portugal* was then at *Valparaiſo*, to whom the admiral wrote a letter, ſignifying, "That their majeſties of *Spain*, his ſovereigns, "had given him orders not to avoid entering the "ports of *Portugal*, to get what he wanted for "his money." The admiral alſo deſired permiſſion to go up to *Liſbon*, for the better ſecurity of his ſhip; as likewiſe to ſatisfy his majeſty, that he came not from *Guinea*, but from the *Indies*. The maſter of a galeon went on board the admiral in an armed boat, and ordered him to go up with him, to give an account of himſelf before the officers of *Liſbon*: but *Columbus* anſwered, "That he was "admiral to their majeſties of *Spain*, and that it "was not incumbent upon him to give ſuch an ac-"count of himſelf; nor would he go out of his "ſhip, unleſs he was compelled by force." The *Portugueſe* maſter, then deſired that the admiral would condeſcend to ſhew him his commiſſion; which he readily produced: whereupon the maſter returned to the galeon, and reported what had

paſſed;

paſſed; when the captain went on board the caravel, with drums, trumpets, and hautboys; offering to ſerve *Columbus*, in whatever he ſhould command.

As ſoon as it was publickly known at *Liſbon*, that the admiral came from the *Indies*, and had ſome *Indians* in the ſhip, the citizens crouded on board to have the pleaſure of ſeeing ſo enterprizing a man, and ſo ſtrange a people; ſome of them applauding the glorious undertaking; while others reviled the miniſters of *Portugal*, whoſe avarice and incredulity had loſt their king and country the honour and advantage of the diſcovery.

The next day, the admiral received a letter from the king of *Portugal*, giving him an invitation to come to his palace of *Valparaiſo*; which the admiral was obliged to do, to avoid ſhewing any miſtruſt. The nobility, and officers of ſtate, were ordered to attend the admiral, and conduct him to the king, who received him with much honour, admitted him to ſit covered in his preſence, and expreſſed great ſatisfaction at the ſucceſs of his voyage. His majeſty then aſked him ſome particulars concerning his expedition; ſaying, he was of opinion, that, according to the articles ſtipulated with the kings of *Caſtille*, the conqueſt of the new diſcovered country belonged to the kings of *Portugal*, rather than to thoſe of *Caſtille*. To which the admiral replied, "He had not ſeen thoſe articles; nor knew any more, than that their Catholic majeſties had commanded him not to go to the gold mine, nor to *Guinea*; which had been proclaimed in all the ports of *Andaluſia*, before he ſet out upon his voyage." The king graciouſly anſwered,

"He

" He believed he wanted no vouchers in that par-
" ticular;" and then ordered the prior of *Crato*, who was the principal perſon attending his majeſty, to entertain the admiral. The next day, the king acquainted the admiral, that if he wanted any thing he ſhould have it: he then made him ſit down, and aſked many queſtions relating to the voyage, the new countries, the latitudes, the people, and other things about thoſe parts; expreſſing great concern for having loſt the good fortune of ſuch a diſcovery: and there were alſo ſome perſons about the king, who offered to kill the admiral, that what he had diſcovered might be concealed: but his majeſty diſdained ſo ignoble a thought, and abhorred ſo infamous an action. However, the king intimated to *Columbus*, he thought the diſcovery belonged to *Portugal*; becauſe the admiral had reſided moſt of his life in that kingdom. To which the admiral anſwered, that, as his majeſty would not accept of the overtures he had made him, he went out with a commiſſion from their Catholic majeſties.

ON the 11th of *March*, the admiral took leave of the king, who had ordered ſeveral of his nobility to attend him to *Liſbon*. They conducted him through *Villa Franca*, where the queen was in the monaſtery of St. *Anthony*, whoſe hand *Columbus* had the honour to kiſs, and gave her an account of his voyage. Upon his departure from the queen, the king ſent a meſſenger to inform him, that if he was inclined to go into *Caſtille* by land, he would order him to be properly attended, find him carriages, and every thing elſe he had an occaſion for in his journey. But the admiral choſe to return by

ſea,

ſea, and, on the 13th of *March*, ſet ſail from the *Tagus*. On the 15th, he arrived at *Palos* in *Andaluſia*, from whence he had ſet out on his enterprize on the 3d of *Auguſt*, the year before: ſo that he ſpent ſeven months and thirteen days upon the expedition.

THE admiral was informed, on his arrival at *Palos*, that their Catholic majeſties were at *Barcelona*, the capital of *Catalonia*: upon which, he ſeemed inclined to go to them by ſea in his caravel. However, he was prevailed on to land at *Palos*, where the inhabitants received him with a ſolemn proceſſion, and thankſgiving, for his return; all admiring ſo great an action, which they never imagined the admiral would have been able to perform.

THE admiral received information, that *Martin Alonſo Pinzon*, the captain of his other ſhip, was arrived in *Galicia*, and had given notice of his arrival to the court of *Spain*; propoſing to have brought the firſt intelligence of the important diſcovery, whereby a new world was to be made known, for the aggrandizement of the old; and particularly for the advantage of the *Spaniſh* nation: but their Catholic majeſties ſent him orders to attend on the admiral; which gave *Pinzon* ſuch mortification, that he retired in diſcontent to *Palos*, where he ſoon afterwards died with grief and vexation.

THE admiral, having altered his former reſolution of going by ſea to *Barcelona*, ſent advice of his arrival to their Catholic majeſties, with a ſummary account of what had happened to him, during his voyage; reſerving a more ample relation to be given in perſon. Their majeſties returned him a gracious anſwer, purporting, that they rejoiced at his

his ſafe return, and the ſucceſs of his enterprize; ordering him to be expeditious in coming to *Barcelona*, that a conference might be held concerning this great diſcovery, and to conſult of the moſt convenient means for advancing what had been ſo happily begun. The ſuperſcription of the letter was, "to Don *Chriſtopher Columbus*, "our admiral of the ocean, vice-roy and gover-"nor of the iſlands, that have been diſcovered "in the *Indies*:" for it was then imagined that *America* lay contiguous to the *Eaſt Indies*. Their Catholic majeſties alſo ordered *Columbus* to conſider, whether it was proper to leave any orders at *Seville*, before he came to *Barcelona*: and, in his anſwer, he ſent a memorial of the ſhips, men, ammunition, and proviſions that were proper to return to the *Indies*: after which, he ſet out for *Barcelona*, with ſeven *Indians*; carrying with him ſome party-coloured parrots, and other things, which had never before been ſeen in *Europe*.

THE joy of their Catholic majeſties was inexpreſſible, the ſatisfaction of the whole court was unparalleled, and the admiration of the people was great, to ſee ſo important a diſcovery thus happily effected, when the generality of men entertained no manner of hopes about the expedition. As the admiral drew near the city of *Barcelona*, the whole court went out to meet him, the city was crouded with ſpectators, their majeſties ordered their throne to be placed in public, and received the admiral with all the honours due to a ſovereign prince. He was attended by a multitude of gentlemen; and, as he approached the throne, the king ſtood up, gave him his hand to kiſs, bade him riſe, ordered a chair to be brought, and de-

ſired

ſired him to ſit down in the royal preſence, where he gave him a particular account of his voyage and diſcovery; as alſo, of the hopes he conceived of finding greater countries: nor, was it eaſy to determine, whether their majeſties had more ſatisfaction in hearing of theſe diſcoveries, or the admiral in relating them.

As the articles concluded with the admiral, were only in the form of a contract, which he had performed, their majeſties ratified the agreement concluded at *Santa-Fe*; and, by their charters, appointed *Columbus*, admiral, vice-roy, and governor-general of all the iſlands, and continent to the weſtward of the *Azores*, and the *Cape Verd* iſlands, which he already had diſcovered, or ſhould diſcover and conquer, with power of appointing all officers, both civil and military. Their majeſties alſo gave him the royal arms of *Caſtile* and *Leon*, to bear together with thoſe of his family, with other additions, expreſſing his difficult and wonderful diſcovery. The king always had the admiral by his ſide, as he went along the city of *Barcelona*, and the grandees contended who ſhould give him the moſt honourable reception at their tables; all which was due to the merit of this illuſtrious man, by whoſe enterprizing genius the *Spaniſh* monarchy became the moſt formidable of any in *Europe*, till their opulence in *America* damped all the ſpirit of induſtry among the *Spaniards*; which gave an opportunity to other nations, to ſtrike out a grand and new tract of commerce, whereby they enriched themſelves at the expence of *Spain*, whom they drained of her treaſures, in the purchaſe of their commodities.

THEIR Catholic majeſties acquainted pope *Alexander* VIth, with the particulars of this diſcovery of a new world; informing him, that it had been made without encroaching on the crown of *Portugal*; and deſiring his holineſs to grant to the kings of *Caſtile* and *Leon*, the lands already diſcovered, or that ſhould be diſcovered, and to expedite his bulls accordingly. The pope readily granted this requeſt, and gave their Catholic majeſties the ſovereign dominion of the *Indies*, with ſupreme juriſdiction over all that hemiſphere; for which purpoſe, a bull was paſſed, with the conſent and approbation of the college of cardinals, on the 2d of *May* 1493, containing the ſame formalities, prerogatives, and powers, which had been before granted to the kings of *Portugal*, in relation to *Africa*, and the *Eaſt-Indies*. Beſides, by another bull of the 3d of *May*, the pope granted their Catholic majeſties all the iſlands and continents abroad, diſcovered, or that ſhould be diſcovered, drawing a line from pole to pole, at the diſtance of a hundred leagues to the weſtward of the *Azores*, and the *Cape Verd* iſlands; and that all which ſhould be diſcovered beyond that line to the weſt, or ſouth, ſhould appertain to the navigation and diſcovery of the kings of *Caſtile* and *Leon*, if they were not in the poſſeſſion of any chriſtian prince before *Chriſtmas-day*; and that no perſon ſhould paſs into thoſe parts, under penalties and cenſures.

IN the mean time, the neceſſary preparations were made for ſending the admiral out on another voyage. The *Indians* he had brought with him were baptized; the king, and his ſon prince *John*, being godfathers; after which, the admiral was ordered

ordered to expedite his departure, and to endeavour, as ſoon as poſſible, to diſcover whether *Cuba*, which he had called *Juana*, was a continent or an iſland. *Columbus* took leave of their majeſties, and the whole court attended him out of the gates of *Barcelona*. When he came to *Seville*, he found that ſeventeen ſail of ſhips were fitted out, well furniſhed for the voyage, with great ſtores of proviſion, ammunition, artillery, corn, ſeeds, horſes, and mares; with tools to work the gold mines, and great quantities of merchandize to barter, as alſo for the admiral to give to whom he thought proper. The news of this diſcovery, and of the gold which was to be found, incited one thouſand five hundred men to undertake this ſecond expedition with the admiral; ſeveral of whom were gentlemen, many were handicrafts of different trades, and a great number were labouring people to dig and cleanſe the gold.

THEIR majeſties, by a new commiſſion, appointed the admiral commander in chief of the fleet, and captain-general in the *Indies*: *Anthony de Torres*, was to command the ſhips that ſhould return: *Francis de Penaloza*, and *Alonſo de Vallejo*, were made commanders of the land forces: *Bernal Diaz de Piſa*, was made accomptant of the *Indies*; and *James Marques* inſpector: with whom ſeveral prieſts were ſent for the converſion of the *Indians* to chriſtianity, who had particular orders to draw them over to religion, by making them preſents, and treating them with the utmoſt tenderneſs. Beſides, the whole body of theſe adventurers ſeverally took a ſolemn oath, to be obedient to their majeſties,

and to the admiral, in their names, as alſo to his juſtice, and to be careful of the royal revenue.

As it was apprehended that the king of *Portugal* had ſome intention of interrupting the admiral in his voyage, the fleet was put into a ſtronger condition of defence by an additional ſupply of arms. The king ſtill promiſed the admiral great rewards; directing him, before his departure, to cauſe a ſea-chart to be drawn, with the rhumbs, and other particulars, requiſite for the voyage to the *Indies*, which he deſired might be undertaken immediately, as every thing was ready, and as the further diſcovery daily appeared to be of greater conſequence than was at firſt imagined. This fleet was aſſembled at *Cadiz*, where the admiral was received on board with all the demonſtrations of joy, that a people, full of the moſt ſanguine expectations, could expreſs at the appearance of a man, whoſe expedition was to be the foundation of an inexhauſtible fund of wealth to the *Spaniſh* nation in general, and more particularly to the citizens of *Cadiz*.

THE admiral had ſeveral trees and plants carried on board; as alſo, wheat, barley, oats, rye, and all kinds of ſeeds, ſome cows, lime, bricks, and all ſorts of materials for building and planting. The men being all embarked, the whole fleet ſet ſail from the bay of *Cadiz*, on the 25th of *September*, 1493, with orders to ſteer ſouth-weſt for the *Canaries*, where they arrived on the 2d of *October*, and on the 5th anchored at *Gomera*. The fleet continued two days at this iſland, taking in wood and water; as alſo calves, goats, ſheep, and ſwine; from which, thoſe that were afterwards found in ſeveral parts of *America*, had their origin.

Each

Each pilot had ſealed inſtructions given him how to ſteer his courſe to the dominions of king *Guacanagari*; which they were not to open, unleſs they were ſeparated from the admiral by ſtreſs of weather; becauſe he would not have them know that courſe without ſuch neceſſity, for fear it ſhould be communicated to the king of *Portugal*, who was deſirous of making ſome acquiſition in the new diſcovered regions, which he afterwards obtained in an accidental manner.

His *Portugueze* majeſty was ſo much concerned that he had rejected the propoſals of *Columbus*, and thereby deprived himſelf of the benefit of a new empire, that he was unable to conceal his inquietude: therefore, he pretended, that the ſame belonged to him, and ordered a fleet to be fitted out, to take poſſeſſion of thoſe new countries, before *Columbus* undertook his ſecond voyage. In the mean time, he ſent an ambaſſador to their Catholic majeſties, to inform them, "How well he had treated the "admiral at *Liſbon*, and how much he was re-"joiced at the ſucceſs of his expedition: as alſo, "that ſince countries were diſcovered which be-"longed to him, he confided, that they would "deal as honourably and amicably towards him, "as he would towards them upon the ſame occa-"ſion: therefore, as he underſtood they intended "to continue the diſcovery, from the *Canaries* di-"rectly weſt, without turning to the ſouthward, "he requeſted them to command the admiral to "obſerve that order; and he would direct his "ſhips, when they went upon any diſcovery, to "incline as little as poſſible to the northward." Their Catholic majeſties alſo ſent an ambaſſador to

Liſbon, to deſire that the king of *Portugal* would reſtrain his ſubjects from going, or ſending, to the new diſcovered countries, becauſe they belonged to the crown of *Spain*. But his *Portugueze* majeſty endeavoured to deceive the *Spaniſh* ambaſſador, by pretending that the fleet intended to follow *Columbus*, was deſtined for an expedition againſt the *Moors* in *Africa*: he alſo preferred a complaint at the court of *Rome*, againſt their Catholic majeſties, alledging, that they had prevented the progreſs of his diſcoveries; and excepted againſt the bulls granted there by his holineſs; aſſerting, that they broke in upon his limits, and that it was requiſite to ſet boundaries to prevent the troubles which might otherwiſe happen between the ſubjects of the two crowns. The pope, for the prevention of any occaſion of complaints, marked out what belonged to each of them, ordering the line to be drawn from pole to pole; and again, granted to the kings of *Caſtile*, all that ſhould be conquered in the iſlands to the eaſt, weſt, and ſouth, not in the poſſeſſion of any other prince; for which purpoſe, another bull was paſſed on the 26th of *September*.

HOWEVER, the king of *Portugal* was ſtill diſſatisfied, pretending that he was injured, becauſe the line of partition ought to be drawn farther on to the weſtward. He then propoſed a method to divide the ocean between the two crowns, by a line drawn directly from the *Canary* iſlands to the weſtward; that all the ſeas, iſlands, and countries from that ſtrait line to the northward, ſhould belong to their Catholic majeſties, except the iſlands then in the poſſeſſion of the king of *Portugal*: and that all the ſeas, iſlands,

iſlands, and continents, from that land to the ſouth-war, dſhould belong to *Portugal*, except the *Canary* iſlands, which belonged to the crown of *Caſtile*. To which their Catholic majeſties anſwered, that what they propoſed was of little ſignification; becauſe nothing belonged to the king of *Portugal*, but what they had mentioned. However, commiſſioners were appointed to adjuſt this difference, either by ſetting boundaries north and ſouth, or from eaſt to weſt, or ſuch other limits as they ſhould think proper, either by ſea or land: who, on the 7th of *June* 1493, came to an agreement, "That "the line for ſettling the boundaries ſhould be "drawn two hundred and ſeventy leagues farther "than that mentioned in the papal bull, from the "*Cape Verd* iſlands weſtward. That all beyond "that meridian weſtward, ſhould belong to the "kings of *Caſtile*; and all to the eaſtward ſhould "appertain to the navigations, conqueſts, and "diſcovery of the kings of *Portugal*; but that "their Catholic majeſties might freely ſail through "the ſeas belonging to his *Portugueze* majeſty, on "condition of holding a direct courſe." This agreement was ratified by their Catholic and *Portugueze* majeſties; but it was never carried into execution, by making the partition; nor was it of any conſequence, as other nations would not acquieſce in ſuch an excluſion to all other ſtates, and ſoon convinced both the *Spaniards* and *Portugueze*, that they had an equal right to make diſcoveries, and eſtabliſh ſettlements in both the *Indies*.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

The ſecond voyage of Chriſtopher Columbus *to the* Weſt-Indies: *with his diſcovery of* Dominica, *and ſome other of the* Caribbee-Iſlands; *as alſo of the* Virgin-Iſlands, *and* Porto Rico. *His return to* Hiſpaniola; *and the tranſactions there. His diſcovery of* Jamaica; *and his return to* Spain, *to anſwer ſome complaints exhibited againſt him to their Catholic majeſties: with the reception which they gave him, and the account which he gave them of the natives of* Hiſpaniola. *How he vindicated himſelf; and undertook a third voyage to diſcover the continent of* America: *his diſcoveries there, and return to* Hiſpaniola. — *A ſhort account of the voyage, undertaken by* Alonſo de Ojeda, *and* Americus Veſputius; *as alſo by* Peter Alonſo Nino, Vincent Yanez Pinzon, *and* James de Lepe, *for the farther diſcovery of the continent of* America. — *In what manner* Columbus *was recalled from his government of* Hiſpaniola, *and ſent a priſoner to* Spain. *How he was employed on a fourth expedition: with his farther diſcoveries on the continent; and what diſtreſſes he met with at* Jamaica. *His arrival at* Hiſpaniola; *and in what condition he found the iſland. His return to* Spain; *where the neglect ſhewn him at court, occaſioned his death at* Valladolid. *His character, and epitaph.*

WHILE the courts of *Spain* and *Portugal* were contending about theſe limits, the admiral, *Columbus*, was proceeding on his ſecond voyage to the new diſcovered countries. He departed from

from the *Canaries*, on the 7th of *October*, 1493; and, after ſailing between 750 and 800 leagues, according to their reckoning, diſcovered land on the 3d of *November*, which proved to be one of the *Caribbee-Iſlands*. The admiral called this iſland *Dominica*, as it was diſcovered on *Sunday*, which in the *Spaniſh* language is called *Domingo*. Soon after, they ſaw ſeveral other iſlands; and, as there was no convenient harbour in *Dominica*, the admiral ſailed to another iſland, which he called *Marigalante*, after the name of his ſhip. He landed, and formally took poſſeſſion of this iſland for their Catholic majeſties; and then ſtruck over to another, to which he gave the name of *St. Mary of Guadalupe*, at the requeſt of ſome prieſts who belonged to a monaſtery of that name in *Spain*.

The admiral ſent his boats aſhore on the iſland of *Guadalupe*; but, though there were ſeveral houſes, the inhabitants fled to the mountains: however, the *Spaniards* took two *Indian* youths, and ſix women, who made them underſtand, by ſigns, that there was a continent thereabouts, and many iſlands which they diſtinguiſhed by their particular names; and, being aſked for *Hiſpaniola*, which in their language was called *Ayti*, they pointed towards that part where it lay. They alſo ſignified, that they belonged to the iſland of *Borriquen*, which was afterwards called *Porto Rico*; and intimated to the *Spaniards*, that the natives of *Guadalupe* were *Caribbees*, or *Canibals*. The admiral alſo went aſhore, where he ſaw many hawks, haggards, kites, herons, daws, pigeons, turtles, geeſe, nightingales, and partridges: he alſo found great quantities of cotton in ſome of the houſes,

with

with looms, in which the natives wove it; and ſeveral human heads, with baſkets full of human bones, were hung up about theſe houſes, which were better furniſhed with proviſions, than thoſe he had diſcovered in the firſt voyage. But there is little probability that the natives of theſe iſlands were *Canibals*, or fond of devouring human fleſh; notwithſtanding that, from this opinion, theſe iſlands were afterwards called the *Caribbees*: they might, indeed, ſacrifice ſome of their priſoners to their idols; which cuſtom is not only ſtill continued among the independant *Indian* nations of *America*, but is alſo practiſed in ſeveral kingdoms of *Africa*, as it formerly was by many *European* nations, and particularly by the ancient *Saxons*, as well as the primitive *Britons*.

ON the 10th of *November*, as the admiral was coaſting along the iſland of *Guadalupe*, towards the north-weſt, in ſearch of *Hiſpaniola*, he diſcovered a very high iſland, which he called *Montſerat*; becauſe it appeared like the mountain of *Montſerat* in *Catalonia*, in *Spain*. He next came to a very round iſland, that looked to be inacceſſible; for which reaſon he called it *Santa Maria la Redonda*, or *St. Mary the Round*. He named another iſland *Santa Maria la Antigua*: ſeveral others appeared to the northward, and he anchored in one which he called *St. Martin*. He afterwards diſcovered a great number of iſlands, lying contiguous together; the greateſt of which he called *St. Urſula*; and the others, the *Eleven Thouſand Virgins*. He then arrived at the iſland of *Borriquen*, to which he gave the name of *St. John Baptiſt*, and anchored in a bay, on the weſt ſide of it, where he met with ſe-

veral

veral houſes pleaſantly ſituated, built with timber and thatched, with a ſquare in the middle of them, and the walls of canes interwoven with greens artificially wrought; but the inhabitants were fled up the country. On the 22d of *November*, the admiral arrived at *Hiſpaniola*, and landed one of the *Indians* he had brought back from *Spain*, that he might inform his countrymen what great things he had ſeen among the *Spaniards*, and induce them to be their friends: on the 27th, the fleet came to an anchor at the mouth of the port of *Navidad*, or the *Nativity*; when ſome *Indians* came on board the admiral, and acquainted him that the *Spaniards* he had left behind him in the fort were all dead, which gave him great uneaſineſs.

THE admiral ſaw the fort in ruins, and the *Indians* at firſt ſecreted themſelves: but the brother of king *Guacanagari*, and ſome *Indians*, who had learnt a little *Spaniſh*, came to the admiral, and informed him, that the *Spaniards* he had left behind him, ſoon diſagreed among themſelves, and diſobeyed their commander; going about in an inſolent manner to take what women and gold they pleaſed from the *Indians*: that eleven of them went into that part of the country which was governed by the cazique *Caunabo*, who was lord of the mines, and put all thoſe *Spaniards* to death; after which, he went and demoliſhed the fort, where he drove ſix *Spaniards* into the ſea, who were drowned, and the reſt were diſperſed over the country: as alſo that *Guacanagari* come to the aſſiſtance of the *Spaniards*, and received ſome wounds, from which he was not recovered.

THE admiral went to the town where *Guacanagari*

gari reſided, who convinced him that he had aſſiſted the *Spaniards*, by ſhewing him his wounds, which were made by *Indian* weapons; and he corroborated what his brother had told the admiral, to whom he preſented eight hundred ſmall beads made of ſtone, one hundred of gold, a crown of the ſame metal, and a large quantity of gold duſt: for which the admiral made a return to the king, by giving him ſome glaſs trinkets, knives, ſciſſars, hawks-bells, pins, needles, and little looking-glaſſes.

THE admiral obſerved, that this part of the country was very low land, and had no ſtone, or other materials for building, though it had good harbours, and freſh water: he therefore reſolved to turn back along the coaſt to the eaſtward, to find out a more convenient place for erecting a town, and eſtabliſhing a ſettlement. Adjacent to a mountain, which he had named *Monte Chriſto*, he found a commodious harbour near the mouth of a river; and, perceiving there was a rock which would form a good natural fortification, he diſembarked his men, and laid out the plan of a town, for which there were ſuch proper neceſſaries of lime and ſtone, that it was ſoon built; being called *Iſabella*, in honour of the queen of *Spain*.

THE admiral, being deſirous of diſcovering the gold mines, ſent fifteen men, under the command of *Alonſo de Ojeda*, to examine the country; who travelled as far as the mines of *Cibao*, about fifty miles diſtant from the new town of *Iſabella*; and returned with ſuch ſpecimens as he thought ſufficient to prove the great plenty of that metal; which gave great ſatisfaction to the admiral and his people. In the mean time, the admiral ſent twelve of the

ſhips

ſhips back again to *Spain*, under the command of *Anthony de Torres*, with all the gold he was able to get for their Catholic majeſties; reſerving for himſelf, in the *Indies*, two large ſhips and three caravels.

THE adventurers flattered themſelves, that they ſhould immediately come into the poſſeſſion of mountains of gold: but, as they found it would be attended with much labour and difficulty, ſome of them repented of undertaking the voyage, and entered into a conſpiracy againſt the admiral, to ſeize the remaining five ſhips, and return to *Spain*. *Bernal Diaz de Piſa*, accomptant of the *Indies*, was the chief of theſe conſpirators: but the admiral diſcovered the plot, ordered *Piſa* to be ſent home on board one of the ſhips, and puniſhed the reſt of the mutineers: after which, he ordered the great guns, ammunition, and naval ſtores belonging to the four ſhips, to be all brought on board his own ſhip, and placed under the guard of ſuch perſons in whom he could moſt confide.

THE admiral then ſet out for the country of *Cibao*, with a ſtrong party of men; leaving his brother *James Columbus*, to command in his abſence at *Iſabella*. The admiral marched his men through ſeveral towns in military order; which ſtruck a great impreſſion upon the *Indians*, who were aſtoniſhed to ſee the horſes and mules. The *Spaniards* entered the country of *Cibao*, which they found full of high mountains, with a great number of rivers and brooks, where they got conſiderable quantities of gold, but chiefly in ſmall grains. The *Indians* came out to receive the admiral; bringing him proviſions, and gold duſt, when

when they ſaw it was ſo acceptable among the *Spaniards*; who alſo diſcovered ſeveral mines of gold, one of fine blue, and another of amber. But, as the country was bad for travelling, the admiral erected a fort, which he called *St. Thomas*, on an eminence, almoſt ſurrounded by the river *Xanique*; where he left a garriſon of fifty-ſix men, under the command of *Pedro Margarite*, for the reduction of the province; and returned to *Iſabella* on the 29th of *March*. The admiral found many of his men dead at *Iſabella*, and the reſt in a very declining condition; occaſioned by the heat, and dampneſs of the country, which was rendered more intolerable by a ſcarcity of proviſions. This calamity was increaſed by advice from *St. Thomas* that the *Indians* had abandoned their towns; and that the cazique *Caunabo* was making preparations to attack the fort: upon which the admiral immediately ſent ſixty of the moſt healthy men, to reinforce the garriſon, who were ſoon followed by all the others, except the mechanics, commanded by *Alonſo de Ojeda*; the whole amounting to four hundred men. *Ojeda* took ſome *Indians* priſoners; and the reſt were ſo much afraid of the *Spaniards*, that one horſeman drove above four hundred *Indians* before him; though they would venture to engage any *Spaniard* on foot.

ON the ſuppreſſion of the troubles which were apprehended in *Hiſpaniola*, the admiral was determined to go upon new diſcoveries. After appointing a council of his principal officers, in which his brother *James* was preſident; and having given proper directions for the ſecurity of the iſland, he ſailed to the weſtward, on the 24th of *April*, with one

one ſhip, and two caravels; for the more particular diſcovery of *Cuba*; becauſe it was not yet certainly known, whether it was an iſland, or a part of ſome continent. He diſcovered ſeveral excellent harbours, and many rivers, on the coaſt of *Cuba*; from the ſouth ſide of which he obſerved the iſland of *Jamaica*, and arrived there on the 14th of *May*; when a great multitude of *Indians* reſorted to the ſhips, in their canoes: but, when the admiral ſent out his boats to ſound, and find out ſome harbour, many armed canoes came out to prevent the *Spaniards* from landing: upon which the admiral returned to *Cuba*, where he met with ſuch bad weather, and ſo many ſhoals, that he was obliged to quit his diſcovery, and return to *Hiſpaniola*, where he arrived on the 29th of *September*; after having ſailed above three hundred leagues, and being in great want of proviſions; though well aſſured that *Cuba* was a large iſland.

On his return to *Hiſpaniola*, the admiral received the agreeable intelligence, that his brother, *Bartholomew Columbus*, was arrived there; who informed him of his tranſactions in *England*, and that their Catholic majeſties had ſent him over with three ſhips, laden with proviſions. The admiral gave his brother *Bartholomew* the title of adelantado, or lord lieutenant; which their Catholic majeſties very much reſented, ſaying, that it belonged only to them to confer that title; though ſome years after they confirmed what the admiral had done.

However, the joy which the admiral received on the arrival of his brother, was greatly interrupted, by finding the iſland in a general confuſion: for Don *Pedro Margarite*, had permitted the

the ſoldiers to live without any order or diſcipline among the *Indians*, whom they continually plundered; and, fearing to be puniſhed for diſobeying the orders of the council, he returned to *Spain*, with ſeveral of his party, in the three ſhips brought by *Bartholomew Columbus*. On the departure of that commander, the *Spaniſh* ſoldiers licentiouſly diſperſed themſelves about the country, where ſeveral of them were killed by the *Indians*; and ſuch an ill report was ſpread of their behaviour, that they were hated by *Guarinoex*, *Caunabo*, *Behechico*, and *Higuanama*, the four principal kings of the iſland, and their ſubjects, who were impatient to expel the *Spaniards* out of their country: though *Guacanagari* ſtill continued to treat them with great friendſhip and affection.

THE admiral aſſembled his ſcattered troops, with a reſolution of chaſtiſing the *Indians*; in which *Guacanagari* offered him his aſſiſtance. *Caunabo*, king of *Maguana*, was the moſt potent and valiant prince upon the iſland; which made the admiral principally aim at making him his priſoner: but, as this could not be readily effected by force, he thought of ſubduing him by policy. Accordingly, he ſent *Alonſo de Ojeda*, with only nine *Spaniards*, under the pretence of carrying a preſent to *Caunabo*. On the arrival of *Ojeda* in the province of *Maguana*, which was about 160 miles from *Iſabella*, the *Indians* were in a conſternation to ſee him on horſeback; believing that the man and horſe were only one animal. *Caunabo* was told that the *Spaniards* had brought him a preſent from the admiral; when *Ojeda* was introduced to him, kiſſed his hand, and ſhewed him the preſent; which were

fetters,

fetters, bright and well poliſhed, that looked like ſilver. *Ojeda* told *Caunabo*, that the kings of *Spain* wore ſuch ornaments, becauſe they came from heaven: that they put them on at feſtivals; and that *Caunabo* would look like the kings of *Spain* if he wore them in the ſame manner, and returned from bathing on horſeback. The *Indian* prince had no ſuſpicion that ſo ſmall a number of men ſhould have any deſign upon him, in a place where he was ſo formidable by the multitude of his ſubjects; and therefore went to bathe himſelf in a river, attended with *Ojeda*, and a few of his own ſervants. After refreſhing himſelf in the water, he ordered his attendants to keep at a diſtance; when the *Spaniards* ſet him on horſeback behind *Ojeda*, put on the fetters and hand-cuffs, and *Ojeda* rode off, with the *Spaniards* about the horſe, till they loſt ſight of the *Indians*. They then bound him with cords, and carried him to *Iſabella*, where they delivered him to the admiral, who embarked him, with ſeveral other *Indians*, for *Spain*; but they were ſhipwrecked, and all of them periſhed in the paſſage.

The ſeizing of *Caunabo*, gave the admiral a proſpect of great inquietude; becauſe the brothers of that prince were highly irritated at ſuch an unexpected proceedure, and were determined to make war upon the *Spaniards*, with the utmoſt of their abilities. They aſſembled about one hundred thouſand men together: but the admiral took the field with two hundred foot, twenty horſe, and twenty wolf dogs; which came up with, and entirely routed the *Indians*; a great number of whom were ſlain, many taken priſoners, and ſome of them

ſent to *Spain*: for what were the unarmed, and undiſciplined multitude of naked *Indians*, to a well formed troop of *Spaniards*, armed with weapons unknown and horrible to this innocent people, who dreaded the ſight of a horſe, and were mangled to pieces by the dogs? The admiral continued ranging about the iſland nine or ten months, and ſeverely puniſhing thoſe who made any reſiſtance; though the reſiſtance was only the law of nature, exerted againſt the rapacity of foreign invaders. The brothers of *Caunabo* had ſeveral other encounters with the *Spaniards*: but, conſcious that their power was ineffectual, they at laſt ſubmitted to the admiral, who impoſed a tribute upon all the inhabitants of the iſland, and exacted obedience from them to their Catholic majeſties. The inhabitants of the province of *Cibao* were each of them to pay a ſmall hawks-bell full of gold every quarter of a year; and every other perſon was to pay a quarter of a hundred weight of cotton: but this tribute was too heavy to be paid; which made ſeveral *Indians* fly to the mountains, or eſcape into the other provinces; ſo that above one third of the natives periſhed with hunger, and fatigue.

THE return of *Anthony de Torres*, with the twelve ſhips, into *Spain*, gave infinite ſatisfaction to their Catholic majeſties, who ſent a letter to *Columbus*, again repeating their thanks for his good ſervices, promiſing to promote his intereſt to the utmoſt of their power; becauſe every thing he had advanced was now evidently demonſtrated: they alſo deſired he would give them an explicit account of all his later diſcoveries; and, that they might frequently hear from him, they acquainted him

that

that a ſhip ſhould be ſent from *Spain* every month, and one return from the *Indies*, as the affair with *Portugal* was adjuſted: but deſired he would be preſent at drawing the line of partition, or ſend his brother *Bartholomew* with draughts, and his opinion what ought to be done in ſo difficult a matter.

However, Don *Pedro Margarite*, and ſome others who had deſerted the admiral, combined together in alledging many things prejudicial to his character, on their arrival in *Spain*; which occaſioned their Catholic majeſties to ſend *John Aguado*, one of the grooms of the bed-chamber, to *Hiſpaniola*, to give an account of the ſituation of affairs in the iſland. *Aguado* arrived at *Hiſpaniola*, in *October* 1495, while the admiral was carrying on the war againſt the brothers of *Caunabo*: but, having information that *Aguado* began to aſſume too much authority, he came to *Iſabella*; where he found that his people were in great diſtreſs for proviſions, and other neceſſaries; which occaſioned them, as well as the tributary *Indians*, to make their complaint to *Aguado*, who behaved with ſuch preſumption to the admiral, that he found it neceſſary to return to *Spain*, with a view of vindicating himſelf before their Catholic majeſties, and to give them his opinion about the partition that was to be made of the ocean between the two crowns of *Caſtile* and *Portugal*. The admiral erected the forts of *Magdalen*, *St. Catharine*, and *Eſperanza*, for the protection and ſecurity of the iſland: he then appointed his brother *Bartholomew Columbus* lieutenant-governor, and ſet ſail on the 10th of *March* 1496, in one of the caravals, being accompanied by *Aguado* in another, and both of them

carried over two hundred and twenty men, who were deſirous of returning to *Spain*. The contrary winds, and the currents, obliged the admiral to make for the eaſtward; ſo that it was the 10th of *April*, before he could arrive at the *Caribbee* iſlands, when he ſupplied himſelf with proviſions at *Guadalupe*. On the 20th of *April*, he continued his voyage: but, being then unacquainted with the nature of the trade-winds, which conſtantly ſit from the north-eaſt, or thereabouts, near the tropic of *Cancer*, he made it the 19th of *June*, before he came upon the coaſt of *Spain*, when he entered the bay of *Cadiz*; having ſpent three months in the voyage: though if he had run up at leaſt to thirty degrees of latitude, on his departure from *Hiſpaniola*, he would have met with the trade-winds, which might have carried him to *Spain*, in the ſame time as he ſpent in getting to the *Caribbees*.

THE admiral repaired immediately to the court, which was then at *Burgos*, the capital of old *Caſtile*; where he met with a gracious reception from their majeſties; though they ſignified to him, that he ought to have uſed leſs ſeverity. He acquainted them with the condition of the iſland; as alſo, with the diſcovery of *Cuba*, and the mines, preſenting them with ſome gold plate, and gold duſt, among which, there were ſome grains as big as peas, others like beans, and ſome like walnuts.

THE admiral, very ſatisfactorily, cleared up his character and conduct, againſt all the informations that had been made againſt him by his enemies. He then aſſured their majeſties, that he could diſcover another continent adjacent to his other diſcoveries,

coveries, and demanded ſix ſhips for the expedition: but he was two years before he could procure them; becauſe he had not brought a ſufficient quantity of gold to ſatisfy the great expectations of his employers. However, it was agreed, by the advice of the admiral, that three hundred and thirty men ſhould be always kept on the royal pay at *Hiſpaniola*. Their majeſties likewiſe granted to all thoſe who would voluntarily ſettle there, a third part of all the gold they ſhould get out of the mines; and that they ſhould pay only a tenth of all other things to the crown. The admiral alſo obtained permiſſion to tranſport all criminals into the *Indies*, to ſerve there for a certain number of years: but this was a very imprudent ſtep; becauſe infant colonies ſhould be ſupported by a better foundation than the refuſe of mankind. Their majeſties empowered the admiral to make a diviſion of the lands in *Hiſpaniola*, among the coloniſts; reſerving to themſelves all the gold, ſilver, and other metals. They alſo promiſed to ſupply the admiral with ſix millions of maravedies, or 2100*l.* ſterling, for the intended expedition to diſcover the continent, and victualling the fleet; but it was a long time before he received the money.

In the account which the admiral gave to their majeſties of the natives of *Hiſpaniola*, he informed them, that all their kings, or caziques, had a houſe at ſome diſtance from their towns, where there were ſome uncommon images made of ſtone, or wood, and ſometimes painted; which they called *Cemis*, and honoured them with the names of their anceſtors. The people paid great adoration to theſe images; praying to ſome for health, and to others for plenty, ſeaſonable weather, or proſperous enter-

prizes: yet, they conſidered them only as inferior deities, having much greater veneration for the ſun. Each cazique was a kind of chief prieſt, as well as ſovereign of his people, whom they kept in ſubjection by many religious impoſtures. Moſt of the caziques had alſo three ſtones, to which they paid much devotion; the one they held good for the growth of the land, another for the eaſy delivery of women with child, and the third for rain or ſun-ſhine, according as they had occaſion. When a cazique died, he was opened and dried by the fire, for the preſervation of his body; which was interred in a cave, together with his arms, and proviſion; the wife who bore him the greateſt affection, being alſo ſhut up with the corps till ſhe died. It was cuſtomary to ſtrangle all people at the point of death: but they only preſerved the heads of the common ſort. They were of opinion, that after death they went to a valley, which every great cazique believed was in his own dominions; where they imagined they ſhould find their parents and predeceſſors, be bleſt with the moſt beautiful wives, the moſt delicate food, and enjoy an eternal ſcene of uninterrupted pleaſures. They thought their idols were immortal, and that the dead appeared to the living; on which account every *Indian* was afraid to go any where alone at the approach of night. Their phyſicians pretended to effect cures by the aſſiſtance of demons. The men were addicted to ſodomy, which was abhorred by the women, who were continent with the natives, but lewd with the *Spaniards*. Mothers, ſiſters, and daughters were excepted: but the men had no regard to any other degrees of conſanguinity.

DURING

DURING the reſidence of the admiral in *Spain*, his brother *Bartholomew* had great troubles to encounter with in *Hiſpaniola*: but their Catholic majeſties confirmed the title of *Adelantado*, which had been conferred on him by his brother. The death of his *Portugueze* majeſty, and of the infant Don *John* of *Spain*, with ſome other accidents, deferred the departure of *Columbus*, on his third voyage, to diſcover new lands, till the 30th of *May*, 1498, when he ſet ſail from St. *Lucar*, the port town of *Seville*, with ſix ſhips; having been detained almoſt two years in *Spain*.

THE admiral received intelligence that a *Portugueze* fleet lay in wait for him at *Cape St. Vincent*; upon which, he ſailed directly to the *Madeiras*, and afterwards to the *Canaries*; from whence he ſent three of his ſhips laden with proviſions to *Hiſpaniola*, and then proceeded himſelf towards the *Cape Verd* iſlands. He intended, in the name of the moſt Holy Trinity, as he was always uſed to ſay, to ſail to the ſouthward, till he came under the line; and to proceed to the weſtward, till *Hiſpaniola* bore north-weſt from him; for he wanted to ſee what iſlands or continent were in that part; it being his own opinion no man had ever ſailed that courſe, and that the ſea there was entirely unknown: in which conjecture he was very right; and by the ſame courſe *Brazil* was afterwards accidentally diſcovered by the *Portugueze*. King *John* of *Portugal* had affirmed, there was a continent to the ſouthward; and *Columbus* was determined to try whether he was right or wrong in ſuch an aſſertion: beſides, by holding ſuch a courſe, the admiral deſigned to find out the truth of what the *Indians* of

Hiſpaniola reported; which was, that a black people, from the ſouth and ſouth-weſt, had come to that iſland, who had the heads of their javelins made of a ſort of metal called guanin, ſome of which he had ſent to *Spain*, where it appeared on the aſſay to be of 32 parts, 18 of gold, 6 of braſs, and 8 of copper.

THE admiral continued his courſe ſouth-weſt, till he found ſome of the ſame kind of weeds he had met with in the direct way to *Hiſpaniola*, and ſailed within five degrees of the line; where, on the 13th of *July*, the heat of the weather was ſo violent, that he was afraid the ſhips would take fire, and the men periſh: but, on the 19th, they met with a fair gale, and ſailed ſeventeen days to the weſtward, deſigning to turn again to the ſouth, ſo that *Hiſpaniola* might bear north, where the admiral believed he ſhould find land, either before or after he came to that point. On the 31ſt of *July*, he diſcovered land to the ſouth-eaſt; and it proved to be an iſland, which the admiral called *la Trinidad*, or the *Trinity*; having promiſed to give that name to the firſt land he ſhould diſcover. This iſland lies near the mouth of the great river *Oronoque*, in ſouth *America*; and the inhabitants gave the admiral a friendly reception; who, from thence, diſcovered more land, which he took for an iſland, and called it *Iſla Santa*, or *Holy Iſland*: but, it proved to be that part of the continent called *Paria*, or *Guiana*. On the 5th of *Auguſt*, he diſcovered ſeveral good harbours, great tracts of cultivated land, and many rivers; which invited him on ſhore, where he found well taſted grapes, mirabolans, apples, and a ſort of fruit that looked like oranges,

oranges, but had figs within. The *Indians* came down in great numbers, and bartered ſeveral things for *Spaniſh* toys: they had ſome little plates of gold about their necks, which they ſaid was very plentiful in thoſe parts, and ſhewed how they gathered it: they wore collars and beads of ſeveral ſorts, having their hair cut ſhort, with little caps and aprons made of cotton, for covering their heads and their privities. The admiral obſerved, that theſe *Indians* were a polite and warlike people: he diſcovered, and gave names to ſeveral capes and harbours, as alſo to four iſlands; and he was now well aſſured, that this land was the continent: but, as his men grew uneaſy, and as they wanted proviſions, he deſiſted from making any farther diſcovery at preſent; and, on the 15th of *Auguſt*, ſteered his courſe for *Hiſpaniola*, where he arrived on the 22d at the town of *St. Domingo*, which his brother *Bartholomew* had built on the ſouth-ſide of the iſland; giving it this name in memory of their father *Dominic*.

The adelantado, in the abſence of his brother the admiral, had contracted a friendſhip with *Bohechio*, king of the province of *Xaragua*, and prevailed upon him to pay a tribute to their Catholic majeſties. But *Guarinoex*, king of the *Indians* about *Cibao*, took up arms againſt the *Spaniards*, and aſſembled fifteen thouſand men together, who were defeated by the adelantado; when *Guarinoex*, and ſome of his caziques, were taken priſoners; though they were ſoon afterwards ſet at liberty. This revolt of the *Indians* was followed by an inſurrection among the *Spaniards*, headed by *Francis Roldan*, the chief alcalde, or chief juſtice; who intimated

intimated to ſeveral ſeamen and labourers, that the adelantado, and his brother *James*, intended to pay no obedience to their Catholic majeſties; but to keep the iſland to themſelves, and make all the people ſlaves to employ them in building their forts and houſes, and in collecting their tributes. The mutineers broke open the royal magazine at *Iſabella*, from whence *Roldan* took all the arms and ammunition he thought proper for his followers; as alſo ſeveral cows, mares, and colts, with which he went about the *Indian* towns, and perſuaded the *Indians* to diſcontinue the payment of their tribute. *Roldan* aſpired to the chief authority, imagining the admiral would not return again to *Hiſpaniola*, after the informations were laid againſt him by *Aguada*. He had ſeventy men well armed, which were afterwards increaſed by other revolters, who intended to beſiege the adelantado in the *Conception*. But, on the 3d of *February*, 1498, two ſhips arrived from *Spain*, laden with proviſions, and the adelantado ſecured them by repairing to *St. Domingo*; where he was followed by *Roldan*, who alſo intended to get the proviſions into his poſſeſſion. Theſe diſturbances among the *Spaniards*, occaſioned *Guarinoex* to quit his country, and retire into the territory of *Mayobanex*, king of the *Giguayos*, who inhabited the mountains, wore their hair down to the waiſt, and looked upon themſelves as the braveſt people upon the iſland. The adelantado marched againſt theſe *Indians*, and ſent a meſſenger to *Mayobanex*, deſiring him to deliver up *Guarinoex*, becauſe he had abſconded, and refuſed to pay his tribute: but, the *Indian* anſwered, that he deſpiſed the friendſhip of

the

the *Spaniards*, and would protect *Guarinoex*. The adelantado then plundered the country; and *Mayobanex* aſſembled a numerous body of *Indians* to oppoſe the *Spaniards*: but they were ſo much terrified at the *Spaniſh* arms, that they deſerted their prince, who, with a few faithful attendants, retreated to the mountains, where he was ſoon afterwards taken priſoner, together with his wife and children, *Guarinoex*, and ſome others, who were all conducted to the *Conception*.

In the mean time, the three ſhips which the admiral had ſent before him to *Hiſpaniola*, arrived on the ſouth-ſide of the iſland, where *Roldan* had poſted himſelf with his mutineers, and perſuaded ſome of the men belonging to theſe ſhips to join his people. But, when the admiral arrived, *Roldan* returned to his duty, on receiving a general pardon, and a confirmation of his office as chief judge of the iſland: after which, the admiral diligently applied himſelf to the diſcovery of the mines, and found ſuch plenty of gold, that his family ſoon accumulated abundance of riches.

The commanders of the ſhips which the admiral had ſent to *Spain*, delivered an account to their Catholic majeſties of the diſcovery he had made of the continent; and of the pearls he had found, which had not been expected from thoſe parts. Great rejoicings were made upon this information, which inclined ſeveral people to ſollicit for the privilege of making farther diſcoveries; and particularly *Alonſo de Ojeda*, who had four ſhips fitted out by the merchants of *Seville*, and ſet ſail from port *St. Mary*, on the 20th of *May*, 1499, being accompanied by *Americus Veſputius*. After ſailing twenty-

twenty-ſeven days to the weſtward, they diſcovered the continent, and went on ſhore, where they traded with the *Indians* along the coaſt till they came to a town built in the water, containing twenty-ſix large houſes like bells, raiſed on pillars, with draw-bridges to go from one houſe to another. The *Indians* at firſt were in a great conſternation at the ſight of the ſhips, drew up their bridges, and retired into their houſes: but the *Spaniards* made ſigns of friendſhip, and they ſoon had courage enough to venture on board the ſhips, which proceeded down the coaſt of *Paria*, where the admiral *Columbus* had been before; though *Americus Veſputius*, by many artifices, aſſumed to himſelf the honour of having diſcovered the continent. They afterwards landed in ſome of the *Caribbee* iſlands, where they met with oppoſition, and killed ſeveral of the natives: after which, they went to *Hiſpaniola*, and carried with them two hundred and twenty two *Indian* ſlaves.

ALONSO de OJEDA, on his arrival at *Hiſpaniola*, refuſed to pay any ſubmiſſion to the admiral, and created an inſurrection more formidable than that which had been lately ſuppreſſed. However, this ſudden ſtorm ſoon ſubſided, and *Ojedo* returned to *Spain:* though, after his departure, *Hernando de Guevera*, kindled another commotion, which was ſoon ſuppreſſed by the bravery of the admiral, who ordered ſome of the mutineers to be executed.

THE inhabitants of *Seville* were informed, that *Ojeda* was directed in his voyage by the draught which the admiral had made of what he had diſcovered on the continent; and therefore ſeveral others followed his example, by undertaking new diſcoveries.

veries. *Peter Alonſo Nino*, who was with the admiral when *Paria* was diſcovered, obtained the royal licence to undertake a voyage, on condition that he ſhould not come to an anchor, nor land any where within fifty leagues of what the admiral had diſcovered. *Lewis Guerra* of *Seville*, defrayed the expence of the expedition, and appointed his brother *Chriſtopher* captain of the ſhip, who ſet ſail ſoon after *Alonſo de Ojeda*, and alſo traded along the coaſt of *Paria*, where he was well entertained by the natives; and, having 1200 ounces of beautiful pearls given him in exchange for a few toys, he returned to *Spain*, on the 6th of *February* 1500.

VINCENT YANEZ PINSON, who accompanied the admiral in the firſt diſcovery, equipped four ſhips at his own expence, and ſet ſail from *Palos* about the beginning of the year 1500; being the firſt *Spaniard* who croſſed the equinoctial line. On the 26th of *February*, he diſcovered land, went on ſhore, and took poſſeſſion of the country, which was a part of *Brazil*: but he met with great oppoſition from the natives, who killed and wounded ſeveral of the *Spaniards*. He afterwards ſailed along the coaſt of *Paria*, and then proceeded towards the *Caribbees*: but two of his ſhips were loſt in the paſſage with all the men, and the others arrived in *Spain* about the end of *September*; having diſcovered ſix hundred leagues along the coaſt of *Paria*.

JAMES de LEPE, in the beginning of the year 1500, ſet ſail from *Palos* with two ſhips upon a diſcovery, and purſued the ſame courſe as *Pinſon* had done: but met with more obſtructions from the *Indians*.

THOUGH

THOUGH *Columbus* had given *Spain* the honour of having diſcovered a new world; the *Spaniſh* court treated this great man with the greateſt ingratitude. The account which he had tranſmitted of the inſurrection of *Roldan*, was contradicted by complaints againſt the admiral; who, like all other eminent men, had too many enemies to depreciate his worth. They repreſented him to the king as ambitious and tyrannical, cruel and avaricious: that he exerciſed no proper form of government; uſing both *Indians* and *Spaniards* as ſlaves: as alſo that he had the poſſeſſion of immenſe treaſures, while he concealed the richeſt mines from the royal officers. Such unjuſt complaints, and malicious ſuggeſtions, deprived the admiral of that royal patronage and protection which he had ſo deſervedly obtained; ſo that his Catholic majeſty was determined to recal him from his government; though, perhaps, his greateſt inducement to ſo ungenerous an action, was the report of the immenſe opulence that the admiral had acquired, and which he imagined would flow into the royal treaſury upon his removal.

UPON theſe preſumptions, their Catholic majeſties came to the reſolution of removing the admiral from his government: though it was pretended, he requeſted that a judge might be ſent over to examine into the inſolencies committed by *Roldan* and *Ojeda*. However, it was acknowledged, the admiral alſo deſired that their majeſties would pay a proper regard to the ſervices he had performed; and that no incroachment ſhould be made upon his rights: which is a ſtrong proof that he was afraid of being neglected, and of meeting with injuſtice, when

when he had merited all the favours that royal munificence could beſtow.

FRANCIS de BOVADILLA, commendary of the order of *Calatrava*, was appointed by their majeſties to go over to *Hiſpaniola*, with the title and commiſſion of examiner, as alſo of governor; giving him ſeveral blank warrants to fill up as he thought proper; as alſo an authority to apprehend the admiral, and ſend him to *Spain*, if the complaints alledged againſt him were put into proof. All the officers and commanders of the iſland were ordered to aſſiſt *Bovadilla*; and a letter was alſo ſent to the admiral, commanding him to obey the new governor.

On the 23d of *Auguſt*, 1500, *Francis de Bovadilla* arrived at *Hiſpaniola*; at which time, the admiral, and his brother the adelantado, were puniſhing ſome of the mutineers, and ſettling the tranquility of the iſland, ſo that the *Indians* might ſoon be brought to pay their tributes. *Bovadilla* immediately exerted all the force of his commiſſion; demanded all the royal ſtores, arms, and proviſions to be delivered up to him; took poſſeſſion of the fort, and ſeized upon every thing belonging to the admiral; who could not imagine that their majeſties would have ſuffered him to be treated with ſuch injuſtice and indignity. *Bovadilla* ſoon ingratiated himſelf into the affections of many diſcontented people, whom he countenanced in their complaints againſt the admiral. The accuſers alledged, that the admiral treated the *Spaniards* with great ſeverity, by compelling them to work, when they were afflicted with illneſs, and periſhing with hunger: that he had refuſed to allow them proviſions, and would not permit the *Indians*

to

to be baptized, while he made war on them unjuſtly, and took many ſlaves, to ſend into *Spain*: and that he would not grant any permiſſion for digging of gold, becauſe he was willing to conceal the wealth of the *Indies*, with a view of retaining the poſſeſſion of them by the aſſiſtance of ſome other monarch. All theſe allegations were falſe; yet *Bovadilla* ſeized the admiral, and both his brothers; without ſo much as ſeeing or ſpeaking to them. They were all put into irons, and no perſon permitted to converſe with them: which was ſo inhuman an action, conſidering the dignity of the perſon, and the ineſtimable ſervice he had done the crown of *Spain*, that the admiral afterwards kept his fetters, and ordered they ſhould be buried with him, in teſtimony of the ingratitude he had received. In this condition, the admiral and his brothers were ſent priſoners into *Spain*, under the guard of *Alonſo de Vallejo*, who was ordered to deliver the priſoners, as ſoon as he arrived at *Cadiz*, to *John Rodrigues de Fonſeca*, a *Spaniſh* biſhop; and it was univerſally believed, that *Bovadilla* put this affront upon the admiral only to win the favour of that prelate. The priſoners were carried from *Hiſpaniola*, about the beginning of *October*, when *Vallejo* offered to ſtrike off their fetters; which the admiral would not ſuffer, till it was done by the order of their majeſties.

THE ſhip arrived at *Cadiz* on the 25th of *November*; at which time their majeſties were at *Granada*: but, being informed how the admiral was treated, they ordered him to be releaſed, and to have a thouſand ducats to carry him to court, where he met with a very favourable reception; their majeſties

jeſties aſſuring him, it had never been their deſign that he ſhould be any way moleſted, and promiſing to redreſs all his grievances; but particularly the queen, who had always been more favourable to him than the king. The admiral was upon his knees a conſiderable time before their majeſties; being unable to utter a word, through the greatneſs of his concern. They ordered him to riſe, when he made a pathetic ſpeech, proteſting that it had always been his intention to ſerve their majeſties with the utmoſt fidelity; and that, if he had been guilty of any miſtakes, they proceeded from his want of knowledge in the art of government, not from a want of zeal to their majeſties, or any diſaffection to their ſubjects, notwithſtanding they had treated him with the utmoſt diſreſpect and inſolence.

The admiral exhibited ſeveral complaints againſt *Bovadilla*, upon which their majeſties reſolved to ſend another governor to *Hiſpaniola*; and appointed *Nicholas de Obando*, knight of the order of *Alcantara*, to hold the government for two years. Among his inſtructions, he was ordered to bring *Bovadilla* to a trial; and to examine into the inſurrection of *Roldan*. He was alſo particularly charged by the queen, that all the *Indians* of *Hiſpaniola*, ſhould be free from ſervitude, be protected like the *Spaniards*, and be carefully inſtructed in the chriſtian faith. All that the admiral and his brothers had been diſpoſſeſſed of by *Bovadilla*, was ordered to be reſtored by *Obando*; but no *Jews*, *Moors*, or new converts, were to be tolerated in the *Indies*.

The fleet appointed to carry over *Nicholas de*

Obando, conſiſted of thirty two ſail, commanded by *Anthony de Torres*; having on board two thouſand five hundred men, with ten *Franciſcan* friars. They ſet ſail from *St. Lucar*, on the 13th of *February*, 1502; and, after meeting with a terrible tempeſt, the new governor arrived at *Hiſpaniola* on the 15th of *April*, where he immediately put his orders into execution, by ſending *Bovadilla* on board the fleet, together with *Roldan*, and all the men who had been concerned in his inſurrection; as alſo the cazique *Guarinoex*, and two hundred thouſand caſtillans, or two thouſand pounds weight of gold: but all of them were loſt in their paſſage.

THE report was daily increaſing among the *Spaniards*, that pearls and gold were brought from the new diſcovered continent, in exchange for hawks-bells, and other things of inconſiderable value: which excited ſeveral enterprizing perſons to continue the diſcovery. *Roderic de Baſtidas* obtained a licence for fitting out two ſhips in *January* 1501, and ſailed to the continent, where he touched at ſeveral places to trade with the *Indians*, who came down in great multitudes to barter with the *Spaniards*; particularly along that part of the coaſt which was afterwards called *Terra Firma*. *Baſtidas* then went to *Hiſpaniola*, where he was impriſoned by *Bovadilla*, who pretended he had bartered for gold with the *Indians* of *Xaragua*: but he ſoon releaſed him; when *Baſtidas* returned to *Spain*, where he paid their majeſties the fifth part of the gold and pearls he had brought; and the whole court was rejoiced to hear that he got them on the continent. About the ſame time, *Alonſo de Ojeda* ſailed from *Cadiz*, on his ſecond voyage;

being

being again accompanied by *Americus Veſputius*, who ſtill perſiſted in arrogating to himſelf the honour of having diſcovered the continent; though he was ſenſible that honour was due to the admiral *Columbus*. They followed the ſame courſe that *Baſtidas* had taken, and coaſted along the ſame ſhore, without knowing that he had been there; but they were not ſo ſucceſsful in their expedition.

NOTWITHSTANDING the admiral *Columbus* had fully proved himſelf innocent of what he had been accuſed by his enemies, he was deprived of his government of *Hiſpaniola*; though he retained the titles of admiral and vice-roy of the *Indies*. He ſtill ſollicited to be reſtored to his full rights and prerogatives; ſince he had performed all he had promiſed, and had been ſo great a ſufferer in the ſervice of the crown; offering to make conſiderable diſcoveries, without regarding his age and infirmity; becauſe he was ſtrongly of opinion, that he might find a ſtraight or paſſage, about that part which was called the iſthmus of *Darien*. Their majeſties amuſed him only with promiſes, till they could hear what account *Obando* would ſend them, about the affairs of the iſland; when they granted the admiral four ſhips, and proviſions for two years; with an aſſurance, that, if he died in the vogage, his ſon Don *James* ſhould ſucceed him in all his rights and prerogatives.

THE admiral ſet ſail, on his fourth expedition to the *Indies*, from *Cadiz*, on the 9th of *May*, 1502; the largeſt of his ſhips being not above ſeventy ton, and the leaſt not under fifty; having one hundred and forty men on board, with his brother the adelantado. The admiral arrived at

the grand *Canary* on the 20th, where he took in wood and water: from whence he ſailed on the 25th, and on the 2d of *June*, landed his men at *Martinico*, one of the *Caribbee* iſlands, where they refreſhed themſelves for three days, and then continued their voyage among a great number of very delightful iſlands, whoſe verdure made them like ſo many beautiful gardens: but, as one of his ſhips was diſabled, the admiral was obliged to make towards *Hiſpaniola*, and came before *St. Domingo* on the 29th. He ſent *Peter de Terreros*, one of his captains, to acquaint the governor with the neceſſity he was under of leaving his diſabled ſhip in port; and to deſire he would permit him to enter the harbour with his ſhips, not only to get another, but alſo to ſhelter himſelf from a great ſtorm which he was certain would ſoon happen, from the porpoiſes playing upon the ſurface of the water, and other obſervations made by mariners on ſuch occaſions. *Obando* refuſed this requeſt, and informed the admiral, that the fleet of thirty-two ſail was ready to put to ſea: but the admiral adviſed him not to permit theſe ſhips to go out in leſs than eight days, becauſe he was certain a dangerous tempeſt was approaching; for which reaſon he was going to put into the next harbour he could find. The governor rejected this admonition; and the pilots, in deriſion of the admiral, called him the prophet: but moſt of them loſt their lives by their folly and obſtinacy; for they ſet ſail on the 1ſt of *July*, and within forty hours there aroſe a violent ſtorm, which ſeparated the fleet, and caſt away twenty of the ſhips, wherein *Bovadilla* and *Roldan* periſhed, with many others: while

while the admiral ſecurely ſhielded himſelf from the danger, by getting into the little creek of *Porto Hermoſo*. A great mortality alſo happened among the *Spaniards* upon the iſland, occaſioned by their exceſſive fatigue in opening the mines; with which employment they were entirely unacquainted: beſides, *Obando* was alſo diſturbed by an inſurrection among the *Indians*.

THE admiral ſailed from *Hiſpaniola* on the 14th of *July*, and made towards the continent; paſſing by the ſouth-ſide of *Jamaica*, from whence he continued his courſe till he arrived at the iſland of *Guayana*, in the gulph of *Honduras*. AN *Indian* canoe came to the admiral, being as long as a galley, and eight feet broad: in the middle of which was an awning made of mats of palm-tree leaves, and under it were twenty-five men, with ſeveral women and children, who had been trading upon the coaſt of *Yucatan*, and were returning to the coaſt of *Mexico*, with great quantities of large pieces of cloth, quilts, and quilted waiſtcoats of ſeveral colours. The admiral treated them with great civility, and diſmiſſed them all but one elderly man, whom he detained to give him an account of the neighbouring continent, and to ſerve him as an interpreter among the natives. The *Indian* was aſked by ſigns, if he knew where there was any gold? and he pointed to ſhew that there was ſome to the eaſtward: ſo that the admiral imagined, he ſhould either hear of, or diſcover *China*, if he continued along that coaſt; and, therefore, he forbore proceeding to the weſtward; though in returning back, he laboured againſt the trade-winds and currents, which conſtantly ſet to the

weſt in the north ſea. However, he ran up as far as the preſent town of *Porto Bello*, to which he gave this name, on account of its beautiful ſituation. He landed at ſeveral places, and traded with the natives, who gave him large quantities of gold plates, for a few hawks-bells and other toys: they alſo furniſhed the *Spaniards* with ſeveral kinds of proviſions, and ſeemed a well civilized people. Upon many parts of the coaſt, were diſcovered an infinite number of pine trees and oaks; as alſo ſix or ſeven ſorts of palm, and many myrabolan trees bearing a pleaſant and odoriferous fruit. Some of the natives were entirely naked, others only covered their privities, and others wore jackets without ſleeves which reached down to their navels. There were many who had their faces and bodies painted with ſeveral colours: a few of them were diſtinguiſhed by a kind of coloured cotton turbans on their heads, inſtead of caps; and ſeveral of them adorned their ears and noſes with thin plates of gold; but thoſe who hung them to their ears, ſtretched them to ſuch an enormous ſize, that the admiral called their country *La Coſta de la Orejas*, or *The Coaſt of Ears*. The houſes in ſome towns were built with timber, and thatched with reeds; having tombs adjacent to them, wherein dead bodies were embalmed, and wrapt in cotton cloths, without any diſagreeable ſcent: over which were planks carved with the figures of beaſts, and on ſome the reſemblance of the perſon deceaſed. In ſome parts, the *Indians* came down armed in great numbers, with bows, arrows, ſpears, and clubs, as if they intended to prevent the *Spaniards* from landing: but they were ſoon pacified, and traded

very

very civilly afterwards: though, when the admiral aſked them ſome queſtions, and ordered his notary to take down their anſwers in writing, they were in ſuch a conſternation at ſeeing the pen, ink, and paper, that moſt of them ran away, imagining that writing was a kind of exorciſm.

THE admiral left *Porto Bello* on the 9th of *November*, and a little to the eaſtward of it diſcovered ſome ſmall iſlands, where he found ſeveral refreſhments; which made him call them *de Baſtimentos*, or *The Iſlands of Proviſion*. But, as the ſtormy eaſt and north-eaſt winds obſtructed him from proceeding in his intended courſe, he returned again to the weſtward, on the 5th of *December*, being informed that there were gold mines in the province of *Veragua*. He met with ſuch bad weather, that he called this part of the country *la Coſta de los Contraſtes*, or *The Coaſt of Oppoſition*: however, on the 6th of *January*, 1503, the ſhips arrived on the coaſt of *Veragua*, and entered a river which the admiral called *Bethlehem*: they traded with the natives, who brought them great quantities of gold; particularly, one of the caziques of the country, whoſe name was *Quibia*, and who alſo conducted them to the mines of *Urira*, where the *Spaniards* gathered ſome gold among the roots of the trees; returning to their ſhips with great ſatisfaction at finding the precious metal ſo near the ſurface of the earth.

THE admiral likewiſe received information, that there were very conſiderable mines of gold farther up the country; which occaſioned him to come to the reſolution of eſtabliſhing a colony upon the river of *Bethlehem*, where he intended to leave his

brother, with moſt of the men, while he returned to *Spain* for farther reinforcements.

ACCORDINGLY, ſome houſes were built, a fort erected, and a garriſon of eighty men appointed; who had proper ſupplies of arms, ſtores, and proviſions. This was the firſt colony which the *Spaniards* planted on the continent, though it was of ſhort duration: for the adelantado being apprehenſive that the cazique *Quibia*, was preparing to diſpoſſeſs him of his ſettlement, ſent a body of men to ſecure him and his family; which was expeditiouſly performed, and all of them carried on board one of the ſhips, except the cazique, who made his eſcape, returned to his people, and aſſembled a numerous body of them to attack the *Spaniards*. The *Indians* were as private in coming to attack the *Spaniſh* forts, as the *Spaniards* were in ſeizing the *Indian* prince; but they were not equally ſucceſsful, being repulſed, and many of them ſlain. However, the *Indians* afterwards killed ſeveral of the *Spaniards*; which ſo much intimidated thoſe in garriſon, that they abandoned the fort, and returned on board the ſhips; leaving the hulk of one ſhip behind, which was all worm-eaten. They returned to *Porto Bello*, where they left another of the ſhips, and proceeded to *Cuba*, where they eſcaped a violent ſtorm, and refreſhed themſelves: after which, they ſtood for *Jamaica*, and arrived there on *Midſummer-eve*. The two remaining ſhips were ſo leaky, that it was impoſſible to keep them afloat: and therefore the admiral ran them both aground, in a ſmall creek, called *Santa Gloria*, as cloſe together, and as near the ſhore as poſſible; where they ſupported and ſhored up the ſhips with

timber,

timber, to prevent them from bulging: but, as they were filled with water almoſt to the decks, cabbins were made on the heads and ſterns, to ſhelter the men from the weather.

When the ſhips were thus ſecured, the *Indians* came in their canoes to ſell proviſions, and a very friendly intercourſe was carried on between them and the *Spaniards*; whom the admiral kept on board the ſhips, for fear they ſhould go up the country and diſoblige the natives. The admiral then conſulted with his officers about the beſt means of getting away from the iſland; when it was agreed to ſend advice to the governor of *Hiſpaniola*, of their unhappy condition, and to requeſt that he would ſend a ſhip to convoy them all away. But this was an affair which muſt neceſſarily be attended with the utmoſt danger and difficulty; becauſe the diſtance between the two neareſt points of *Jamaica* and *Hiſpaniola*, was about twenty-four leagues, beſides thirty more to the points where it was proper to croſs over; and this paſſage was to be undertook in canoes, made of one piece of timber, which are in danger of being overſet by any violent agitation of the waves. *James Mendez de Segura*, chief notary of the fleet, and *Bartholomew Fieſco* were appointed to undertake this paſſage, with ſix *Spaniards*, and ten *Indians* to row; who underwent great fatigue for ten days, before they arrived at *Hiſpaniola*. *James Mendez* waited upon the governor, who was very dilatory in diſpatching the buſineſs which the admiral requeſted: however, *Mendez* bought a ſhip at *St. Domingo*; though it was a conſiderable time before he was able to ſend it to *Jamaica*.

The

THE admiral gave *Mendez* ſome diſpatches to be ſent immediately to their Catholic majeſties, containing a full relation of his voyage, the dangers and troubles he had undergone, and of his diſcovery of the rich mines at *Veragua:* at the ſame time complaining of the ungenerous treatment which had been ſhewn him by his impriſonment, and the ſeizure of all his effects; praying redreſs; as alſo lamenting, that, after having ſpent twenty years in the ſervice of the crown, he had not any habitation to take ſhelter in, when he ſhould return to *Spain*, and muſt be obliged to take up his lodgings at a public inn. But the admiral had ſtill greater difficulties to encounter; for the ſuccour which he expected from *Hiſpaniola*, was ſo long in coming over, that his men began to be diſcontented, and to deſpair of their ſafety. *Francis de Porras*, one of his captains, was at the head of the mutineers, and publickly told the admiral, that if he would not leave the iſland immediately, they would leave him behind: after which, they ſeized ſome canoes which the admiral had bought of the *Indians*, and went in them to the eaſtern point of *Jamaica*, where they were unable to make their intended paſſage to *Hiſpaniola*.

THE admiral found about half the people faithful to their commander: but the *Indians* began to ſhew him ſome diſreſpect, when they found ſuch a conſiderable number of his men had revolted: though he was ſoon relieved from this diſtreſs in the following manner. He knew there would be a lunar eclipſe in three days, and ſent an *Indian*, who could ſpeak *Spaniſh*, to invite the caziques, with the other principal inhabitants of thoſe parts,

to

to pay him a viſit. They accepted the invitation, and waited upon the admiral the day before the eclipſe happened: when he told them, that the revolted *Spaniards* had ſo much offended heaven, that the Great God, to whom they were ſervants, would not permit the mutineers to paſs over into *Hiſpaniola*. He alſo acquainted the *Indians*, that they themſelves had alſo incurred the diſpleaſure of this Great God of the chriſtians, who was the Supreme Lord of the whole univerſe; and was reſolved to chaſtiſe them with famine and other calamities, becauſe they would not ſupply him with proviſions in exchange for his commodities. And he further told them, that, to convince them of the truth of what he aſſerted, his Omnipotent God was pleaſed they ſhould ſee a certain ſign of his anger in the ſky: wherefore, they might that night obſerve, that the moon would appear of a bloody hue ſoon after ſhe roſe, to denote the puniſhment which God would inflict upon the *Indians*. When the admiral had made this ſpeech, ſome of the *Indians* went away greatly terrified, and others derided the prediction: but the latter were ſoon put into an equal conſternation with the former; for the eclipſe began as ſoon as the moon was up, and increaſed as ſhe advanced in the horizon: which gave all the *Indians* ſuch horrible apprehenſions of the anger of that deity they imagined they had offended, that they expeditiouſly returned to the admiral, intreating him to pray to his God to pardon them; and aſſuring him they would ſupply him with all the proviſions he would demand. The admiral anſwered, he would offer up his prayers to God; ſhut himſelf up; and waited till the eclipſe was at

its

its greateſt height; when he came out again to the *Indians*, telling them that God had forgiven them, on his promiſes that they would ſupply the chriſtians for the future: and, as a proof that this pardon was obtained, they would ſee that the moon would be gradually appeaſed, and return to her uſual complexion. The *Indians* ſoon perceived the eclipſe to go off; upon which they admired the God of the chriſtians, returned the admiral the moſt grateful acknowledgment of his favour, and afterwards plentifully ſupplied him with proviſions.

EIGHT months were now elapſed ſince the departure of *Mendez* and *Fieſco*, without any advice of their arrival at *Hiſpaniola*; which made thoſe, who continued with the admiral, deſpair of ever receiving any relief; and, while the mutineers under *Porras* were committing great ravages upon the *Indians* in the eaſtern part of the iſland, another mutiny was ready to break out among thoſe who were with the admiral. But this was prevented by the arrival of a ſmall caravel, ſent by the governor of *Hiſpaniola*, only to ſee in what condition the admiral and his men were in: for the commander was ordered not to go on ſhore, and to return as ſoon as he had delivered a letter to the admiral, with a preſent of a caſk of wine, and two flitches of bacon. The admiral told his men, the caravel was too ſmall to carry them all together, and was returned for more aſſiſtance; which ſatisfied them, and brought them to their obedience. But *Porras* perſiſted in his revolt; though he was ſoon reduced by the adelantado, who marched againſt the rebels, defeated them, and took their leader priſoner; after which they all ſubmitted.

THE

THE joy of the admiral for this ſucceſs was increaſed by the arrival of a ſhip and caravel from *Hiſpaniola*, freighted by *James Mendez*, without any aſſiſtance from the governor; on board of which the admiral embarked, with all his people, on the 28th of *June*, 1504, and arrived at *St. Domingo*, on the 13th of *Auguſt*.

HE found the iſland in peace; but was informed of many cruelties which the *Spaniards* had committed on the *Indians*, before this tranquility enſued: particularly, by the barbarous murder of *Anacaona*, a woman of great authority; and many of her ſubordinate caziques, who were ſurrounded and burnt in one of their principal houſes, as they were preparing an entertainment for the *Spaniards*. *Cotubanama*, the principal cazique in the iſland, was alſo taken priſoner, and hanged by the order of the governor, who had taken ſuch precaution to ſuppreſs the *Indians*, that the admiral now found there were ſeventeen *Spaniſh* towns on the iſland; as alſo, that their Catholic majeſties had granted liberty for the *Spaniards* to make ſlaves of the *Indians*, though they had formerly ordered that no violence ſhould be offered to theſe now truly unhappy and miſerable people.

THE governor paid the admiral all marks of external reſpect; but privately infringed upon his juriſdiction and authority, by releaſing *Porras*, and threatening to puniſh thoſe who had ſtood honourably by the admiral. But the admiral ſettled his affairs in the iſland, where he had a noble eſtate, and many valuable effects: after which, he ſet ſail for *Europe*, on the 12th of *September*, and arrived ſafely at *St. Lucar*; from whence he went to the court,

court, which was then at *Segovia* in old *Caſtile*. The king gave him all the appearance of a gracious reception: but the admiral ſoon had the mortification to perceive that all his ſervices were neglected. His great patroneſs, queen *Iſabella*, was dead: the courtiers envied him the wealth and honours he had acquired; while the king continued his old practice of amuſing him with fair and deluſive promiſes. The admiral preſented ſeveral petitions, ſetting forth his great ſervices and ſufferings; as alſo deſiring the performance of what had been promiſed him by their majeſties: but the king was ſo far from having any intention to fulfil his engagements, that he cauſed his miniſters to offer the admiral a large eſtate in *Spain*, in exchange for his poſſeſſions in the *Indies*. This gave the admiral ſuch perplexity, that he complained of his injuries to the archbiſhop of *Seville*, and retired to *Valladolid*, where he died on the 20th of *May*, 1506, with all the reſignation of a man, under a ſenſe, that the moſt important ſervices, attended by the moſt unexpected ſucceſs, were thrown away upon an ingrateful nation.

THUS obſcurely died the glorious *Chriſtopher Columbus*, the diſcoverer of a new world; whoſe name will ever appear more illuſtrious among mankind, than the names of any of the heroes of antiquity; for their greateſt glory was to form a city, or conquer a ſtate; but *Columbus* paved the way for the conqueſt of a world, and the civilizing of nations. He in perſon diſcovered the *Bahama* iſlands; the great iſlands of *Cuba*, *Hiſpaniola*, and *Porto Rico*, with ſeveral of the *Caribbee* iſlands: he afterwards diſcovered a great part of

the

the continent, and received ſome intelligence of the ſouth ſea. So that all thoſe adventurers, who afterwards extended the diſcoveries of the *Spaniards*, only made improvements upon what the great *Columbus* had begun; though *Americus Veſputius* had the good fortune, and the great vanity, to have this great region called after his own name, to the manifeſt prejudice of the honour of the real diſcoverer. However, if *Columbus* had performed ſuch a wonderful enterprize in the remoter ages, as the diſcovery of a new world, he would not only have had temples and ſtatues erected to his honour; but, like *Hercules* and *Bacchus*, ſome ſtar would have been dedicated to his memory, which had been held in as much veneration as their deities. His body was magnificently conveyed to the monaſtery of the carthuſians at *Seville*, and from thence to the city of *St. Domingo* in *Hiſpaniola*, where it was honourably interred in the chancel of the cathedral: his Catholic majeſty being ſo juſt to the memory of this excellent man, that he conferred many honours upon his family, and erected a beautiful monument in the cathedral of *Seville*, with an inſcription to the following effect.

On Chriſtopher Columbus, *the firſt diſcoverer of* America; *who was born at* Nervi, *in the ſtate of* Genoa, *and died in* Spain, *in* 1506; *being buried in the cathedral church of* Seville.

COLUMBUS, born on the *Ligurian* ſoil,
Inſpir'd by Heav'n, firſt bore the ſeaman's toil,
Advent'rous o'er the vaſt *Atlantic* main,
To find another, richer world, for *Spain*:
Succeſs his labours crown'd; yet ſtill remain'd
Great deeds, by men as great, to be attain'd.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

In what manner Americus Veſputius *got the new world called* America, *after his own name, in prejudice to that of* Columbus. *How king* Henry VIIth *of* England, *employed* John Cabot, *and his ſon* Sebaſtian, *to make diſcoveries on the north coaſt of* America. *The diſcovery of* Braſil, *by the* Portugueſe. *The expedition of* Vaſco Nunez de Bilboa, *to the continent of* America; *and the diſcovery of the ſouth ſea. A ſhort account of what was diſcovered by other adventurers; particularly, the paſſage of* Ferdinand Magellan *into the ſouth ſea, the firſt circumnavigation round the globe, and what other commanders alſo performed. With a repreſentation of the different attempts to find out a north-eaſt and north-weſt paſſage to* America: *as likewiſe, what parts of that country are now enjoyed by the different* European *powers.*

THE enemies of *Columbus*, not ſatisfied with having given his Catholic majeſty an ill opinion of his merit, ſoon after he had diſcovered the new world, prevailed upon him to invite *Americus Veſputius*, a *Florentine*, over from *Liſbon*, and to employ him in the ſame diſcoveries: but, though he made two voyages in the years 1497, and 1498, he neither improved, or enlarged upon the diſcoveries of *Columbus*. However, *Americus* was afterwards employed in the ſervice of *Emanuel* king of *Portugal*, who, in *May*, 1501, ſent him out with three ſhips from *Liſbon*; when he coaſted along the continent of ſouth *America*, from five to fifty-

fifty degrees of ſouth latitude; from whence the cold and tempeſtuous weather obliged him to return to *Portugal*, where he publiſhed his voyage; and made known that there was a continent in the new world, little inferior to that of the old, for its dimenſions, he was ſo happy as to give his name to the whole regions of this new country, which, from him, has ever ſince retained the name of *America*; though he never attempted to make one ſettlement in it, either for the crowns of *Spain* or *Portugal*: while *Columbus*, who was the original diſcoverer of the continent, and who made ſuch acquiſitions among the iſlands for the *Spaniards*, had not the honour to have a ſingle place nominated to his memory.

In this manner, the great continent of *America* was diſcovered, within the ſpace of about ten years, from 67 degrees of north to 52 degrees of ſouth latitude. In the mean time the report of theſe great advantages accruing to *Spain*, from the diſcoveries made by *Columbus*, excited other princes to make ſome ſimilar experiments, and particularly king *Henry* the VIIth of *England*, who had before declared his intentions of embarking in the enterprize. This prince had a *Venetian* in his dominions, whoſe name was *John Cabot*, of a bold enterprizing genius, and of great experience in navigation: therefore, he reſolved immediately to employ him, with a view of obtaining ſome ſhare of the wealth of the new *Indies*, for the benefit of his own ſubjects. Accordingly, on the 5th of *March*, 1490, the king granted his letters patent to *John Cabot*, and his three ſons, *Lewis*, *Sebaſtian*, and *Sancius*, for making diſcoveries in

any part of the world, poſſeſſed by heathens or infidels, and to get the poſſeſſion of them under his title and juriſdiction, reſerving a fifth part of the profits thereof to the crown. By virtue of this patent, *John Cabot*, and his ſon *Sebaſtian*, ſet ſail from *Briſtol*; and in *June*, 1497, diſcovered the iſland of *Newfoundland*, from whence they brought home three of the natives, and named a port there *Sancius Haven*. Upon the death of *John Cabot*, his ſon *Sebaſtian* was employed by king *Henry* VIIth, to find out a paſſage to *China* and the *Eaſt Indies*, by the north-weſt: in conſequence of which, he ſet ſail from *England* in 1498, and proceeded as far as 58 degrees of north latitude; from whence he coaſted it all the way to the ſouthward, along the continent of north *America*, as high as *Florida*, where his proviſions fell ſhort, and obliged him to return to *England*. The commotions between the *Engliſh* and the *Scotch*, poſtponed the further proſecution of theſe diſcoveries: upon which, *Sebaſtian Cabot* went to *Spain*, where he was made chief pilot of the kingdom, and was highly careſſed, to prevent his engaging with any other court; though he received an annuity of 166 *l.* 13 *s.* 4 *d.* from the king of *England*, as a reward for his ſervices; becauſe he was juſtly reputed the firſt diſcoverer of the continent in thoſe parts.

PETER ALVAREZ CAPRALIS, an admiral in the ſervice of *Emanuel*, king of *Portugal*, was ſent with a fleet to the *Eaſt Indies*; but was carried by a ſtorm on the coaſt of *Braſil*, which he firſt diſcovered, and which has ſince proved of infinite benefit to his nation. From whence it is natural to believe, that if *Columbus* had not expreſsly

gone

gone in ſearch of the new world eight years before, a paſſage to it would now have been opened by means of this accidental diſcovery.

THE *Pinzons*, and others, who had accompanied the admiral *Columbus* in his voyages, alſo made ſome further diſcoveries at their own expence, by virtue of commiſſions given them by king *Ferdinand*, who gave little encouragement to *Columbus*; becauſe he was jealous of the authority which that great man had acquired, on account of the agreement made with him, when he firſt ſailed in ſearch of the *Indies*: which appears the more probable, from the conduct of the king, after the death of the admiral; for his majeſty then readily granted commiſſions for new diſcoveries, and treated all ſuch as made them very favourably. But, after the death of *Columbus*, there were two cauſes which principally prevented the progreſs that might otherwiſe have been expected in theſe parts from the diligence of the *Spaniards*. The firſt was, the avarice of the *Spaniſh* government, which calculated the worth of adventures barely by ſuch returns of wealth as they ſent into *Spain*; whereby they were induced to act ſo rapaciouſly, as frequently to hazard, for the ſake of a little gold, the poſſeſſion of whole countries full of commodities of great value. And the ſecond cauſe was, the diſtance the *Spaniards* were at from their own country, and the neceſſity there was of truſting ſeveral commanders with independent commiſſions: which not only occaſioned ſeveral mutinies, but inſpired the *Spaniſh* officers with ſuch a ſpirit of cruelty againſt the native *Indians*, as tended to the depopulating of thoſe well inhabited countries, and

rendered them far leſs beneficial than they otherwiſe would have been to the barbarous invaders.

COLUMBUS died in a full conviction, that what he had diſcovered on the coaſt of *Darien*, was the ſame continent with the *Eaſt-Indies:* for the natives confirmed him in his miſtakes, by their reports; becauſe, whatever queſtions he aſked, they anſwered in the affirmative, from a mean deſire of flattering their new maſters. But, when the admiral was dead, the ſucceeding adventurers were led by chance, or reports, never pretending to make diſcoveries by rule or reaſon; which ſometimes was attended with happy conſequences; and at others, drew them into great inconveniencies; for, being ignorant in what manner to proportion their forces to the exploits upon which they went, the *Spaniſh* commanders frequently loſt the greateſt part of their men by war and ſickneſs; ſo that they were ſometimes brought to ruin, inſtead of making any acquiſitions either of wealth or territory.

VASCO NUNEZ de BILBOA, was the next conſiderable diſcoverer, being a man of great parts, and high ſpirit. He made an entire conqueſt of *Cuba*, and found it to be an iſland: after which, he ſailed to the river of *Darien*, on the iſthmus of *America*, where *Columbus* had ineffectually attempted to make a ſettlement. *Nunez* erected a fort, and built a town, which he called *Santa Maria del Antigua*, or *Old St. Mary*'s: he alſo cultivated a friendſhip with the caziques, or *Indian* princes; and, by the advice of one of them, undertook a very troubleſome march through the mountains that run along the middle of the iſthmus, parallel to the north and ſouth ſeas. After

travelling

travelling 25 days, on the 25th of *September*, 1513, he diſcovered the *South Seas*, which no *European* had ever ſeen before, and received an imperfect account of the great empire of *Peru*; which opened a new field for diſcoveries; being in itſelf a much greater exploit than any of his countrymen had yet undertaken. But the *Indians*, who raiſed his hopes by reporting prodigious things of the wealth of the great kingdom, as they called it; at the ſame time, greatly embarraſſed him by poſitively aſſerting, that the inhabitants of this country were a numerous and warlike people; and that it was in vain for him to think of the conqueſt of that country, with the handful of men under his command.

Upon this information, *Nunez* reſolved to attempt nothing, till ſuch time as he received a commiſſion and a reinforcement from *Spain:* but *Peter Arias* was ſent over as governor by king *Ferdinand*, who alſo appointed *Nunez* adelantado, or lieutenant of the *South Seas*. This naturally produced bad conſequences, as *Nunez* and *Arias* were always at variance: though they came to a reconciliation, and *Nunez* was ſent with three hundred men to make diſcoveries in the *South Seas*; who ſettled in that part of the country where *Panama* was afterwards built. The confidence the *Spaniards* had in the conduct of this commander, occaſioned every thing to go on very chearfully, and great expectations were formed from the ſucceſs of his enterprize, when he was ſuddenly recalled to *Darien*, where he was brought to a formal trial, upon a charge of treaſonable expreſſions, ſupported by falſe witneſſes, whoſe perjury gave *Arias* a colour for ſtriking off the head of his rival; though,

at the ſame time, he blaſted the hopes, and broke the ſpirits of his people.

PORTO RICO was diſcovered by *Columbus*, but it was not ſettled till 1509; when *John Ponce de Leon* cauſed it to be inhabited by a colony of *Spaniards*; and, in 1512, ſailed upon new diſcoveries to the continent, where he went on ſhore, took poſſeſſion of a large tract, and called it *Florida*. However, he was no more than a bare diſcoverer, or at moſt he took but a nominal poſſeſſion of the country: for the natives obliged him to reimbark his forces, and return to *Porto Rico*, without being able to make any ſettlement upon the continent.

NOR was *Ferdinand de Soto*, who undertook the conqueſt of *Florida* ſeveral years afterwards, more ſucceſsful, though he had a much ſuperior force: but the *Spaniards* were not fond of planting colonies upon this part of the continent, leaving it to the *Engliſh* and *French*; the former beginning their ſettlements in 1584, under the direction of Sir *Walter Raleigh*; and the latter, in 1534, firſt appeared upon theſe coaſts, under the command of *James Carthier* of *St. Malo*, who firſt diſcovered the river of *St. Laurence*.

FERDINAND CORTEZ, who was born at *Medellin*, a ſmall town of *Eſtramadura* in *Spain*, in 1485, was the moſt illuſtrious perſon of all the adventurers, who ſucceeded the admiral *Columbus*; and diſtinguiſhed himſelf moſt in *America*, by the reduction of the great empire of *Mexico*, which he began in 1518, and compleated in 1521.

IN 1525, *Francis Pizarro*, and *Diego de Almagro*, undertook the conqueſt of *Peru*, which they accompliſhed in 1532.

AND,

And, in 1540, Don *Baldivia*, entered upon the conqueſt of *Chili*, in which he partly ſucceeded, but was unable to get poſſeſſion of the whole.

Thus it may be ſeen how *Columbus* firſt thought the deſign of diſcovering a new world was practicable, and how he happily made the diſcovery; after this opinion, for many centuries, had been maintained by ſome learned men, and exploded by others. *Nunez* afterwards obtained a knowledge of the *South Seas*, or of a ſea to the ſouth of the new diſcovered continent; and a paſſage was ſoon after made into that ſea by *Ferdinand de Magallanes*, who is generally called *Magellan*, and *Ruy Falero*, both natives of *Portugal*, and men of very great experience in the art of navigation.

From the time of the diſcoveries made under the commiſſions granted by their Catholic majeſties, the *Portugueſe* grew extremely jealous of their poſſeſſions in the *Eaſt-Indies*; till the pope interpoſed, and by a bull, which then had a deciſive authority among princes of his own communion, decreed all countries diſcovered in the eaſt to *Portugal*, and all ſuch as were found in the weſt to *Spain*. But this rather ſmothered, than extinguiſhed the flames of contention; both powers continuing to give the greateſt regard to any ſuch propoſitions, as tended to the aggrandizement of the one, at the expence of the other; which encouraged ſuch enterprizing men, as were not gratified at one court, to make immediate applications to the other; though it is not eaſy to be determined, whether this was a greater advantage to their princes in particular, or an advantage to *Europe* in general.

THE court of *Portugal* diſguſted both *Magellan* and *Falero*, on a very trivial account; upon which, they retired to *Spain*, and made propoſitions of new diſcoveries to cardinal *Ximenes*, then archbiſhop of *Toledo*, and governor of *Spain*, upon the death of king *Ferdinand*; who gave them all proper encouragement; notwithſtanding the *Portugueſe* miniſtry uſed their utmoſt endeavours to depreciate the characters and merit of thoſe men whom they had neglected in their own country.

THE poſition which *Columbus* had laid down, of the poſſibility of arriving at the *Eaſt-Indies*, by ſailing weſt, was certainly true, though he had not proved it by demonſtration: but this was the foundation upon which *Magellan* formed his deſign. He knew it was very poſſible to ſail from the *South Seas*, which had been then diſcovered, to the *Molucca* iſlands; and that it was very probable, a paſſage might be found into thoſe ſeas, through the *Rio de la Plata*, or ſome other opening upon that coaſt: therefore, if ſuch a diſcovery could be effected, it would fall expreſsly under the words of the papal bull, as it would be made from the weſt; whereby *Spain* might reap the profit of both *Indies*.

IN conſequence of theſe propoſals, it was agreed, that the undertakers ſhould have the twentieth part of the clear profits: that the government of any iſlands they ſhould diſcover, ſhould belong to them and their heirs for ever, with the title of adelantados: and that the crown ſhould furniſh them with five ſhips, and two hundred and thirty-four men, with proviſions for two years.

THE fleet ſailed from *Seville*, on the 10th of *Auguſt*, 1519, under the ſole command of *Ferdinand Magellan*, who arrived on the coaſt of *Braſil*, and proceeded ſouthwards; carefully examining all the rivers and bays he could diſcover: but, being harraſſed with continual ſtorms, the ſailors grew very uneaſy; and his officers, when they perceived that *Magellan* intended to proceed towards the antarctic pole, remonſtrated againſt what they took to be a romantic proceeding. On this occaſion, *Magellan* imitated the example of *Columbus*; ſhewing himſelf both a brave and ſkilful officer. He called all his people together, to whom he addreſſed himſelf in a long and ſpirited ſpeech; inſiſting much on the bravery of the *Spaniſh* nation, as alſo on the great advantages which would accrue from their going through with this undertaking. By this means he acquired great popularity, and authority ſufficient to puniſh ſome of the mutineers with remarkable ſeverity: after which, he proceeded on his enterprize, ſuffering incredible hardſhips till the beginning of *November*, when he arrived in fifty-two degrees of ſouth latitude, and diſcovered thoſe ſtreights, which have been ſince called by his name, and will perpetuate his fame with the memory of *Columbus*. Through theſe ſtreights *Magellan* came into the *South Seas*, on the 27th of *November*; and continued his courſe, for three months and twenty days, through this vaſt ocean towards the *Moluccas*: but, in his paſſage, he diſcovered the *Philippines*, and landed on the iſland of *Cebu*, where he met with a friendly reception by a pagan prince, whom he converted to chriſtianity: though, by endeavouring to reduce the whole iſland to the obedience of that prince,

prince, *Magellan* was unfortunately killed, in a battle, on the 27th of *April*, 1521. The death of this great man was of bad conſequence to his people; who aſſumed a power of appointing and depoſing their commanders, which brought moſt of them to deſtruction. However, *John Sebaſtian del Cano*, who commanded one of the ſhips called the *Victory*, happily conducted that veſſel, with about thirty-five men on board, ſafe to the port of *St. Lucar*, on the 6th of *September*, 1522; having ſpent three years, and twenty-ſeven days, in this circumnavigation of the globe; being the firſt who performed ſo extenſive a voyage; which now fully demonſtrated the folly of thoſe perſons who held the opinion of the antipodes, as fictitious and heretical.

THE valuable cargo of ſpices brought home by the *Victory*, and a proſpect of carrying on a moſt beneficial trade to the *Indies*, by this new route, engaged the *Spaniſh* government to ſend *Garcia de Loviſa*, with ſeven ſhips, and 450 men, to acquire a more perfect knowledge of theſe ſtreights; which he had the good fortune to paſs; though it proved a moſt unfortunate voyage; for, by one accident or other, all the ſhips were either ſtopped in *America*, or loſt in the *Moluccas*. *Sebaſtian Cabot*, and *Americus Veſputius*, were neither of them able to diſcover the ſtreights of *Magellan*; though they were both employed for that purpoſe by the king of *Portugal*. Many other misfortunes alſo happened in the proſecution of the ſame deſign; ſo that it was neglected, till 1578, when Sir *Francis Drake* happily paſſed theſe ſtreights, and ſurrounded the world; in which he was followed by ſeveral others at different times; particularly, by Sir *Thomas Cavendiſh*

Cavendiſh in 1586, by Sir *Richard Hawkins* in 1593, by *Oliver Van Noort* in 1599, by *George Spilbergen* in 1615, and in 1616 by *William Cornelius Van Schoton*. This laſt adventurer had *James le Maire* on board his ſhip, whoſe name was given to a new ſtreight, that they diſcovered on the 10th of *January*, 1616: ſince which time the ſtreights of *Magellan* have not been ſo much frequented; becauſe the ſtreights *Le Maire* are found much the ſafer of the two; and, therefore, lord *Anſon* paſſed through them, on the 7th of *March*, 1741, when he made his remarkable expedition into the *South Seas*, and round the world, which he performed in three years and nine months. But the circum-navigation of the globe was alſo performed by captain *Dampier* in 1683; by captain *Woodes Rogers* in 1708; by captain *Clipperton*, and captain *Shelvocke*, in 1719; and by commodore *Roggewein* in 1721.

If the diſcovery of *America* had not been made, the trade to the *Eaſt-Indies* muſt have eat up, and deſtroyed the people of *Europe* in general: for, whatever may be gained by the *European* powers, it is an incontrovertible point, that immenſe ſums, in ſilver, are annually ſent from *Europe* to the *Eaſt-Indies*, to make up the ballance of trade in favour of the latter. Upon this account, it was projected to make a diſcovery, by a north-eaſt, or north-weſt paſſage, to *India* and *America*: for it was then eſteemed, as ungenerous, and diſhonourable, to encroach upon, or ſupplant, any other nation in trade, to take the advantage of their diſcoveries.

The many attempts that have been made to find out a north-eaſt paſſage to *Japan* and *China*, ſufficiently prove, that the trading nations of *Europe* are

are fully ſenſible of the many advantages that would neceſſarily reſult from ſuch a diſcovery: becauſe ſhips are now obliged to go round the *Cape of Good Hope*; or, which is ſtill a larger navigation, by the ſtreights of *Magellan*, thoſe of *Le Maire*, or round *Cape Horn*: but, if this north-eaſt paſſage could be made, they might then paſs by the coaſt of *Ruſſia*, and *Great Tartary*, into the ſea of *Japan*, in little more than a three-months voyage. Beſides, ſuch a diſcovery would change the very nature of the *Eaſt-India* trade, by bringing the ballance over to *Europe*; for *Europeans* might then hope to gain as much, by cloathing the inhabitants of the northern countries, as would ballance their commerce with thoſe in other parts. The firſt northern diſcoveries were made at the charge of a company of *Engliſh* merchants, incorporated in the reign of *Edward* VIth, and called, *The merchant adventurers for diſcovering lands unknown*: who employed Sir *Hugh Willoughby*, in 1553, to make the firſt attempt; but himſelf, and all his company, were frozen to death, at the mouth of the river *Arſina* in *Lapland*; where they retired for ſafety from the ice, after having advanced as far as 72 degrees of north latitude.

THE *Engliſh* company ſtill perſiſted in their endeavours to diſcover a north-eaſt paſſage; and, in 1556, fitted out a ſhip under the command of captain *Burroughs*; who diſcovered *Nova Zembla*, and the ſtreights of *Weigatz*, or *Waigats*, which divide *Nova Zembla* from the continent of *Ruſſia*. Captain *Burroughs* was of opinion, that the gulph on the eaſt of that ſtreight was a free and open ſea: which occaſioned a third voyage, in 1580, by captain *Pett*,

and

and captain *Jackman*: but they were both unſucceſsful, and the former was loſt in his return home; whereby the *Engliſh* company were diſcouraged from purſuing ſuch a diſcovery to the north-eaſt: though the *Dutch*, and ſome private *Engliſh* adventurers, afterwards attempted it, when the former ſhook off the *Spaniſh* yoke, and were deſirous of eſtabliſhing a trade to the *Eaſt-Indies*: however, they were unable to find out this paſſage; notwithſtanding captain *Barents*, and captain *Ryp*, ſailed as far as 80 degrees, and diſcovered *Spitzbergen*, or *Greenland*. The difficulty in making a north-eaſt paſſage to *America*, appears to be either in ſailing through the ſtreights of *Weigatz*, or round *Nova Zembla*, or more northwards round *Greenland*: but the *Ruſſians* ſeem confident of making ſuch a diſcovery, by the ſea of *Tartary*, which will enable them to trade with more facility to *Japan*, *China*, and the *Eaſt-Indies*, as alſo to *America*.

When this paſſage, by the north-eaſt, was declined in *England*, ſome experienced navigators turned their thoughts to the north-weſt part of *America*; where there ſeemed a greater probability of obtaining a paſſage; becauſe the difficulties would be leſs; and the diſtance no way ſo great between *Hudſon*'s *Bay*, or *Davis*'s *Streights*, and the north coaſt of *America*, above *California*, as between *Nova Zembla*, and the ſuppoſed ſtreights of *Anian*, near *Japan*.

There are ſeveral arguments urged, not only to prove the probability, but even the reality of a north-weſt paſſage into the *South Sea*, or *Pacific Ocean*. For it is thought probable, there muſt be a free communication of the waters at the pole; becauſe,

becauſe, if it was otherwiſe, it would be difficult to apprehend how the equilibrium of land and water is maintained; or that regularity which is obſerved in the tides, where the ſhores are not covered by iſlands, rocks, or broken lands. Beſides, if there was no ſuch paſſage, there would be much greater changes in the tides towards the pole; as is ſeen in the *Mediterranean*, and *Baltic*, which are cloſe ſeas, and therefore differ from the ocean; there being a ſenſible tide only in ſome parts of the former, and none at all in the latter: but the tides are high, and very regular, in the moſt northern ſeas; which give the ſtrongeſt probability, that there muſt be ſome paſſage, or communication, with the reſt of the ocean. And this argument has the greater force, when confined to *Hudſon*'s *Bay*, where there are ſuch irregular tides, in ſome places, as ſeem to indicate a greater reception of water into that bay, than comes from *Hudſon*'s *Streights*, or any other known paſſage, into the bay: but, from the nature and height of theſe tides, as alſo from the ſituation of the places where they are obſerved, it ſeems almoſt indiſputable that they come by the weſt, either through ſome large and practicable paſſage, or through ſome icy and impaſſable channel: the former being the opinion of Mr. *Dobbs*; and the latter having been aſſerted by captain *Middleton*. Indeed, from the diſcoveries already made on the north-weſt coaſts of *America*, the general opinion of a paſſage is ſo ſtrong and prevalent, that in the charter granted to the *Hudſon*'s *Bay* company, which inveſts them with very extenſive privileges, ſuch as a power of making peace or war, raiſing troops, and the ſovereignty of the lands they ſhould diſcover,

cover, not poſſeſſed by any chriſtian power; it is recited, as a chief motive for the grant, that they ſhould uſe all means for the diſcovery of ſuch a paſſage; to the ſucceſs of which, it was ſuppoſed, that their ſettlement and trade in *Hudſon's Bay*, would greatly contribute: but it is now more reaſonable to imagine, that the company, who monopolize the rich fur trade to themſelves, would be very unwilling to ſuffer any great diminution of ſuch a private beneficial branch of commerce; which will certainly be the caſe, if ſuch a diſcovery be happily effected.

Sir *Martin Forbiſher* was the firſt perſon that attempted to find out a north-weſt paſſage into *America*; who, in 1576 and 1578, made ſeveral new diſcoveries of large bays, ſtreights, iſlands, and capes; to which he gave different names, and took poſſeſſion of the land in the name of queen *Elizabeth*, calling it, *Meta incognita*. He was followed by Sir *Humphrey Gilbert*, in 1582; by captain *John Davis*, in 1585 and 1586, who ſailed as high as 72 deg. 12 min. of north latitude; by captain *Henry Hudſon*, in 1610, who proceeded 100 leagues farther than any had done before, and gave ſeveral names to many places, beſides the ſtreights and bays that ſtill bear his own name; by Sir *Thomas Button*, in 1611, who ſearched out the whole bay known by his name, and diſcovered a large continent, which he called, *New Wales*; by captain *William Baffin*, in 1612 and 1616; as alſo by ſeveral others, and particularly by captain *James*, in 1631, who publiſhed an account of his diſcoveries, by the ſpecial command of king *Charles* Iſt, and declared he was of opinion, that no paſſage could be found by the

the north-weſt; or that, if it was, it would prove of very little advantage.

HOWEVER, ſome public-ſpirited gentlemen, from cloſe obſervations, ſtill retained the opinion, that this paſſage was practicable, and to be diſcovered: but no one has diſtinguiſhed himſelf ſo much in this affair, as *Arthur Dobbs*, Eſq; the preſent governor of *North Carolina*; who, in 1730, drew up his reaſons for maintaining this opinion, and pointed out the many advantages which muſt ariſe to *Great-Britain*, from ſuch a diſcovery. After ſeveral difficulties, his *Britannic* majeſty was pleaſed to approve of the ſcheme communicated by Mr. *Dobbs*; and, in 1741, two veſſels were ſent out on this expedition, under the command of captain *Middleton*, who had been ſeveral years in the ſervice of the *Hudſon*'s *Bay* company: but, after proceeding to 66 deg. 44 min. of N. latitude, he returned without making any diſcovery.

THE principal reaſons which induced Mr. *Dobbs* to think there was a paſſage about the *Welcome*, on the north-weſt part of *Hudſon*'s *Bay*, near the latitude of 64 degrees, were, 1ſt. That, by all accounts, the coaſt in thoſe parts was broken land, or iſlands, with large openings between them. 2d. That there were ſtrong tides from the weſt and north-weſt; alſo that large black whales were ſeen there in plenty, which muſt come from ſome weſtern ocean, none of thoſe animals being found in any other part of the *Bay*. Mr. *Dobbs* had ſtill ſtrong reaſons to perſiſt in this opinion, notwithſtanding the unſucceſsful expedition made by captain *Middleton*; and, the probability of the paſſage being grounded on ſuch proofs, application was made

made to the parliament, to have the diſcovery encouraged by a reward from the public. Accordingly, a law paſſed for that purpoſe, in 1744; the preamble of which recited, that the diſcovering a north-weſt paſſage through *Hudſon*'s *Streight*, to the weſtern *American* ocean, would be of great benefit and advantage to the kingdom; and that it would be a great encouragement for adventurers to attempt the ſame, if a public reward was given to ſuch perſons as ſhould make a perfect diſcovery of the ſaid paſſage. It was therefore enacted, "That if any ſhips or veſſels, belonging to his majeſty's ſubjects, ſhould find out, and fall through, any paſſage by ſea, between *Hudſon*'s *Bay* and the weſtern ocean of *America*, the owners of ſuch ſhips, or veſſels, ſhould be intitled to receive, as a reward for ſuch diſcoveries, the ſum of twenty thouſand pounds."

THUS it may be ſeen, in how ſhort a ſpace of time, after the new world was diſcovered, the whole of it, from north to ſouth, was not only ſurveyed, but conquered and ſettled; whereby great improvements were made; though, it is highly probable, they would have been much greater, if the nobleſt provinces had fallen into any other hands but the *Spaniards*, whoſe indolence has been adequate to their pride, and their cruelty to their avarice.

HOWEVER, great parts of *America* are now under the dominion of other *European* powers, who would not ſtand idle ſpectators of the acquiſitions and conqueſts made by the *Spaniards*, without endeavouring to obtain ſome ſhare in the new diſcovered countries. The *Portugueſe* fell upon the ſouthern, and the *Engliſh* upon the northern parts of *America*;

by which the former got poſſeſſion of *Braſil*; while the latter made themſelves maſters of *Virginia*, *Maryland*, *Carolina*, and other provinces on the continent; as alſo of *Jamaica*, *Barbadoes*, *Antigua*, *Bermudas*, *Newfoundland*, and other iſlands. The *French* obtained a great tract of land along the river *Canada*, and ſome iſlands: the *Dutch* ſecured to themſelves a good ſettlement at *Curaſſow*, as alſo at *Surinam* in ſouth *America*: and the *Danes* took poſſeſſion of one of the *Caribbee* iſlands.

Spaniſh

Spanish AMERICA.

PART II.

South AMERICA.

PART II.

A

NEW HISTORY OF *AMERICA.*

PART II.

CHAP. I.

The DESCRIPTION *of* CHILI.

SECTION I.

The general diviſion of AMERICA: *with an account of the poſſeſſions belonging to the* SPANIARDS, *and in what manner their provinces are governed.*

THIS new and extenſive world, is variouſly divided by geographers, but generally into continent and iſlands: though the former is commonly ſubdivided into north and ſouth *America*; which, ſometimes, are diſtinguiſhed by the particular names of *Mexico* and *Peru*: for theſe two large territo-

ries are almoſt cut aſunder by the ſea, on the eaſtern and weſtern ſide; being only joined by the iſthmus of *Darien*, about 54 miles broad; which ſeparates the north and ſouth ſeas, by a line drawn acroſs the iſthmus from *Porto Bello* to *Panama*; the one town lying in 9 degrees, 39 minutes; and the other in 9 degrees, of north latitude: ſo that theſe two continents, being ſubdivided into their ſeveral kingdoms, diſtricts, or provinces; ſouth *America* contains the eight provinces of *Terra Firma*, *Peru*, the land of the *Amazons*, *Braſil*, *Chili*, *Paraguay*, *Terra Magellanica*, and *Terra Antarctica*, or *Terra Auſtralis Incognita*. And north *America* comprehends the five provinces of *Mexico*, or new *Spain*, new *Mexico*, or *Granada*, *Florida*, *Canada*, and *Terra Arctica*.

THE *American* iſlands are commonly divided into northern, middlemoſt, and ſouthern. The chief northern iſlands are *Newfoundland*, *Cape Breton*, and ſome others of inferior note. The middlemoſt are called by the general name of *Antilles*; which are divided into the greater or leſſer: *Cuba*, *Jamaica*, *Hiſpaniola*, and *Porto Rico*, being among the former; and thoſe called the *Caribbees*, the *Lucayes*, *Sotto Vento*, and *Bermudas*, being among the latter.

UPON the diſcovery of *America*, the *Spaniards* poſſeſſed themſelves of the moſt extenſive parts, and which abounded moſt in opulence: from whence they have annually derived ſuch immenſe treaſures, that it may well be ſaid, the kingdom of old *Spain* is entirely dependent on new *Spain*, for the ſupport of her finances; ſo as to owe all her former grandeur, and her preſent exiſtence, to the *American* colonies.

THE

THE *Spaniards* have all ſouth *America* on the continent, except *Braſil* on the weſtern ocean, which belongs to the *Portugueſe*; and alſo, except ſome parts either of *Chili*, or in the *Magellanic* land, and on the iſthmus of *Darien*, whoſe inhabitants they have not yet been able to bring under their ſubjection; on which account, they call them *Indios Bravos*, or brave *Indians*: to which may be added, the great country of the *Amazons*, and almoſt the whole country of *Guiana*, where the *French* and *Dutch* have ſome ſettlements; but where the *Spaniards* have no conſiderable poſſeſſions.

SPAIN is alſo in poſſeſſion of the richeſt and beſt part of north *America*, as far as *Miſſiſippi*, *California*, and *Florida*: beſides which, they have the iſlands of *Cuba*, *Porto Rico*, the ſouth part of *Hiſpaniola*, and ſome others of leſs conſideration.

BUT the *Spaniards* give the general name of *Peruviana* to all their poſſeſſions in ſouth *America*, where the ſeveral provinces are all under one governor, whoſe reſidence is at *Lima*, and whoſe ſtile is that of vice-roy and captain-general of *Peru*. However, ſome diſtinction has been made between theſe two offices; becauſe the commiſſions, ſalaries, and powers of both are different, though inveſted in the ſame perſon: yet, in *Mexico*, there are ſometimes a vice-roy, and a diſtinct captain-general.

As it appears almoſt an impoſſibility for one man to govern territories of ſuch great extent, and ſo far from each other, the vice-roy of *Peru* has his government divided into the ſeveral diſtricts of *Peru*, *Chili*, *Terra Firma*, and *La Plata*, or *Paraguay*: ſo that the vice-roy only enjoys a

pre-eminence, with a reſervation of ſome caſes in appeal, and the ſupreme direction of military affairs; for, in other reſpects, the governors of the other diſtricts ſeem independent of his authority.

THE government is divided into ſeveral audiences, which are ſomewhat ſimilar to the preſent parliaments of *France*; each of them conſiſting of a certain number of judges, appointed by his Catholic majeſty, with officers dependent upon them; and the whole is under the direction of a preſident, who is ſupreme throughout his juriſdiction. Every audience is divided into four chambers, or royal courts: the firſt is called the *Chamber of Juſtice*, where all things are tranſacted relating to the adminiſtration of public affairs: the next is the *Criminal Court*: the third is a kind of *Royal Exchequer*, for the management of all matters concerning the revenue: and the laſt is ſtiled the *Chamber of Treaſure*, or *Court of Aids*, which takes care of the royal funds, and whatever property appertains to the crown; becauſe the exchequer manages only the rents, duties, fines, and the current revenue.

THE vice-roy, and the preſidents, are uſually conſtituted for ſeven years; and the governors of ſome places of importance for five years: but the far greater part of the governors enjoy their authority only for three years, and owe their preferment entirely to the will and pleaſure of the vice-roys. The ſettled appointment of the vice-roy is forty thouſand pieces of eight, or about ſeven thouſand one hundred and fifty four pounds ſterling a year; excluſive of occaſional ſalaries and perquiſites; the former of which amount to double that ſum, and

the

the latter exceed all computation. But when this high office is vacant, either by death or diſmiſſion, the government is adminiſtered by the royal audience, which is that of *Lima*.

SECTION II.

Containing a deſcription of the audience of Chili; *with its boundaries, the face of the country, the ſeaſons, airs, and climate. An account of the* Andes, *or* Cordillera *mountains; with their phœnomenas, vulcanoes, ſprings, lakes, and rivers. And alſo, a ſhort account of the* Chileſian Indians; *their perſons, cuſtoms, and government.*

THOUGH *Mexico* was conquered in 1521, by *Cortez*, and *Peru* was reduced in 1532, by *Pizarro*; both of which were before the time that *Baldivia* made any ſettlement in *Chili*; it will be more eligible to trace the *Spaniſh* territories in *America*, according as they geographically appear upon the face of the maps, than to adhere to the method and time of conqueſt, which would neceſſarily bring confuſion upon the face of the hiſtory: therefore, it will be proper to begin with the province of *Chili*, which extends to the moſt ſouthern part of the continent; and ſo proceed down to the northern provinces, as far as *Florida*.

SOME writers, particularly *Ovalle*, extend this country ſouthwards, as far as the ſtreight of *Magellan*; and ſome of them alſo include the whole iſland of *Terra del Fogo*, as alſo part of *Patagonia*, in this diſtrict, making it run from 26 to 57 degrees

grees of ſouth latitude; but its real bounds are far from being ſo extenſive: for the proper diviſion of *Chili*, lies along the coaſt of the *South Sea*, between 26 and 45 degrees of ſouth latitude, and between 47 and 54 degrees of weſt longitude: being bounded by *Peru* on the north, by the province of *La Plata* on the eaſt, by *Patagonia* on the ſouth, and by the *Pacific Ocean* on the weſt: ſo that it is about twelve hundred miles long, and ſix hundred broad in ſome places; for though the country, which is properly called *Chili*, is not above ſixty or ninety miles from the ſea, to the great chain of mountains called, by the *Spaniards*, *Cordillera*, or *Sierra Nevada de los Andes*; yet his Catholic majeſty, in the diviſion of the bounds of the ſeveral governments of *America*, added to *Chili* the large plains of *Cuyo* or *Chicuito*, which extend, on the other ſide of the mountains, the whole length of *Chili*, and are above twice as broad.

THE face of this country is beautiful, and the climate very temperate. The coaſt is a high bold ſhore, and the interior part of the country abounds with hills; but above them all, are the *Andes*, which are the higheſt mountains in the known world, extending the whole length of ſouth *America*, through the countries of *Peru* and *Chili*, parallel to, and at a little diſtance from the *Pacific Ocean*; being covered with ſnow in the warmeſt climate, and from thence called the *Sierras Nevada*, or *ſnowy mountains*.

As this country lies to the ſouth of the equator, the ſeaſons here are almoſt oppoſite to thoſe in the northern parts of the hemiſphere: for the ſpring in *Chili*, begins about the middle of *Auguſt*, and

continues

continues to the middle of *November*; when the ſummer begins, which laſts to the middle of *February*: then the autumn follows, and holds to the middle of *May*; being ſucceeded by winter, which bares all the trees of their leaves, and covers the earth with white froſt. There is little ſnow in the vallies, or low ground: but ſuch great quantities fall upon the mountains, as ſometimes to fill up all the hollow places to a great heighth; from whence it afterwards ſtreams out, or ſupplies many ſprings and rivers, which give ſuch fertility to the plains and vallies, as to make them produce infinite crops of all ſorts in their proper ſeaſons.

The air is very temperate in ſummer; though it lies ſo near the torrid zone: for it is covered on the eaſt by the *Andes*, which are all prodigiouſly elevated: while, on the weſt, it receives the freſh and cooling breezes from the ſea. Beſides, the tides greatly contribute towards refreſhing the air; becauſe they penetrate as far as the foot of the mountains: ſo that neither the heat, in ſummer, is intenſe; nor the cold, in winter, ſevere; eſpecially from about the 34th degree: for which reaſon, the inhabitants of the city of *Conception*, who lie in that ſituation, have the ſame covering for their beds both in winter and ſummer. But, in ſome other parts, it is as cold as moſt places in *Europe*; which proceeds chiefly from ſome of the neighbouring mountains, that ſend out ſuch ſharp and piercing winds, as are ſometimes intolerable: therefore, the ſea-coaſt is more temperate and mild; though more expoſed to vehement ſtorms than the inland parts, becauſe the ſtorms are almoſt ſpent before they arrive far up the country. Thunder is ſometimes heard;

heard; but it is at ſo great a diſtance, up in the mountains, that the country is free from lightening. There is no hail in ſpring or ſummer; nor are there ſo many cloudy days in winter as in other parts; but generally, after the rain has continued two or three days, the ſky clears up with great ſerenity: for, as ſoon as the north-wind ceaſes, the ſouth-wind ſucceeds, and in a few hours drives away the rain: or, if it happens during the night, the dew falls, and the ſun riſes with additional luſtre. Some trees loſe their leaves in winter, and others preſerve a perennial verdure: for, though they are covered with ice and ſnow, the cold is ſo far from injuring them, that, when the ſun diſſolves the froſt, they look more green and beautiful.

THE country of *Chili* has ſtill another advantage, which conſiſts in its being free from poiſonous creatures; ſuch as vipers, ſnakes, ſcorpions, and toads: nor are there any tygers, panthers, or other rapacious animals, except ſome lions of a ſmall kind, which ſometimes prey upon flocks of ſheep, or herds of goats; but always ſhun the appearance of men, not only in cultivated lands, but in woods and ſolitudes.

ALL this muſt be underſtood of the countries which lie to the weſt of the *Andes:* for what is beyond thoſe mountains, as the land of *Cuyo*, *Tucuman*, and *Buenos Ayres*, though ſituated in the ſame latitude with *Chili*, are very different from it in climate. In thoſe parts it freezes with ſuch ſeverity, that the cattle will periſh with cold, if they are left abroad. There is no rain all the winter; for the ſun ſhines ſo bright, and clear, that no cloud is to be ſeen: but, there is ſuch abundance of rain in the ſpring,

that

that it would overflow the whole country, if it was to continue as long as in *Chili:* at which time, ſome thunder-ſtones fall, as alſo hail-ſtones of an incredible ſize, according to the *Spaniſh* writers, particularly *Ovalle*, who aſſerts that he has ſeen ſome of them as big as the eggs of oſtriches; though, if he had contented himſelf with a much ſmaller dimenſion, he would have obtained much greater credit. All theſe ſtorms, and varieties of weather, form themſelves in the high mountains, which are a kind of wall to the province of *Chili*; and they never come ſo far down as to invade its territories, but ſtop at them as at a barricado: for, in *Chili*, the weather is always conſtant, without ſudden alterations all the ſpring, ſummer, and autumn; though, in winter, there are degrees of heat and cold, as there is a difference in the length or ſhortneſs of the days, according to the degrees of the latitude, and courſe of the ſun, which cauſes the ſame variation as in *Europe*, except that it is in oppoſite months: from whence, *Ovalle* ſays, there muſt be a great reſemblance between the animals and other productions of *Chili*, and thoſe of *Europe*; as alſo, that there is little difference between their climates and ſoils. Therefore, he concludes, it is very remarkable, that, in ſuch variety of diſcoveries made in *America*, none is ſo conformable in every thing with the *European* conſtitution, as this tract of *Chili:* for, in moſt of the places between the tropics, as *Braſil*, *Carthagena*, *Panama*, *Porto-Bello*, and thoſe coaſts in that ſituation, the heats are not only violent, but continue all the year: and, in ſome other places, ſuch as *Potoſi*, and the mountains of *Peru*, the cold is as exceſſive: in ſome they

they have a winter without rain, and have their rain in ſummer when the heat is greateſt; others have neither wine, oil, or wheat, of their own product; or, if there are ſome who have theſe productions, they are incapable of bearing the other fruits of *Europe*: but *Chili* has its four periodical ſeaſons of ſpring, ſummer, autumn, and winter, like *Europe*; and the product of *Europe* agrees with the ſoil of *Chili*.

THE heavens and ſtars of *Chili* are remarkable for their clearneſs and beauty. If the ſtars of the arctic pole, appear with more magnitude than thoſe of the antarctic; yet, as to their ſplendor, their numbers, the light they afford, and the purity of the heavens where they are, the advantage is on the ſide of the antarctic; which is owing to the temperature of the climate: for, as the country of *Chili* inclines to dryneſs, rather than humidity, the ſun raiſes few vapours; therefore, the air is clearer, and the brightneſs of the ſtars more conſpicuous. This alſo occaſions the ſun to riſe and ſet in ſo glorious and reſplendent a manner; though, on the other ſide of the *Andes*, the radiant beauty of its beams are clouded and enfeebled by the vapours of the earth. But the experience of this is ſtill more admirable to thoſe who ſail from *Peru* for *Chili*; who are immediately ſenſible when they come to the heighth of *Chili*, by the azure beauty of the horizon, which they perceive diſengaged from clouds, gilded and glorious; with its luſtre increaſing upon them every day, as they gain more heighth towards the pole. Though, on the contrary, when they ſail for the line, from *Chili*, the nearer they approach to the tropic, that light and ſplendor grows duller and weaker.

PETER

PETER THEODORE, a ſkilful navigator, and a judicious aſtronomer, ſays, there are fourteen conſtellations in the hemiſphere of *Chili*: the *Cameleon*, containing ten ſtars; the *Indian Aſpic*, four; the *Flying Fiſh*, ſeven; the *Dorado Fiſh*, five; the *Hydra*, fifteen; the *Toncan*, eight; the *Phœnix*, fourteen; the *Crane*, thirteen; *Noah*'s *Dove*, eleven; the *Indian Sagittary*, twelve; the *Peacock*, eleven; the *Bird of Paradiſe*, or *Maaucodiata*, twelve; the *Triangle*, five; and the *Cruzero*, four. The *Cruzero* is the guide for mariners who ſail into the *South-Sea*; as the *Cynoſura* is to thoſe who navigate the north ſea; but it is thirty degrees from the pole: for, as there are no ſtars of that magnitude near the pole, the *Cruzero* is made uſe of for that effect, though not for the needle; becauſe, *Ovalle* ſays, the needle in either ſea, whether ſouth or north latitude, always turns to the north; notwithſtanding, when mariners are in the *South Sea*, the whole globe of the earth, or much the greateſt part of it, is between them and the north, according to the circle made by the *Cruzero*.

THE *Andes*, or *Cordillera* of *Chili*, are one of the greateſt prodigies of nature; being a chain of high mountains, about four thouſand five hundred miles long, and one hundred and twenty miles broad; with many intermediate vallies, which are habitable as far as the tropics, but not beyond them, becauſe of the perpetual ſnows with which they are always covered. The aſcent is ſo prodigious, that three or four days muſt be ſpent in arriving to the top of them, and as many more in the deſcent; that is, what may be properly called, from and to the bottom of the mountain: for, otherwiſe, it may be

be affirmed, that paſſengers begin to mount even from the ſea-ſide; becauſe the whole way is one extended ſhelving coaſt; on which account, the rivers run with ſuch impetuoſity, that their ſtreams are like mill-ſtreams, eſpecially near their ſources.

ANTONIO de HERRERA ſays, there are two chains of mountains in the *Andes*; one being much lower than the other, covered with ſtately woods and beautiful groves; which is owing to the fine temperature of the air: but the cold is ſo ſevere upon the higher, that the mountains are bare even of buſhes, without graſs, or any kind of plant upon them; though there are ſeveral animals on both mountains. The *Incas* of *Peru* cauſed two grand highways to be cut through the *Andes*; one of them 2700 miles in length from *Poſto* to *Chili*, and twenty-five feet broad; being well paved, and having noble buildings at the diſtance of every twelve miles; ſome of which are ſtill exiſting; for there are places, called *Tambos*, ſomewhat like *European* inns, where every thing neceſſary is to be found by travellers. The other way went by the plain, at the foot of the mountains; being alſo twenty-five feet broad, with the ſame proportion of buildings; having ſtreams and rivulets, brought there by art, for the refreſhment and recreation of travellers. But theſe two highways are united when they come near to *Chili*, where there are nothing but continual mountains, ſerving for walls and fortifications, on each ſide, to one which riſes in the middle infinitely higher than the reſt, and is, properly called, the *Cordillera*.

WHEN travellers aſcend the higheſt point of the mountains, they feel ſo piercing and ſubtile an air, that

that it is with much difficulty they can breathe. *Herrera* obſerves, that thoſe who paſs the *Andes* in *Peru*, are greatly afflicted with vomitings: but *Ovalle* aſſerts, it is otherwiſe about *Chili*; where travellers are never troubled with vomitings: though, he ſays, they go through theſe mountains as if they were treading upon clouds; ſometimes ſeeing the vallies without any oppoſition to their ſight; and, when they look up, being unable to ſee the heavens for clouds: but, as ſoon as they are aſcended to the higheſt part of the mountain, they can no longer perceive the earth for the clouds beneath them; the heavens being one clear and unclouded expanſe, through which the ſun darts out his glorious effulgence.

THE *Iris*, or *Rainbow*, which, in the vallies, is ſeen croſſing the heavens, from this height is extended under the feet of travellers: nor is it leſs admirable, while they travel over theſe hills, and perceive tempeſts and ſtorms falling into the vallies at a diſtance, that the ſerenity over their heads is ſo great, that no cloud is to be ſeen to diſcompoſe the beautiful proſpect.

THERE are ſixteen vulcanoes in this chain of mountains; which, at ſeveral times, have opened with ſuch horrible exploſions, as to cauſe very terrible and aſtoniſhing effects to all the circumjacent countries. The firſt of theſe vulcanoes, is called, the vulcano of *Copiapo*, being in about 26 degrees 20 minutes of ſouth latitude; in 30 degrees, is that of *Coquimbo*; in 31½, that of *Ligua*; in 35, that of *Peteroa*; in 36, that of *Chillan*; in 36½, that of *Antoco*; in 37½, is that of *Notuco*; in 39, that of *Villarica*; in 40, is that of *Oſorno*; about ½ a deg.

farther, is that of *Chuanauca*; in 42 deg. ¼, is that of *Quechucabi*; one, called *Minchimavida*, in 44; and, in 46, that of *Saint Clement*. Theſe are the known vulcanoes of *Chili*; though there may be others which extend as far as *Terra del Fogo*. They are repreſented to be as terrible as the eruptions of *Mount Etna* in *Sicily*, or *Mount Veſuvius* in *Naples*: however, the deſolation which they cauſe, is attended with one happy conſequence; for the earthquakes in *Chili* have always been conſiderably leſs than thoſe in *Peru*; becauſe *Chili* has more vents for the exhalations of combuſtible vapours.

THE difference which may be obſerved in paſſing the *Andes*, on the eaſt and weſtern ſide of the mountains, make them appear as if they were in very remote regions from each other: for, on the ſummit of the mountains, both horizons may be diſcovered; that towards the eaſt, being enveloped with ſuch thick vapours, as prevent the flow of light, and overſhadow all the country: while the heavens are ſo bright and placid towards the weſt, as to give infinite pleaſure to the eye of the beholder. There is alſo a difference in the trees, plants, and animals, on each ſide of the mountains. In going down to the eaſtward, the fountains and rivers are few and muddy; the face of the land melancholy; and no tree, or verdure, to recreate the ſight, unleſs in thoſe parts where the heats begin to grow intolerable: but, as ſoon as travellers deſcend to the weſtward, they meet with lovely ſprings, umbrageous trees, fragrant groves, and pleaſant vallies: the mildneſs of the ſea air is felt from the foot of the mountains; the harmony of the birds is delightful to the ears, and many other objects charming to

the

the eye. On the eaſt ſide, there are no cultivated lands, nor any paſture for the feeding of flocks: but on the weſt ſide of the mountains, the ſprings fertilize the fields below, keeping the earth freſh and green all the year; nouriſhing ſuch variety of trees, and ſo admirably diſpoſed, that they appear like a beautiful plantation, many of them being loaded with the fruits of the country, ſome of which are delicious to eat, and others afford excellent liquors for the *Indians*: the vallies are full of odoriferous flowers, and phyſical plants; as alſo of olives, almonds, and all ſorts of fruit trees: the plains have flouriſhing vineyards, which make elegant wines; and the little hills afford the pureſt herbage.

THESE mountains are ſuppoſed to be very rich in mines; but two cauſes may be aſſigned, why theſe riches are not diſcovered: the firſt, being that general and inviolable maxim among the *Indians*, of concealing all their treaſures from any other nations; for if any one among them, either out of intereſt, negligence, or a motive of conveniency, ſhould diſcover any thing of this kind, his death would be inevitable, and no power on earth could ſave him from the revenge of his countrymen. The other reaſon for not ſeeking after theſe mines, is, the great plenty which *Chili* affords of all the neceſſaries for life: ſo that hunger, which is the prompter of avaricious deſires, has no inducement to run any perilous hazards, or attempt to penetrate through extenſive deſarts, in ſearch of hidden treaſures; eſpecially, as ſuch quantities of gold are found in the vallies and rivers, as to prevent the inhabitants from working the mines in the low

countries: but, if the *Spaniſh* coloniſts ſhould increaſe in this country, and raiſe the price of proviſions, they might be more ingenious and induſtrious; which would oblige them to ſeek for ſuſtenance under ground, from the mines and treaſures concealed in the bowels of theſe mountains.

THE *Andes* begin to be covered with ſnow, as ſoon as the firſt rains of the winter deſcend, which happens about the middle of *May*; and the mountains are ſhut up by it, five or ſix months in the year; ſo that they are impaſſable till *October* or *November*: for, even in the middle of ſummer, when travellers are almoſt fainting with exceſſive perſpiration at the bottom of the mountains; they are obliged to put on double cloathing, when they arrive near the ſummit; as alſo to fortify the ſtomach with warm things, to withſtand the ſharpneſs of the cold, and the ſubtileneſs of the air, which penetrates the body if it is not well defended. It is from this ſeverity of cold in the mountains, that the country has received its name; for, in the language of the *Indian* natives, *Chili* ſignifies *Cold*: but it is neceſſary to obſerve, that, when authors ſpeak of the exceſſive coldneſs of the country, they mean only theſe mountainous parts, whereby the truth of what hiſtorians relate differently, may be reconciled; becauſe, as moſt of them were unacquainted with the country, they made no diſtinction between the mountains and the plains; the former having all the bad effects of cold, which has been related of them, particularly the *Pampas* of *Cuyo* and *Tucuman*, on the eaſt ſide of the *Andes*; though the moiſture of the ſea-air tempers the ſharpneſs of the blaſts from the mountains, as they

ruſh

ruſh upon the vales, rendering the plains both fertile and delightful.

THERE are frightful precipices, and deep rivers, at the ſides of the narrow paſſes in the *Andes*: which frequently occaſion the loſs of mules and travellers. The ſtreams run with ſuch violence, and ſo far below the roads, that they bring a dizzineſs in the head by looking at them: the aſcents and deſcents are ſo ſteep, that they are difficult to paſs on foot; but the difficulty of the way is ſomewhat alleviated by the beautiful caſcades, which the water forms in the rocks and mountains: beſides, the water naturally ſprings up to a great height in ſome of the vallies, like artificial fountains, among odoriferous plants, and beautiful flowers, which yield a delightful proſpect. All theſe ſprings and ſtreams are ſo very cool, that a man cannot drink above two or three ſips at once, nor hold his hand in them above a minute: but, in ſome places, there are hot ſprings, which leave a green tincture in the channel where they paſs, and are of ſervice in ſeveral diſtempers.

THERE are numerous ſprings, lakes, and rivers, throughout the whole extent of the *Andes*: but the moſt conſiderable of the freſh-water lakes, are in the plains and vallies, ſuch as thoſe of *Tagatagua*, near *St. Jago*; and that of *Puren*, in which the *Chileſians* had an impregnable fortreſs, from whence they were never expelled by the *Spaniards*. There are alſo ſalt-water lakes, which have a communication with the ſea, ſome part of the year: for, in ſtormy weather, the ſea forces a way into them, and leaves them full of fiſh; but the communication of the ſea is ſtopt in *January*, when

the hot weather comes on, which congeals the water, and leaves a cruſt of fine white ſalt, about a foot thick on the ſurface.

THERE are ſeveral ſalutary fountains alſo in the plains and vallies of *Chili*; particularly, one that riſes at the foot of the vulcano of *Villarica*, and runs into an adjacent lake: beſides two more, which riſe near each other, and form the river *Chico*; one of them being hot, and the other cold. The baths of *Rancagua*, near *St. Jago*, are celebrated for the cure of many diſtempers: thoſe of *Mayten*, *Mapocho*, and *Conchially*, are reputed to have the ſame healing virtue: but thoſe fountains are beſt which are at the greateſt diſtance from the *Andes*.

IT is obſerved, that the ſprings and rivers riſe more in the lowlands of *Chili*, than in thoſe of *Peru*. There are upwards of fifty rivers, which riſe in the *Andes*, and run through *Chili*, into the *South Sea*; being joined by many other leſſer ſtreams, which fall into them in their courſe: but none of them are navigable, for veſſels of any conſiderable burthen, far beyond their mouths; becauſe they run only a courſe of about 90 miles from their ſources: all theſe rivers which flow from the *Andes* weſtward, and fall into the *South Sea*, being rapid torrents, generally occaſioned by the melting of the ſnows, and the declivity of the ground. One of theſe rivers, called *Mendoca*, which falls from the eaſtern ſide towards *Cuyo*, has a natural bridge of rocks over it, broad enough for 3 or 4 carts to paſs abreaſt: from whoſe vault ſeveral pieces of ſtone are ſeen to hang, reſembling ſalt; which congeal like icicles, as the water drops from the rock, and are formed into ſeveral ſhapes and colours.

THE

THE other principal rivers are as follow. 1. The *Salada*, or *River of Salt*, which riſes on the confines of *Peru*, and falls into the *South Sea*, in about twenty-ſix degrees of ſouth latitude; whoſe waters are too ſalt to be drank. 2. The *Copiapo*, which riſes in 26 degrees and a half of ſouth latitude, and runs about ſixty miles from eaſt to weſt; forming a bay, and a harbour, at its entrance into the ſea. 3. The *Guaſco*, which riſes in 28 degrees of ſouth latitude, and alſo makes a good harbour. 4. The *Coquimbo*, which diſcharges itſelf into the ſea, in about 30 degrees of ſouth latitude, where it forms a noble bay and port, with beautiful trees on the banks, and particularly myrtles, which make a fine and pleaſant grove. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10. The *Serena*, *Tongoy*, *Limachi*, *Chuapa*, *Longotoma*, and *La Ligua*. 11. The *Aconcagua*, a large deep river, which runs through ſeveral fruitful vallies, and falls into the ſea, in about 32 degrees and a half. 12. The *Maypo*, which riſes in about 33 degrees of ſouth latitude, and runs with ſuch rapidity as to admit only one bridge to be made over it of cables: it enters the ſea with ſo much force, that its waters form a circle, and are diſtinguiſhed a great way: it is brackiſh, but full of excellent trout; and the ſheep which feed on its banks, afford mutton of a delicate taſte. 13, 14, 15, 16. The *St. Jago*, or *Mapocho*, the *Poangue*, *Colina*, and *Lampa*, are rivers which fall into the *Maypo*. The *St. Jago* is divided into ſeveral ſtreams, to water the diſtrict of the ſame name, which it ſometimes overflows. The waters of the *Poangue* are extraordinary clear and ſweet; flowing through veins of metal, which very much help digeſtion; and it runs

ſeveral leagues under ground, fertilizing the land about it, ſo as to produce excellent corn, and fine melons. The *Colina* and *Lampa*, unite together, at about forty miles diſtance from their ſources, and form the remarkable lake of *Cudogues*; which is about two leagues in length, and ſo deep that great veſſels may ſail in it: the banks are covered with trees, that have a verdure all the year round: and it abounds with trouts and ſmelts, which are a great conveniency to the city of *St. Jago*. 17. The *Rapel*, is nothing inferior to the *Maypo*, and receives ſeveral other rapid ſtreams, as the *Cachapoal*, *Tinguiritica*, *Malloa*, and *Chimbarongo*; after which, it falls into the ſea, in about 34 degrees of ſouth lat. 18. The *Lora*, which riſes in 34 deg. and three quarters; receiving the ſtreams of *Tono*, *Peteroa*, and *Mataquito*. 19. The *Maule*, a great river, which riſes in 35 degrees, 20 minutes, and bounds the juriſdiction of *St. Jago*: it receives the *Clear River*, and the *Cauquenes*: having a dock for building of ſhips, near its mouth; and a ferry belonging to the king, for the convenience of paſſengers. 20. The *Itata*, a noble river, which enters the ſea, in about 36 degrees 10 minutes of ſouth latitude; being three times as large, and as deep as the *Maule*: about the middle of its courſe, it is joined by the furious torrent of the *Nuble*; and in moſt places it is paſſed upon rafts, but in ſome it is fordable. 21. The *Andalien*, a ſlow and ſilent river, which enters the pleaſant and ſpacious bay of the *Conception*, in about 36 degrees and three quarters. There is alſo another ſmall river that runs through the middle of the city of *Conception*; a little above which, it falls from a high rock, giving the inhabitants an opportunity

of

of forming all ſorts of water-works from it, among pleaſant groves of laurels, myrtle, and other odoriferous plants. 22. The *Biobio*, which is the largeſt river in *Chili*, and enters the ſea, in 37 degrees of latitude; being between two and three miles over at its mouth: its waters run through veins of gold, and fields of *Sarſaparilla*, which make them very wholſome, and efficacious in ſeveral diſtempers: it is alſo the boundary between the *Indians*, who are friends to the *Spaniards*, and thoſe who are their enemies; for the latter make frequent incurſions upon the former; though the river ſwells ſo much in the winter, that it becomes impaſſable, and occaſions a ceſſation of arms on both ſides. 23, 24, 25, 26. The *Colcura*, *Arauco*, *Labapi*, and *Lebo*; which empty themſelves between 37 and 38 degrees: as alſo the *Coypo*, or *Ralemo*, which reaches the ſea in 38 degrees. 27. The *Imperial*, or *Cauten*, which receives the *Cururava*, the *Eyeiw*, and the *Ladies River*; falling into the ſea in 38 degrees and 40 min. of ſouth latitude. 28. The *Tolten*, about 25 miles from the river *Imperial*, is deep enough for great ſhips where it enters the ſea. 29. The *Queulen*, which is capable of ſmall barks, and diſembogues itſelf about 24 miles from the *Tolten*. 30. The *Valdivia*, or *Baldivia*, which diſcharges itſelf into the ocean in about 39 degrees and 40 minutes of ſouth latitude; being navigable three leagues from the ſea. 31. The *Chalbin*, which is deep, and capable of great veſſels. Ten others called the *Chico*, *Ballena*, *Rabudos*, *Coronado*, *De la Eſperanza*, *Rioſinfundo*, the *Gallegos*, the *Martyrs*, the *Apoſtles*, and the *Giants*. 42. *De la Campana*. 43. and 44. *De los Paxaros*,

or

or the *River of Birds*; and *St. Victorian*. But there are ſeveral other rivers which run among the iſlands, or empty themſelves into the ſtreights of *Magellan*.

ALL theſe rivers run from eaſt to weſt, and diſcharge themſelves into the *South-Sea*: but thoſe which run from the oppoſite parts of the *Andes*, towards the north ſea, are not ſo well known; becauſe thoſe parts are leſs inhabited, or not ſo much frequented by *Europeans*: the moſt remarkable being thoſe of *St. John*, and of *Mendoca*; which are large rivers, and empty themſelves into the lake of *Guanacache*.

THE *Chileſians* are of the middle ſize, well-proportioned, and ſtrong limbed; of a tawny complexion, inclining to a copper-colour, like all the natives both of ſouth and north *America*: their hair is black, and exceeding harſh; their features are tolerably good; their teeth white, and ſound; but their countenance ſeems ſomewhat dejected. They follow the general practice of the *Americans*, in pulling the hair off their chins, and other parts of their bodies, as ſoon as it appears, with tweezers, or nippers, made of ſhells. Their women are moderately tall, ſlender, and well-ſhaped; who braid and curl their hair frequently, letting it grow to an extraordinary length. But the *Chileſians*, who inhabit the province of *Cuyo*, and the plains of *Pampas*, on the eaſtern ſide of the *Andes*, are people of a larger ſtature than thoſe of *Chili*; proper, and of a darker complexion; the women painting their faces, or ſome part of them, with a green colour.

THE firſt account that the *Spaniards* received of *Chili*, was from the *Peruvians*; who ſubdued the northern

northern part of that province, in the reign of their tenth *Inca*, *Yupanqui*: but afterwards met with ſuch a powerful oppoſition from the confederated *Chileſians*, that the *Incas* determined to make the river *Maule* the utmoſt bounds of their empire; and accordingly fortified the banks of it againſt the invaſions of the barbarians, as they called the *Chileſians*, who were then very uncivilized, worſhipped many idols, and had only the patriarchal form of government. Every tribe, or family, was governed by its reſpective head, or chief; who was ſucceeded by his eldeſt ſon, or neareſt relation, on his deceaſe: but, when they were invaded, or had wars with their neighbours, they elected ſome general, who was remarkable for his military ſkill and bravery. Though the *Chileſians*, who inhabited that part of the country which was conquered by the *Incas*, were obliged to conform themſelves to the religion and manners of the *Peruvians*; their emperors making no difference between them and the reſt of their ſubjects.

SECTION

SECTION III.

The firſt invaſion of Chili *by Don* Diego de Almagro: *his expedition; and death. The ſecond invaſion, under Don* Pedro Baldivia: *the ſettlements which he eſtabliſhed: his war with the* Indians; *and death. The conduct of* Francis de Velagra *againſt* Caupolican *the* Indian *general. The war undertaken by Don* Garcia Hurtado de Mendoca, *againſt the* Indians; *and the death of* Caupolican. *In what manner the* Spaniards *eſtabliſhed themſelves in* Chili, *and made peace with the* Indians. *How the* Dutch *and* Engliſh *attempted to ſettle in* Chili. *Reflections on the peace between the* Spaniards *and* Indians. *The number of inhabitants in* Chili; *and ſome farther account of the* Indians.

THIS country was firſt diſcovered by Don *Diego de Almagro*; who began the conqueſt of it about the year 1535: but the *Spaniards* were never able to bring it entirely under their ſubjection: for there are ſeveral *Indian* nations, who have made the *Spaniards* ſenſible they are to be dreaded; eſpecially ſince the middle of the laſt century.

DIEGO de ALMAGRO had a grant, from his Catholic majeſty, of all the country between *Las Chincas* in *Peru*, and the ſtreights of *Magellan*; including half *Peru*, and all *Chili*, which the *Spaniards* then called the new kingdom of *Toledo*. *Almagro* was one of the three adventurers, with *Pizarro*, and *Lugne*, who undertook the conqueſt of *Peru*, after *Peter de Arias* had abandoned his enterprize, in 1525: he was of ſuch mean extraction that it was never

never known who was his father: but he was valiant, ſincere, and merciful; though ſomewhat haughty, and vain-glorious. His co-adventurer *Pizarro*, had been very ſucceſsful in *Peru*, where he made the emperor *Atabalippa* priſoner, and put him to death: but, when *Almagro* received the above-mentioned grant, he inſiſted that the government of *Cuſco*, the capital of *Peru*, was under his juriſdiction, and ſet out to take poſſeſſion of it; though he deſiſted from that attempt, and turned his arms towards *Chili*; for which purpoſe, he amaſſed a prodigious treaſure, and diſtributed it among his men, to buy horſes and arms; promiſing, that what they conquered ſhould be equally divided among the conquerors.

ALMAGRO had an army of 200 *Spaniſh* horſe, 300 *Spaniſh* foot, and a great number of *Indians*, who followed one of their princes; beſides a multitude of ſlaves, with which he entered *Chili*; but met with a brave oppoſition from the natives; who, at firſt, were much intimidated at the *Spaniſh* horſes; though, at laſt, after they had killed ſome of them in an engagement, they took a ſolemn oath, by the great ſun, either to die, or kill them all. The *Spaniards* marched through a deſart and barren country, ſuffering great diſtreſs for want of proviſions; but their affliction was ſo much increaſed in paſſing the *Andes*, that they loſt 150 men and 30 horſes, beſides 10,000 *Indians*, which came from *Peru*. However, *Almagro* deſcended into the valley of *Copiapo*, where he found an opportunity of rendering himſelf popular among the *Chileſians*, by putting an uſurper to death, who had deprived a young prince of his government,

and

and oppreſſed his ſubjects. He then proceeded to the *Promocas*, a nation who inhabited the banks of the river *Maule*, where they bravely oppoſed him, and killed abundance of his men; but were obliged to give way, at laſt, to his horſe and artillery: ſo that, in all probability, *Almagro* would have conquered the whole kingdom in a few years, if he had not returned to *Peru*, in 1537, to take poſſeſſion of *Cuſco*, by virtue of a royal patent, which he received by a meſſenger ſent on purpoſe. This put a ſtop to the *Spaniſh* conqueſts in *Chili*, for that time; and proved fatal to *Almagro*, who took *Cuſco* by force; but was afterwards defeated, and took priſoner by *Pizarro*, who put him to death as a criminal; which was afterwards revenged by the ſon and friends of *Almagro*, who aſſaſſinated *Pizarro*; though the aſſaſſins were puniſhed for the murder.

THE next *Spaniſh* general who entered *Chili*, was Don *Pedro Baldivia*, or *Valdivia*: he had borne arms in *Italy*, and *Peru*, with reputation; and was therefore thought a fit perſon to finiſh this conqueſt; for which he obtained a permiſſion, in 1539, from *Francis Pizarro*, and the vice-roy of *Peru*. He was a whole year in preparing for this expedition, and began it in 1540, with a conſiderable army of *Spaniards* and *Indians*; who, after great difficulties, arrived in the valley of *Copiapo*. The firſt oppoſition that was ſhewn to *Baldivia*, was at *Quillota*, where the *Indians* ſkirmiſhed with him continually, but were incapable of retarding his progreſs: ſo that he advanced as far as *St. Jago*, where he erected a fort, and founded the town of that name, as a place of defence againſt the *Indians*, who

who killed ſo many of his men, that they talked of returning again to *Peru*: but *Baldivia* eaſily compoſed the mutiny, by putting his men in hopes of acquiring immenſe ſtores of gold; which they ſoon diſcovered at the mines of *Quillota*, where he erected another fort to protect his workmen. He then ſent for more aſſiſtance from *Peru*, which he received, when he had ſcarce men ſufficient to defend his forts: though, as ſoon as they arrived, he purſued his conqueſts further, particularly againſt the *Promocas*, with whom he had ſeveral ſkirmiſhes, which obliged him to ſend for further aſſiſtance from *Peru*.

BALDIVIA, in the mean time, founded the city of *Coquimbo*, and fortified it for the ſecurity of his men: but, inſtead of receiving any ſupplies from *Peru*, his aſſiſtance was deſired there by the governor, againſt whom one of the brothers of *Pizarro* had revolted: ſo that *Baldivia* was obliged to return to *Peru*, where, by his valour, and chiefly by his conduct, *Pizarro* was defeated, and put to death with his adherents.

DURING the abſence of *Baldivia* from *Chili*, he left *Francis de Velagra*, or *Villagra*, for his lieutenant, who had a miſunderſtanding with *Pedro Sanchez de Hoz*, to whom his Catholic majeſty had granted the government of the further part of *Peru* and *Chili*; but *Velagra* made him priſoner, and beheaded him: though it is uncertain, whether this was done by the order of *Baldivia*, who appeared very well ſatisfied with his death; becauſe this rival had great pretenſions to moſt of his conqueſts, and looked upon *Baldivia* only as an uſurper.

WHILE

WHILE the *Spaniards* were thus engaged in civil diſſentions, both in *Peru* and *Chili*, the *Chileſians* made their advantage of them, by ſurprizing the *Spaniſh* garriſons of *Copiapo* and *Coquimbo*, putting them to the ſword, and demoliſhing both the towns: it being with difficulty that *Velagra* could defend himſelf, even in *St. Jago*, till the return of *Baldivia*, who brought a good army with him from *Peru*, retrieved his affairs, drove the *Indians* from the vallies of *Copiapo* and *Coquimbo* again, and rebuilt the towns which they had deſtroyed. After this, he ſent a detachment under *Francis Aquerro*, who paſſed the *Cordillera*, and founded the towns of *Diaguitas* and *Jures*, on the other ſide of thoſe mountains; while *Baldivia* himſelf marched againſt the *Promocas*, and founded the city of *Conception* in 1550; where he alſo erected a fort, and ſent out detachments to make further diſcoveries. He then proceeded ſouthward, in the beginning of 1551, with the main body of his army, and ſubdued ſuch of the natives as made any oppoſition: but he was obliged to found the cities of *Imperial*, *Baldivia*, and *Villa Rica*, to keep the *Indians* in obedience.

BALDIVIA loſt abundance of men in this expedition, and underwent a great deal of miſery and fatigue: beſides, he built ſeveral forts, which he garriſoned, to preſerve his new conqueſts; and applied himſelf to the working of the gold mines, in hopes of accumulating a great treaſure, which he intended to carry over to *Spain*; not doubting, by thus adding the weight of his gold to his merit, but he ſhould readily obtain ſuch titles of honour, as that court had beſtowed upon other conquerors,

and

and to return with ſuch a force, as might enable him to enlarge his conqueſts. For this purpoſe, he employed twenty thouſand *Indians*, in digging the mines of *Quilacoya* and *Angol*, which had never been opened before, and thereby enriched both himſelf and his ſoldiers; who afterwards grew ſo indolent and luxurious, as to encourage the *Indians* to a revolt, for recovering the liberty of their country.

The *Chileſians* had never been conquered by the *Spaniards* in ſo many encounters, if they had not been terrified and aſtoniſhed at the exploſion of the artillery, and the firing of the ſmall arms; which, at firſt, the *Indians* imagined to be real thunder and lightening; as alſo, that the *Spaniards* were ſomewhat more than human. But the *Chileſians* were ſoon undeceived, and found their enemies to be only men like themſelves: therefore, they were determined to make another attempt for the recovery of their liberties; being perſuaded, that, by their numbers and courage, they ſhould be able to expel the invaders out of their territories. Nor was this reſolution founded in temerity; for the *Spaniards*, without conſidering that the dread of their arms and their horſes was much abated, grew remiſs and negligent in their military diſcipline, attending more to the acquiſition of riches, than the ſecurity of their conqueſts: while they daily exaſperated the *Indians*, by compelling them to dig in the mines; and, by aſſembling ſo many of them together for that laborious employment, they gave the *Indians* an opportunity of forming a conſpiracy, and executing it with better ſucceſs, than they

could have done, if they had remained ſeparated in their reſpective villages.

THE *Araucans*, or *Araucanos*, were the braveſt nation among the *Chileſians*, and had oppoſed the *Spaniards* with the greateſt ſucceſs, but were obliged to ſubmit: when *Baldivia* reſerved their country for himſelf, in the diſtribution of the lands, and erected three caſtles for the defence of theſe poſſeſſions. He then marched farther ſouthward, where he diſcovered ſo many rich mines, that he employed fifty thouſand *Indians* in working them; and ſpent ſo much time in accumulating treaſure, that the *Araucans* took advantage of his abſence, and engaged the whole country in a conſpiracy againſt the *Spaniards*.

THE confederate caziques were, *Tucapel*, who brought 3000 men: *Angol*, 4000: *Cayocupil*, had 3000, from the *Cordillera*: *Millarapue*, 5000: *Paicavi*, 3000: *Lemoleno*, 6000: *Mareguano*, *Gualemo*, and *Leucopie*, each 3000: *Elicuera*, 6000: *Ongolmo*, 4000: *Puren*, 6000: *Lyncoyce*, 7000: *Peteguelen*, 6000: *Thome*, 5000: *Audalican*, 4000: and *Caupolican*, 8000. The whole *Chileſian* army conſiſted of about eighty thouſand men, who, according to their cuſtom, aſſembled at a kind of feſtival; when it was unanimouſly agreed to riſe againſt the *Spaniards*: but there was ſome difference about the choice of a general, every one deſiring to have that command, as it generally happens in ſuch elections. Each leader alledged ſome particular merit; the one his valour, another his experience, a third his good fortune, and none of them ſeemed to want a pretence of obtaining their deſire. However, they at laſt concurred in electing *Caupolican*,

as

as the braveſt ſoldier, and the ableſt chief: to whom they all ſwore obedience, and promiſed to execute his orders, for the promotion of their common intereſt.

THE *Spaniards* had one of their caſtles near the place of this rendezvous; which the *Indians* were impatient to attack openly: but they were prevented by their general, who took it by ſtratagem. *Baldivia* ſoon received intelligence of this inſurrection, and returned with great expedition to the valley of *Arauca*; depending ſo much on his own courage and fortune, that he would not wait for reinforcements from the other garriſons.

CAUPOLICAN, with twenty thouſand men, met *Baldivia* at *Tucapel*, where he repreſented to the *Indians*, that the *Spaniards* were only one hundred and fifty men; and that a thouſand of his brave countrymen might eaſily maintain their ground againſt ſo ſmall a number; notwithſtanding the advantage which the enemy had in their arms and horſes. Therefore, he divided his army into battalions, conſiſting of a thouſand men in each diviſion; ordering them to charge the *Spaniards* by turns, and to relieve each other as there ſhould be occaſion.

PURSUANT to theſe orders, the firſt battalion engaged the *Spaniſh* horſe with great intrepidity, and held the engagement for a conſiderable time: after which, they leiſurely retired, and were ſucceeded by another battalion, who followed the example of the firſt, and were alſo ſucceeded by others in the ſame manner, for ſeven or eight hours, without intermiſſion; till the *Spaniards* began to faint with the labours of the day, and for

want of refreſhment. *Baldivia* then attempted to make a precipitate retreat, and ordered his men to take poſſeſſion of a paſs, about a mile from the field of battle; where he imagined he ſhould ſtill be able to defend himſelf againſt all the power of *Caupolican*. But a *Chileſian*, whoſe name was *Lautaro*, whom *Baldivia* had baptized, and bred up in his own ſervice as a page, went over to the *Indians*, and directed them to take poſſeſſion of the paſs, before the *Spaniards* could arrive there. He animated them to make uſe of the advantage before them; in the following bold and nervous manner. "What is this, brave *Araucanos?* Do ye turn "your backs, when your liberty is concerned; "when your country, your children, your poſte-"rity, are at ſtake? Either recover your liberty, "or loſe your lives: for it is more happineſs to die "like ſoldiers, then to live like ſlaves. Do ye "intend to ſtain the glory of your anceſtors, ac-"quired in ſo many ages paſt, in one hour? Re-"member ye are deſcended from thoſe who gained "that renown by reſiſting their enemies, and not "flying from them; ſuch as feared neither life "or fortune, to preſerve their fame. Generous "ſoldiers, baniſh all fear, and either live free, "or die honourably." After which, he put himſelf at the head of a company of *Chileſians*, and attacked *Baldivia*; while another detachment of *Indians* ſecured the paſs, as they were directed by *Lautaro*, who gave ſuch courage to his countrymen, that they ſoon cut all the *Spaniards* in pieces, except the general *Baldivia*, whom they took priſoner, bound his hands behind him; and conducted him to *Caupolican*. The *Chileſian* general ordered *Baldivia* to

be

be tied to a tree, that he might be executed with more ceremony than thoſe that periſhed in the field: when the *Spaniſh* general petitioned for his life; which *Caupolican* would have granted him, out of eſteem for his courage; eſpecially as *Baldivia* promiſed, upon oath, that he would retire from the country, with the remainder of his troops. But one of the confederate caziques was ſo much exaſperated, to find the leaſt attention given to ſuch a propoſal, that he gave *Baldivia* a violent blow on the head, with a club: after which, they ſerved him as the *Parthians* did *Cræſus*, by pouring melted gold down his throat; bidding him content himſelf, in this manner, with his inſatiable thirſt after that metal. Then, according to the cuſtom of the *Indians*, they made flutes and trumpets of the bones of his arms, legs, and thighs; keeping his head as a teſtimony of their victory, and to animate their poſterity againſt the *Spaniards*. Beſides, they inſtituted public games of wreſtling, running, leaping, and other proofs of their ſtrength and agility; in commemoration of this conqueſt over the *Spaniards*, and their *Indian* allies; of all whom, only two *Indians* eſcaped, and returned to the city of *Conception*, with the news of this fatal event.

CAUPOLICAN made *Lautaro* his lieutenant-general, for this important ſervice; who afterwards behaved himſelf with great bravery againſt the *Spaniards*. But, after the victory, the *Chileſian* general thought proper to ſend moſt of his army to their reſpective houſes, to refreſh themſelves; leaving guards at proper places, to obſerve the motions of thoſe *Spaniards* who remained in their garriſons.

WHEN the *Spaniards*, at the city of *Conception*, received intelligence of the defeat of *Baldivia*, they aſſembled all their forces which were diſperſed in the ſeveral provinces of *Chili*, and were joined by a great number of their *Indian* allies. They were all commanded by *Franciſco de Velagra*, who was lieutenant-general to *Baldivia*, and marched his forces to the valley of *Arauca*, to give battle to *Caupolican*: but he came to a high mountain in his way, and found *Lautaro* encamped on the top of it, with ten thouſand men. The foot of this mountain was waſhed by the ſea, on one ſide: the paſſage on the other ſide was not difficult; and the top was a plain proper for the engagement. The *Spaniſh* general attacked the *Indians* with three troops of horſe, in hopes of drawing them from their poſt; but in vain: for, though they made three attacks, *Lautaro* maintained his ſituation; receiving them with ſhowers of arrows, ſtones, and darts, which put the *Spaniſh* horſe into diſorder. The *Spaniards* perceived that all the movements of their horſe were of no ſervice, and that the *Indians* were taking the paſſes behind them: whereupon, *Velagra* ordered his men to uſe their fire-arms; which at firſt made a great ſlaughter among the *Indians*: but *Lautaro*, to remedy this inconvenience, ſent a detachment to attack the *Spaniards* in flank, and not to ſtop till they came cloſe up with their muſketeers; when they were to throw themſelves into their ranks, and thereby avoid the ſmall ſhot, which then would prove of little ſervice to the *Spaniards*; becauſe they muſt wound their own men, as well as the *Indians*; who have ever ſince practiſed this ſtratagem with good ſucceſs.

ceſs. The battle was bravely maintained on both ſides, till the *Spaniards* were obliged to make a retreat; which they did, fighting and defending themſelves all the way: but the *Indians* followed ſo cloſe, that they diſmounted the *Spaniſh* general, and would have killed him, if he had not valiantly defended himſelf till thirteen of his men came to his aſſiſtance. The *Spaniards* retreated, and the *Indians* purſued them for eighteen miles together; the latter having killed two thouſand five hundred of the former, including their auxiliary *Indians*.

AFTER this victory, *Lautaro* directed his march towards the city of *Conception*, which the *Spaniards* abandoned, leaving it to be plundered by the *Indians*; who afterwards inveſted the city of *Imperial*; but were obliged to raiſe the ſiege, on account of the great rains which fell at that ſeaſon. The *Spaniards* then returned to *Conception*, and rebuilt the city; which *Lautaro* took again, and demoliſhed it a ſecond time; purſuing the *Spaniards*, with a conſiderable ſlaughter, as far as *St. Jago*, which he alſo intended to beſiege; and erected a fort for that purpoſe in an adjacent valley, where he was killed in a ſudden attack by the *Spaniards*, and his army defeated; though the *Indians* behaved with aſtoniſhing reſolution, preferring their glory to their lives, which they ſo much diſregarded, that they ran furiouſly upon the ſpears of their enemies to come to a cloſe engagement; ſo as to revenge the death of their leader, or periſh in the attempt.

THE governor of *Peru*, apprehending all *Chili* would be loſt, ſent his ſon Don *Garcia Hurtado de Mendoca*, with a powerful reinforcement, to op-

poſe the confederate *Indians*. Part of theſe forces were ſent by land, and *Mendoca* ſailed with the reſt to the iſland of *Quiriquina*, near the city of *Conception*; where the inhabitants at firſt ſeemed to oppoſe his landing, but fled when the cannon of his ſhips began to fire. As ſoon as he was landed, he publiſhed a proclamation, declaring that he was come to ſave the ſouls of the *Indians*, by converting them to chriſtianity; and that, if they ſubmitted, he would treat with them in the name of the emperor *Charles* Vth. This declaration was diſperſed among the *Chileſians*, and ſixteen of their caziques aſſembled to conſult about what was proper to be done upon this occaſion; when after many debates, it was reſolved, that an ambaſſador ſhould be ſent to *Mendoca*, to know upon what terms he would accept of their friendſhip. Accordingly, the cazique *Millalan* was appointed to go upon this embaſſy; who addreſſed himſelf in the following manner to *Mendoca*: "That his "countrymen admitted the terms of peace that "were propoſed, and ſhould obſerve thoſe of "friendſhip; but not out of any terror or appre-"henſion cauſed in them by the arrival of theſe "new forces: for no power was ſufficiently formi-"dable to terrify them, having experienced their "own ſtrength in their late ſucceſs: but they were "incited to an accommodation, out of compaſ-"ſion for ſo many innocent people, ſo many wo-"men and children, who, upon occaſion of "this war, remained widows and orphans. That, "upon fair terms, they would acknowledge the "king of *Spain*; upon condition he would not "concern himſelf in any manner about their

"rights

" rights and liberty: but, if the *Spaniards* had any " intention of acting by violence, and making " ſlaves of the *Chileſians*, that they would ſooner " deſtroy their own children, and themſelves, than " ſubmit to ſo mean, ſervile, and inglorious a con- " dition." *Mendoca* anſwered him in a very friendly manner, made him ſome preſents, and diſpatched him back to give an account of his embaſſy. But the *Indians* only wanted to enſnare the *Spaniards*, by theſe aſſurances of amity; of which *Mendoca* was ſuſpicious, and took the neceſſary precautions for his own ſecurity.

THE *Spaniards* erected a fort, upon the top of a hill, which overlooks the city of *Conception*, and fortified it with eight pieces of cannon. The *Araucanos* obſerved their motions, and ſuddenly attacked the fort, with great ſpirit, and undaunted reſolution; but were obliged to retreat with conſiderable loſs.

IMMEDIATELY after this attack, the *Spaniards* received their horſes from *St. Jago*, and a re-inforcement from *Imperial*: upon which, the *Chileſians* aſſembled all their forces; and the *Spaniards* advanced towards them in the valley of *Arauco*, where they had another bloody engagement, which was to the diſadvantage of the *Chileſians*, one of whom, named *Gaulbarino*, was taken priſoner, whoſe hands were both cut off by the *Spaniards*, to ſtrike an impreſſion upon his countrymen. But the *Indians* were ſo far from being terrified, that their general *Caupolican* ſent a challenge to *Mendoca*, to fight him with all his ſtrength; telling him, he would wait for him in his camp at *Millarapue*. The challenge was accepted, and an obſtinate battle enſued,

ſued, in which the *Chileſians* were at firſt ſucceſsful; but were afterwards obliged to retire, and leave the field to the *Spaniards*: though their retreat was conducted with great honour and reputation. The *Spaniards* took ſeveral priſoners, and among them twelve of the principal *Indians*, whom they inſtantly hanged upon ſo many trees, for an example to the reſt; and alſo put many others to the moſt exquiſite tortures, to force them to reveal ſome particular ſecrets; but their courage was inflexible, and their faith to their country inviolable; ſo that they ſeemed inſenſible of the moſt excruciating pains, and intrepidly ſubmitted to their fate, rather than diſhonourably betray their countrymen.

FROM this place, the *Spaniards* proceeded to the valley where *Baldivia* was defeated, and erected a fort; from whence they made excurſions, and endeavoured to advance their conqueſts. While *Caupolican* called a general aſſembly of the *Indians*, where it was reſolved never to lay down their arms; but either to conquer or die, that they might drive out the *Spaniards*, and reſtore their country to its liberty.

CAUPOLICAN was unſucceſsful in ſome other encounters, which rendered him ſomewhat unpopular among the *Indians*: ſo that he was deſirous of retrieving his character, by undertaking ſome noble enterprize; notwithſtanding *Rengo*, *Orempello*, *Tucapel*, and ſome other of the principal *Chileſians*, diſapproved of his project, and refuſed to give him any aſſiſtance: becauſe, he intended to ſurprize the *Spaniards*, in their fortreſs, by a ſtratagem; which the other chiefs diſdained, as, at moſt, it would be only obtaining a victory by ſurprize or treachery.

Therefore,

Therefore, *Caupolican* was determined to make this attempt by himſelf, and ſent one of his officers in diſguiſe to enter the fort; who communicated the intentions of his general to a young *Indian* in the *Spaniſh* ſervice; but met with a traitor, where he expected a friend. The *Chileſians* were encouraged to the attack, by the young *Indian*; who had acquainted the *Spaniards* with the deſign, and they prepared themſelves for defence. *Caupolican* led his troops to the fort, where the *Spaniards* pretended to be unguarded and aſleep, till many of the *Indians* entered; when they ſuddenly made ſuch a furious diſcharge upon the aſſailants, that few of them eſcaped from the ſlaughter; *Caupolican* himſeif being taken priſoner, after concealing himſelf in a wood, where he intended to abide till he could aſſemble another army.

CAUPOLICAN was deſervedly held in higher eſtimation than any other of the *Chileſian* generals; having defeated *Baldivia*, and put him to death: but he was now to undergo the ſame fate from the reſentment of his enemies, who juſt before trembled at the very mention of his name. *Baldivia* petitioned for his life to the *Indians*; ſo did *Caupolican* to the *Spaniards*, who were equally as unmerciful: for, after this brave general promiſed to cauſe all the country to ſubmit to the king of *Spain*, and to give way for the introduction of the chriſtian religion, his cruel and unrelenting enemies publickly ſentenced him to be empaled alive, and ſhot to death with arrows, for a terror to the reſt of the *Indians*; which ſentence was as barbarouſly executed; though he endured it with the greateſt patience and equanimity.

THE death of *Caupolican* only contributed to render the hatred of the *Indians* more implacable to the *Spaniards*, to make the wound almoſt incurable, and re-kindle the war with more animoſity. After this victory, *Mendoca* rebuilt the cities of *Baldivia* and *Imperial*, which had been deſtroyed; built *Oſorno* and *Mendoca*; divided the country among his principal followers; and returned with great honour to *Peru*. But the *Chileſians* were determined to preſerve their independency, aſſembled freſh forces, and attacked the *Spaniſh* colonies, ſome of which were taken and retaken ſeveral times: ſo that the war continued to be carried on, with great obſtinacy and cruelty, for upwards of fifty years; when it appears, by the *Spaniards* own relation, that they were driven, with great ſlaughter, from moſt of their ſettlements in *Chili*.

ON the 24th of *November*, 1599, five thouſand *Indians* took the city of *Imperial* by ſurprize; plundered the place, killed many of the inhabitants, and took 400 into ſlavery. They carried on their revenge with ſuch indefatigable ardour, that, in 1604, out of the thirteen cities eſtabliſhed in *Chili*, they had deſtroyed five; being *Imperial*, *Baldivia*, *Angol*, *Santa Cruz*, and *Conception*. They afterwards plundered *Oſorno* and *Villarica*: "to which nothing "can be ſaid, ſays the royal hiſtorian *Garcillaſſo* "*de la Vega*, but that theſe were judgments, per- "mitted by God, in his ſecret providence, for the "chaſtiſements of mankind." Though he might have more naturally made this obſervation: "That "theſe calamities, brought on the *Spaniards*, were "only the efforts of a brave and generous people, "ſtruggling for natural liberty, againſt the vio- "lence of their invaders."

THE

THE *Chileſians* were ſo ſucceſsful againſt the *Spaniards*, that the *Dutch Weſt-India* company, in 1642, fitted out a ſquadron, under the command of captain *Brewer*; who was ordered to ſail to the coaſt of *Chili*, and ſettle colonies there: becauſe, they imagined he might ſafely poſſeſs himſelf of ſome of the gold mines; concluding, that all nations, which were enemies to the *Spaniards*, would be received as friends by the *Chileſians*. The *Dutch* defeated a body of *Spaniards*, and took the town of *Carelmappa*, which they burnt, and retired to their ſhips. They afterwards took the town of *Caſtro*, on the iſland of *Chiloe*, and intended to reduce the whole country of *Chili* under the dominion of the ſtates-general of the united provinces; for which purpoſe, they contracted a friendſhip with ſome of the caziques, who readily entered into an alliance againſt the *Spaniards*, and permitted the *Dutch* to erect a fort at *Baldivia*, who ruined the whole ſcheme, by their own indiſcretion. For when the *Dutch* propoſed a commercial intercourſe with the *Chileſians*, and to exchange arms for their gold; the caziques immediately appeared jealous of their new allies, declared they had no gold mines, and that there was no ſuch thing as gold in uſe among the natives. They alſo refuſed to ſupply the *Dutch* with proviſions; whereby they were under a neceſſity of relinquiſhing the expedition, and of returning to *Braſil*, which was then under their ſubjection.

THE court of *England* was afterwards deſirous of making ſome ſettlements in *Chili*; to which the miniſtry of king *Charles* II. was encouraged by the intelligence they received from an old *Spaniard*, uſually

uſually called Don *Carlos*, who had formerly reſided in ſouth *America*; importing, that the *Spaniards* had almoſt abandoned *Chili*; and that it would not be difficult for the *Engliſh* to cultivate a good underſtanding with the natives; as alſo to eſtabliſh a very advantageous traffic with them, whoſe principal returns would be in gold: but he pointed out *Baldivia*, as the port where there would be the greateſt probability of ſucceſs in ſuch an expedition. In conſequence of which, the *Sweepſtakes*, a man of war of 36 guns, and a pink, were fitted out, under the command of Sir *John Narborough*, who ſet ſail from *England*, on the 26th of *September*, 1669, and arrived at *Baldivia*, on the 15th of *December*, 1670. He was expreſsly commanded to give no moleſtation to the *Spaniards* in their ſettlements; nor to commit any acts of hoſtility againſt *Spain*: but the *Spaniards* would not permit him to trade with the *Indians*, and ſeized his lieutenant, with three of his men, whom they detained as priſoners. Sir *John Narborough*, upon this occaſion, thought of reſcuing his men by force, but he altered his reſolution; either becauſe his force was inſufficient; or elſe, that he recollected the fate of the great and unhappy Sir *Walter Raleigh*, who loſt his head for attacking the *Spaniards* in *America*, when he had no commiſſion for his authority: ſo that Sir *John* quitted the coaſt, on the 22d of *December*, 1670; and returned to *England* on the 10th of *June*, 1671, having been about a year and three quarters on this voyage; but not more than half a year on his paſſage from *Baldivia* to the *Lizard*.

THE

THE *Chileſians* ſtill continued their oppoſition againſt the *Spaniards*, till the year 1690; when they entered into a treaty of peace, whereby they acknowledged the king of *Spain*, for their lawful ſovereign: and the *Spaniards* agreed to permit them to live in a peaceable manner, according to their own laws and cuſtoms. However, theſe *Indians* entertain an hereditary averſion to the *Spaniards*, who have never been able to reduce them to their ſubjection by the force of arms, or to win them to their intereſt by the effect of preſents: they have traditionary relations of the cruelties committed by the *Spaniards* on their anceſtors; they glow on every ſeaſonable occaſion, with a warm ſpirit of reſentment againſt the invaders of their country; and they ſtill retain their primitive love of liberty: ſo that there is the higheſt probability, they would readily join with any other *European* powers to expel the *Spaniards* out of the *Chileſian* dominions.

WHEN the *Dutch* invaded *Chili*, in 1643, the *Spaniards* had not more than fifteen hundred ſoldiers, either on the continent, or iſlands of *Chili*; according to the account given by captain *Brewer*, who ſays, there were there hundred in *Volpariſa*, and *St. Jago* on the coaſt: three hundred in the city of *Conception*; one hundred in *Coquimbo*; and the ſame number on the banks of the river *Biobbio*; eighty in *Tucapel*; five hundred in the forts of the valley of *Arauco*; with one hundred and twenty in *Carelmappa*, *Calimbuco*, and the iſland of *Chiloe*. But he does not mention the particular number of the other *Spaniſh* inhabitants; only in general, that they were more numerous than the garriſon ſoldiers. Though it is evident, that many of

of the *Chileſians* had embraced chriſtianity, and were intermarried with the *Spaniards* at this time: as alſo, that the tribes of ſome caziques were in alliance with the *Spaniards*, who refuſed to be ſubject to their government: but it is likewiſe true, that the other *Chileſian* tribes were then in a ſtate of war with their invaders.

THOUGH the country of *Chili* is ſo very extenſive, yet, according to the lateſt and beſt accounts, the number of inhabitants are very diſproportionable to ſuch an extent of territory. The *Spaniards*, throughout the whole, are not accounted above twenty thouſand men capable of bearing arms: the meſtizoes, mulattoes, and negroes, are between ſeventy and eighty thouſand: but the bulk of the inhabitants are *Indians*; ſome of whom are ſtiled *free*, and others *ſubjected*.

THE free *Indians* acknowledge the dominion of the king of *Spain*, but pay him no tribute; they amount to many thouſands, and inhabit the greateſt part of the country, eſpecially towards the mountains, being governed by their reſpective chiefs, whom the *Spaniards* ſtile caziques; though the *Indians* never acknowledge that title: but the government and manners of theſe free *Indians* will be more properly repreſented, in that part of this hiſtory, which treats of the independent *Indian* nations.

THE ſubjected *Indians* are about fifteen thouſand, who belong to the *Spaniards*, live among them, and ſerve them in the condition of a kind of vaſſalage, not in the ſtate of ſlavery; being divided, according to their habitations, into different lordſhips, containing a certain number of families, called

called commanderies, which the king beſtows on whom he pleaſes. If theſe *Indians* live with their lord, and ſerve him, he muſt not only afford them a maintenance, but give each of them a ſalary of thirty pieces of eight, or about five pound, ſeven ſhillings and ſix-pence ſterling, annually: though, if the *Indians* are not inclinable to live with their lord, they may be exempted, on paying him a yearly tribute of ten pieces of eight, or one pound, fifteen ſhillings, and ten pence ſterling.

THERE are alſo ſome *Indian* ſlaves, who are ſold to the *Spaniards* by the free *Indians*: but, by the laws, they cannot be ſold a ſecond time, without their own conſent.

SECTION IV.

An account of the produce of Chili; *its vegetables, mines, and animals. A deſcription of the diſtrict of* Cuyo; *with the method of travelling through it to* Buenos Ayres. *Some account of the* South Sea, *or* Pacific Ocean. *And a general view of the trade of* Chili.

IT is now proper to ſpeak of the produce of *Chili*; which is very different from what is produced in the other parts of this continent: for the fruits of *Mexico* and *Peru*, are very far from coming to any perfection in *Chili*; becauſe thoſe countries are within the tropics, and *Chili* is out of them; for which reaſon alſo, the fruits of *Europe* take very well in *Chili*, eſpecially apples, pears, apricots, peaches, and quinces, which bear amaz-

ingly; and, if care is not taken to leſſen the quantity of fruit while it is young, it is impoſſible for the boughs to bear the weight of them; ſo that they are obliged to be propped with forks, before they are fit to be gathered. The fruit that exceeds all the reſt for bearing, is the apple of all kinds, of which there are many very extenſive orchards: but fruit is ſeldom ſold here, becauſe any perſon may ſtep into a garden or orchard, and eat what he pleaſes, without any interruption; except ſtrawberries, which, when cultivated, are called *Frutilla*, and are ſold very dear; being, according to *Ovalle*, as big as pears; though the ſame author ſays, he has ſeen them grow wild for ſeveral miles together. There are great quantities of olives and grapes; particularly the muſcadel grape, which yields a noble and generous wine; the branches of the vines being very thick, and the bunches of grapes extraordinary large: but there is ſuch plenty of them, that it proves a grievance; becauſe there is no vent for ſuch quantities, and the *Indians* frequently kill themſelves by drinking to exceſs.

THE principal foreſt-trees of this country, are the cypreſs, cedar, oak, paragua, cinnamon, guayac, thorn-buſh, ſandal, and palm. The cypreſs moſt commonly grows in the precipices of the *Cordillera*; being large and tall, ſhooting up till its tops can be warmed by the ſun-beams: it yields a fine odorous ſmell; and, though it is very plentiful, bears a good price, eſpecially in *Peru*, where it is carried, and uſed in building, particularly for the inſide of churches. The cedar is larger than the cypreſs: the colour of the wood is red, when firſt worked; but it gradually loſes that lively colour,

and

and comes to the complexion of walnut-tree wood. The oaks thrive exceedingly, grow thick, and yield very large planks: ſome of them are white, and others red: but the wood of the former is periſhable, and that of the latter durable. The paragua is a handſome branching tree, which keeps its leaves all the year; being like the elm, and affording ſome valuable timber. The cinnamon-tree is ſo called, from having ſome reſemblance to the true cinnamon of the iſland of *Ceylon*, in *Aſia*; but the bark wants both the fine ſmell and taſte of the real cinnamon: however, the timber of this tree is chiefly uſed in their buildings. The guayac wood is almoſt as hard, and as heavy as iron; being good for many infirmities, when taken by way of decoction. The thorn-buſh grows in cluſters, or groves; which is the ordinary fewel of the people near *St. Jago*; but, in other places, they make charcoal of this wood, for their furnaces and forges: it has ſome reſemblance of an oak, but is more durable; the heart of it being red, and ſcarce ever decaying. The ſandal-tree is very odoriferous, being reputed a preſervative againſt the plague; ſo that it is uſed by the confeſſors, and others, who are obliged to approach infected people. The palm-tree grows generally in the mountains, very thick and lofty: all the body of the tree is naked to the top, or firſt ſprout; its nature being to loſe all its old branches, as the new ones come out; by which means, the body of the tree riſes freely: and, being diſencumbered of ſuch boughs as grow out of the ſides of other trees, is totally employed in feeding the top, and the fruit which grows within it: ſo that it is like a pyramid

round the fruit, to preſerve it by the admirable texture of its leaves, and the branches whereby it is encompaſſed. The fruit of the palm-tree, is called cocoas; being like filberds, though bigger by half: the kernel is hollow, and contains a kind of milk, of an excellent taſte; which, in ſome months, is imbibed by the ſhell, and is then preſerved like almonds. The kernel is firſt covered with a hard ſhell, then with another cover of a green or yellow colour; which is wove ſo cloſe and ſtrongly about it, that, when green, it is eaſier to break than to peel it off. The fruit grows cloſe to a ſtalk, which ſometimes will have about a thouſand upon it: this is encompaſſed by a great ſhell, that grows larger proportionally with the bunch it contains, till, at laſt, the fruit makes it burſt and open into two parts, like ſmall boats, each of above half a yard long, and two ſpans diameter in the broadeſt place; the branch within being all of a fine beautiful yellow, which hangs on the branches till it is ripe, and then falls to the ground, where it is gathered, and ſent in great quantities to *Peru*. There are alſo ſeveral kinds of wild fruit-trees; as the pengue, magues, quetu, and huigan; of whoſe fruits the *Indians* makes ſome fermented liquors. Beſides, there is a tree, called the murtilla, which *Herrera* ſays, grows in the mountains, and bears a fruit that is a common food to the natives, who call it uni, though the *Spaniards* call it murtilla: it is red, and like a ſmall grape, yielding a pleaſant kind of wine; which when turned to vinegar, has a better taſte and colour than wine-vinegar; for it retains the colour of the fruit, which is very ſweet and odoriferous. There is alſo good oil, made

made of a ſeed called madi; which was once extremely well reliſhed; but oil of olives is now in greater eſtimation. It is impoſſible to give a particular deſcription of all the other different ſorts of trees, growing in the woods and mountains of *Chili*, where there are few that loſe their leaves in winter; eſpecially thoſe that grow wild in the woods, which are generally aromatic, and of a very fragrant ſmell; but the fineſt of this kind grow in the territory of the *Conception*. *Ovalle*, even ſays, that, in travelling, he met with lovely groves bordering the high ways, and ſending forth ſo rich a ſmell from their leaves, that the flowers of jeſſamine were not more delicious. That there were alſo abundance of myrtles and laurels, which grew naturally in capacious groves: yet, among theſe, there were others whoſe leaves infinitely exceed them in the delicacy of their ſmell. There are alſo ſeveral kinds of plants, flowers, and medicinal herbs. The muſtard-plant, according to *Ovalle*, grows ſo prodigiouſly large, that he has travelled many leagues through groves of muſtard, which were taller than man and horſe; ſo that the birds built their neſts in the branches.

The firſt rains prepare the earth for its ornamental dreſs of flowers with the ſpring, which begins about the middle of *Auguſt*; and they continue in bloom till the heats come in, which is in *December*; flouriſhing in ſuch great variety and abundance, that *Ovalle* reckoned forty-two different ſorts at one time; excluſive of the garden flowers brought from *Europe*, ſuch as carnations, roſes, lillies, and gilliflowers: beſides, thoſe wild

flowers were ſo odorous, that ſeveral of them, when diſtilled, afforded perfume-waters.

THEY have alſo phyſical herbs and plants of great virtue; particularly the quinchamali, albaquilla, and ſome others only known to the machis, or *Indian* phyſicians.

THE *Chileſians* had great plenty of maiz, or *Indian* corn, before the arrival of the *Spaniards* in this country: but they had neither wheat, barley, oats, anniſe, cummin, coriander-ſeed, linſeed, flax, hemp, peas, cabbage, lettice, raddiſhes, cardoons, chicory, endive, cucumbers, parſley, garlick, or onions; all which they have now in abundance, and their roots, particularly turnips, grow to a prodigious ſize.

THIS country abounds with mines of gold, ſilver, copper, tin, quickſilver, and lead. The copper is uſed in making of cannons for *Peru*, and the neighbouring kingdoms; in the garriſons of which there are always ſtores, particularly on the coaſt: beſides, all the bells of churches, and utenſils for families, are made of this metal; ſo that, ſince the working of theſe mines, no copper has come from *Spain*; for the *Indies* are ſufficiently ſupplied by them with all they can want.

THERE is little lead worked, becauſe there is ſmall uſe of it; and of quickſilver leſs, becauſe *Peru* affords enough of it. The mines of ſilver likewiſe lie unwrought; the golden mines being leſs expenſive, on which account the inhabitants have turned their induſtry towards them.

THE gold mines are ſo numerous and rich, that from the confines of *Peru*, to the extremeſt part of *Chili*, even as far as the ſtreights of *Magellan*, there is no part of the country in which ſome of theſe mines have

have not been diſcovered. All the authors, who have wrote any thing relating to this country, greatly extol it for its opulence and fecundity; which has likewiſe beendone by all thoſe who have navigated the ſtreights of *Magellan*. *Antonia de Herrera*, in his general hiſtory of the *Indies*, ſays, "That in all the *Weſt-* "*Indies*, no gold is ſo fine as that of *Baldivia* in "*Chili*, except that of the famous *Caravaya* in "*Peru*; and that, when thoſe mines were firſt "worked, an *Indian* uſed to get from them every "day twenty or thirty peſo's of gold;" or about 12 *l.* ſterling, which *Ovalle* ſays, was a prodigious gain. But both theſe authors were too apt to exaggerate.

GOLD is procured with leſs difficulty than ſilver out of the mines: firſt, becauſe ſilver coſts much pains to dig it from the hard rocks, then to beat it in the mills to powder, which mills are chargeable, as alſo the quickſilver neceſſary to be uſed to make the ſilver unite; and all the reſt of the operations requiſite to refine it. Whereas the advantage of getting gold, has no other trouble in it, than to carry the earth, in which it is found, to the water, and there waſh it in mills for that purpoſe, where there is a ſtream to carry off the earth; and the gold, being the heavieſt, goes to the bottom. It is true, ſometimes they follow the gold vein through rocks, and hard places, where it grows thinner and thinner; till, at laſt, the profit that ariſes is very ſmall; yet they perſiſt to follow it, in hopes it will grow larger, and end, as it ſometimes does, in what they call bolſa, which is, when coming to a ſofter and eaſier part of the rock, the vein inlarges ſo much, that one of theſe

diſcoveries is enough to enrich a family all their lives. There is leſs gold found at preſent than formerly; becauſe diſſentions have been long maintained between the *Spaniards* and the nation of *Araucanos*: but ſtill ſome is procured; particularly about *Coquimbo*, where the greateſt quantity is got, during the winter rains, which waſh it down from the mountains into rivers, ponds, and rivulets; when the women go into the water, feel out the grains with their toes, and make up as much as ſupplies their preſent neceſſities, according to *Ovalle*: though captain *Rogers* obſerves, this is a very ſingular way to get gold. *Ovalle* adds, that he ſent one of thoſe grains, of a pretty conſiderable bigneſs, to *Seville*, to be touched; and that it was found to be twenty three caracts fine, without any manner of purification.

THE *Chileſians*, as well as the other natives of *America*, had no great variety of four footed animals, till their country was diſcovered by the *Spaniards*; who, about two hundred years ago, tranſported thither almoſt every ſpecies, which were left to run wild in the foreſts, where they multiplied ſo greatly, that the *Chileſians* can now bring a body of ten or twelve thouſand horſe into the field at a ſhort warning.

THE cows have increaſed to ſuch a prodigious degree, that it is aſtoniſhing to ſee what numerous herds of them are always feeding in the great plains of *Tucuman* and *Buenos Ayres*, without any owner; being the property of any perſon who is able to catch them. Their numbers are ſo great, that, according to *Ovalle*, a murrain is thought a neceſſary purge to leſſen their too great abundance: becauſe, the richneſs of the land fattens them to ſuch a de-

a degree, that one hundred and fifty pounds weight of tallow are frequently taken out of one cow: and the propagation of their ſpecies is incredible. Their hides are therefore ſo plentiful, that, though the conſumption of them is ſo great in *Peru*, it is not half ſufficient for the product of the cattle of *Chili*: for which reaſon, it is an advantage to have a decreaſe of the cattle; as the profit of the tallow and hides would be greater, while the trouble and expence of ſervants would be leſs.

Such is the difference of the preſent ſtate of *Chili*, to what it was formerly, that, *Herrera* ſays, when the ſettlement was firſt began, a horſe was commonly ſold for a thouſand pieces of eight, or about 180 *l.* ſterling: but *Ovalle* ſays, he ſaw horſes, accoutred for war, ſold in the territory of *St. Jago*, for about ten ſhillings a piece, that were equal to the *Neapolitan* breed for ſhape, courage, and good qualities: and he alſo obſerves, that the cows were firſt bought at an exceſſive price; but are now ſold for a crown a piece, and the calves for half a crown; the ſheep being alſo ſold for three pence, or three half-pence a piece.

The ſheep of *Chili*, or vicunnas, which are proper to the country, are of the ſhape of camels; but much ſmaller, and without any bunch on their backs. They are white, black, brown, and ſome aſh-coloured; being uſed by the natives to plow the land in ſome parts, before they had oxen: but now they are chiefly employed for the carriage of wine, wheat, and other proviſions. They kneel down to be loaded, and when their burthen is well placed, they riſe, and carry it very gravely: being governed by a kind of bridle,

put

put through holes in their ears; ſo that, by pulling the reins, the leader directs them which way he pleaſes. The upper lip of the animal is ſlit, and the neck is about three feet long. Their wool is greatly valued, for making cloaks and mantles, as fine as camblets.

THE guanacos, chamois, or wild goats, are very like theſe country ſheep, both in ſhape and motion; but they are of a clear red colour. They go in herds, and feed in the fields; but never can be tamed: ſo that they are hunted down, and their young ones taken; whoſe fleſh is eaten freſh, and taſtes like that of a kid; though the fleſh of the old ones is dried and ſmoaked. Theſe goats, in a bag they have under the belly, breed the bezoar ſtones; which are highly valued for their efficacy againſt poiſon, and malignant fevers: the matter out of which they are made, being herbs that theſe animals eat to cure themſelves of any wounds from the poiſon of venemous creatures, or other accidents.

THERE are likewiſe a ſort of little rabbits, called pegues by the *Indians*, which are wild: but there is another kind, called cuyes, which are tame.

THERE are ſome ſquirrels in the valley of *Guaſco*; whoſe ſkins are grey, or aſh-coloured, and held in as great eſtimation, for their warmth and fineneſs of the touch, as furs.

MANY hares are bred in the *Pampas*, or plains of *Cuyo*; and particularly one ſort, whoſe fleſh taſtes like that of ſucking pigs.

THEIR birds and fowls are eagles, hawks, and parrots: as alſo the cauder, a prodigious large and ravenous bird of prey.

THE

THE parrots fly about ſcreaming, in ſuch numerous flocks, that they obſcure the ſight of the ſun; and never fail to come down from the mountains into the valleys at the ſeaſon of the year when the fruits are ripe, of which they deſtroy great quantities.

AT the time when the inhabitants ſlaughter their beef, there comes down another voracious fowl, larger than a duck; which gorges itſelf with the carcaſes that are left in the fields, ſo that it cannot readily fly; therefore it is hunted, and knocked on the head, by the boys at this ſeaſon.

THE oſtrich is another bird which is hunted by the natives; and, though he cannot fly, he runs ſo ſwiftly that he frequently eſcapes from the fleeteſt dogs and horſes.

THEY have another long legged fowl, bigger than a turkey, that wades through ponds and rivers, and lives upon fiſh. Theſe the *Indians* hunt for their feathers, which are red and white, and take many more fowls on the ſame account; for plumes of beautiful feathers are the principal ornaments of their heads: they abound alſo in ſinging birds of various kinds, many of them unknown to *Europeans*; and they have ſeveral which are found in *Europe*, ſuch as linnets, nightingales, blackbirds, and finches. When the *Spaniards* arrived there, they had but one ſort of tame fowl, which was between a duck and a hen; but now they have introduced all manner of *European* poultry, which multiply exceedingly, and are much better food here, than in warmer climates.

THE *Chileſians* only, of all the people of *America*, can ſay they are gainers by being acquainted with

with the *Spaniards*; for moſt of them ſtill retain their liberties, and have acquired the poſſeſſion of *European* cattle, fowls, grain, and fruits, which they wanted before. They have alſo learned ſeveral arts and ſciences of the *Europeans*, and in many inſtances excel their maſters.

THEIR lakes and rivers abound in good fiſh, as well as their ſeas. Whales and grampus's are frequently found on the coaſt of *Chili*; and the former in ſuch plenty, that *Seerteen* ſays, "that when "he ſailed through the ſtreights of *Magellan*, he "met with ſo many near certain iſlands, that they "were obliged to ſail with great care and attention "to avoid them." They are all along the coaſt of *Copiapo* and *Guaſco*; being of no ſmall profit, according to *Ovalle*, on account of the amber-greaſe they caſt on ſhore; as alſo for their oil. The tunny fiſh, and the albocaras, are both large kinds of fiſh, and are chiefly caught on the coaſt of *Coquimbo*. The ſea-lions are ſaid to be as large as a colt. The ſea-wolves, or ſeals, are as big as calves, and are found in prodigious numbers all along the coaſt.

WHAT has been thus enumerated, relates only to the province of *Chili* proper. For as to that of *Cuyo*, which lies on the eaſt of the *Andes*, and between theſe mountains and the *Atlantic Ocean*, there is no perfect account, nor indeed of any of the inland provinces: but *Ovalle*, a native of *Chili*, and who was procurator for the jeſuits of that province at *Rome*, ſays, it is amazing to reflect, when there are only the mountains of *Andes* between the provinces of *Cuyo* and *Chili* proper, they ſhould be ſo different in their qualities, and in every reſpect

almoſt

almoſt diametrically oppoſite to each other, though the latitude is the ſame.

In *Cuyo*, he ſays, the heats are intolerable in ſummer, while the weather in *Chili* is very temperate. Thunder, lightening, rain, and tempeſts, are frequent in *Cuyo*, during the ſummer; while in *Chili*, they have ſettled ſerene weather, without thunder, lightening, or rain. In winter the weather is variable in *Chili*; but never exceſſive cold to the weſtward of the mountains: whereas in *Cuyo*, they have conſtant ſerene weather in the winter, and exceſſive hard froſts; inſomuch, that the cattle die in the fields, if they are not houſed; and for five or ſix months every year, the paſſages of the mountains are ſo locked up by the ſnows, that theſe two provinces have no manner of communication.

In *Chili*, there are ſcarce any ſnakes, or poiſonous inſects; but they are numerous in *Cuyo*; where the natives are alſo tormented with buggs, muſquitos, and other vermin, of which there are none, or very few, in *Chili*.

The *Spaniards* have pretty well ſtocked this province, as well as *Chili*, with all manner of *European* cattle: the inhabitants have likewiſe great numbers of *Peruvian* ſheep, and goats of their own: they abound alſo in corn and wine; and their fruits are ſaid to have a better flavour than thoſe of *Chili*; as their ſummers are hotter, and of this there is ſuch plenty that they ſupply the province of *La Plata*, and even *Buenos Ayres*, on the *Atlantic Ocean*, with dried grapes, and peaches; apples, oil, and excellent wine: but then this muſt be underſtood of that part of the province,

that

that lies next the mountains; for the deſarts of *Pampas* extend ſix or ſeven hundred miles further eaſtward, over which they are obliged to paſs in their way to *Buenos Ayres*. Theſe, ſays *Ovalle*, are vaſt plains, which, like the ocean, afford an unbounded proſpect, but produce neither trees or herbage: after which, the ſame author proceeds to relate the manner of travelling over the deſarts, and gives ſome further light into the nature of this country.

THEY travel in covered carts and waggons, made almoſt as commodious as a houſe, with the doors to ſhut, and windows on each ſide to let in the air; laying beds or mattreſſes on the floor, on which they ſleep moſt part of the journey. Theſe waggons are drawn by oxen, and they ſet out two hours before ſun ſet, travelling all night, and till the ſun is an hour high the next morning; when the paſſengers reſt, and eat the proviſion they carry with them, or take in hunting by the way: for thoſe that are diſpoſed for rural ſports have horſes and dogs with them, and take great numbers of the guanacoes, and vicunnas, or wild ſheep, and goats, peculiar to ſouth *America*. They take alſo a great many partridges, francolins, and other game; from whence a perſon might ſeem inclined to think it muſt be a very pleaſant journey from *Chili* to *Buenos Ayres:* but travellers inform us, that they are ſubject to inconveniences which very much abate the pleaſure of it; particularly the exceſſive heats, which oblige them to be ſtill all the middle of the day; when they have no other defence from the ſun or rain, than what the waggon affords, at many ſtages; though at ſome there

happens

happens to be ſmall brooks, and willows growing by them, that afford the traveller a refreſhing ſhade. But the greateſt inconvenience is the want of water, which is not met with, ſometimes, for ſeveral days journey; therefore, the travellers carry water both for themſelves and their cattle, which ſometimes is all ſpent, and the travellers muſt periſh, if they are not happily relieved by a ſhower of rain. However, all this might be remedied if the country was inhabited; for they meet with ſprings in many places, within a few yards of the ſurface: and the rains alone, which happen frequently in ſummer, might be preſerved in ciſterns and reſervoirs, if there were any towns or villages in the country: but, at preſent, theſe are the difficulties travellers meet with in the plains of *Cuyo*, *Tucuman*, and *Rio Plata*; beſides, for many leagues, they cannot ſee a hill, a tree, or a ſtone, any more than water, unleſs their way lies near the banks of the river *Plata*, or ſome other river.

THE ſea bordering upon *Chili*, is called the *South-Sea*; becauſe it lies towards the antarctic pole, from whence the ſouth wind blows, in oppoſition to the north, which reigns in the ocean as far as the arctic pole; ſo that a ſouth wind is eſteemed favourable in *Chili*, as the north wind is in *Europe*; which made *Ovalle* call the *Europeans* ſons of the north; and the natives of ſouth *America*, children of the ſouth. The *South-Sea* is alſo called the *Pacific Ocean*, on account of that conſtant ſerenity of weather, which reigns there from four degrees to thirty or thirty-five degrees of ſouth latitude, along the greater parts of the coaſts of *Chili* and *Peru*; as alſo indefinitely from the *American* ſhore weſtward. But it might alſo have been

been called the *Pacific Ocean*, on account of the ſingular tranquility of its navigation; which *Ovalle* ſays, is ſeldom interrupted by other *Europeans*: though, both before, and ſince his time, the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*, have frequently made the *Spaniards* ſenſible that they could navigate in theſe ſeas, and convince them of their inſecurity.

VASCO NUNEZ, on the 25th of *September*, 1513, formally took poſſeſſion of the *South-Sea*, and all the countries bordering upon it, for the crown of *Caſtile*. However, *Herrera* obſerves, that the motive which induced *Magellan* to call this the *Pacific Ocean*, was, becauſe here was not, in all that element, a more ſpacious career for the winds and tide; and becauſe there reigns ſo ſtrong and ſteady a levant between the tropics, that the ſeamen, for ſeveral days together, have no occaſion to hand their ſails, or the ſteerſman to move his helm; ſailing through theſe extenſive ſeas as if they were paſſing along a river or canal.

THE moſt frequent navigations of the *South-Sea* are from *Peru* to *Panama*, and from thence to new *Spain*, and the *Philippines*: but thoſe from *Peru* to *Chili*, are leſs uſed: by which it appears, that the greateſt part of the commerce carried on in the *South-Sea*, is between the tropics, where the ſun has ſo much force, as to keep the winds from being furious, and from making ſuch continued ſtorms as are raiſed without the tropics, and in parts nearer the pole. Upon this account, and as there is never any winter in theſe climates, they might alſo call it the *Pacific Sea*; becauſe they experienced the contrary effects to what they found in the north ſea, where moſt of the navigations

are

are out of the tropics; therefore, as the ſun has leſs power, the winter predominates, and raiſes terrible ſtorms. However, *Ovalle* ſays, the *South-Sea* does not deſerve the name of *Pacific* ſouthwards beyond the tropic of *Capricorn*; becauſe navigators undergo great hardſhips between 26 and 53 degrees of north latitude: for, as ſoon as the winter begins, the ſea cannot be navigated without manifeſt danger; the ſtorms being nothing inferior to thoſe in the north ſea; and from about the iſland of *Chiloe*, in 43 degrees, the ſea is very dangerous in ſummer. According to *Dampier*, ſtorms and hurricanes are likewiſe frequently met with to the northward of the tropic of *Cancer*. The ſame author alſo ſays, that they have no rain or dark clouds in what is properly called the *Pacific Ocean*, though it is often ſo thick and hazy, as to hinder an obſervation of the ſun with a quadrant; and there are frequently, in the morning, thick miſts that wet a little; but there are no tempeſts, tornadoes, or hurricanes: yet, north of the equator, they are met with in this ſea, as well as in the *Atlantic Ocean*.

As for the product made by the induſtry of the inhabitants, it conſiſts peculiarly in the breed of their cattle of all kinds; whoſe tallow, hides, and dried fleſh, are ſent to *Lima*; where, having firſt retained the neceſſary proportion for themſelves, which is about twenty thouſand quintals of tallow every year for that city, and hides accordingly, the merchants diſtribute the reſt all over *Peru*: the hides, particularly, are carried up to *Potoſi*, and all that inland tract of mines where moſt of their cloathing comes from *Chili*; they are alſo carried to *Pa-*

nama, *Carthagena*, and other parts of that continent; ſome of this trade extending itſelf likewiſe to *Tucuman* and *Buenos Ayres*, and from thence to *Braſil*.

THE ſecond product is the cordage and tackling, with which all the ſhips of the *South Seas* are furniſhed from *Chili*; as alſo the match for fire arms, with which all the *Spaniſh* garriſons along the coaſt are provided from thoſe parts: for hemp grows no where in the *Spaniſh Weſt-Indies*, but in *Chili*: and there is alſo pack-thread exported, with other ſmaller cordage.

THE third product conſiſts of mules, which are ſent to *Potoſi*, through the deſart of *Aracama*.

THE fourth product is the cocoa-nuts, which are the fruit of the palm-trees; and are not, indeed, produced by induſtry, but grow wild and thick in the mountains, without any cultivation. Almonds, and the product of gardens, which are not found in *Peru*, are likewiſe carried thither with great profit. *Ovalle* ſays, when he came to *Lima*, he obſerved that the anniſeed which had been bought at *Chili* for two pieces of eight, was ſold there for twenty; and the cummin ſeed, bought at twenty, was ſold for fourſcore; which makes merchants very willing to trade to thoſe parts, as they hope to grow rich in a ſmall time; and this increaſes the riches of *Chili*, by drawing thither every day men with good ſtocks. The gains made this way are ſo conſiderable, that a man who has about forty thouſand crowns to employ in land, flocks, and ſlaves to take care of them, may every year have a revenue of ten or twelve thouſand crowns;

crowns; which is a gain of twenty-five per cent. obtained very lawfully, and without any ſubjection to the dangers of the ſeas; for thoſe, who will run the hazards of that element, gain much more; and the merchants, by many commodities, get a hundred, two hundred, nay, three hundred per cent. in a navigation of about three weeks, which is the time uſually employed from *Chili* to *Lima*. Beſides, it is very ſeldom that any ſtorms are felt in that voyage; or, at leaſt, not any that endanger the loſs of the ſhips. The greateſt danger proceeds from the avarice of the owners and merchants; who, truſting to the tranquility of thoſe ſeas, eſpecially as they ſail all the way from *Chili* to *Lima* before the wind, load up to the mid maſt. *Ovalle* ſays, this is not exaggeration; becauſe he has ſeen them go out of the port with proviſions for the voyage, and other neceſſaries, as high as the ropes that held the maſts: though the royal officers are preſent, to hinder the ſhips from being over-loaded. However, there are many goods left behind in the magazines of the port; for the land is ſo productive of every thing, that the only misfortune of it, is to want a vent for its product, which is enough to ſupply another *Lima*, or another *Potoſi*.

Upon this foundation, it is generally affirmed, that no country in *America* has a more ſolid eſtabliſhment than *Chili*: for, in porportion to the increaſe of the inhabitants in *Peru*, *Chili* muſt alſo increaſe in riches, ſince it is able to ſupply any great conſumption; and yet have enough for its own, in all kinds of corn, wine, fleſh, oil, ſalt, fruits, pulſe, wool, flax, hides, tallow, leather,

ropes, timber, medicinal remedies, pitch, fiſh of all kinds, metals of all ſorts, and amber. There is no ſilk in *Chili*; and the *Spaniſh* writers ſay, it is to be wiſhed that it may never get there, except for ornament to the altars; becauſe it has already impoveriſhed the country, as the *Spaniards* go to great expence in rich cloaths; particularly the women, whoſe dreſs is not inferior to the ladies of *Madrid*, or other parts.

THE wax likewiſe comes from *Europe*; though there are bees which make both honey and wax. Pepper, and other *Eaſt-India* ſpices, come from abroad; though there is a kind of ſpice which ſupplies the want of them very well: and ſome authors ſay, that in the ſtreights of *Magellan*, there is good cinnamon; as alſo that, on thoſe coaſts, there are trees of a moſt fragrant ſmell in their bark, having a taſte like pepper, but of a more poignant ſavour.

THROUGHOUT the whole province, the herbage and the fiſhing are in common, as alſo hunting, with the woods for fewel and timber; and the ſame is practiſed as to the ſalt mines. Beſides, there is no impoſition on trade; every one being free to tranſport what goods he pleaſes, either within or without the kingdom.

SECTION

SECTION V.

An account of the three grand diviſions of CHILI: *with a particular deſcription of their cities, and principal towns; their ſituation, government, and trade.*

IT is now proper to proceed to the geographical deſcription of this country; which is entirely under the government of its preſident: the vice-roy of *Peru* ſeldom interfering with this province, as it is at ſo great a diſtance from *Lima*. For the more eaſy diſtribution of juſtice, it is divided into three quarters, or provinces; which are ſubdivided into thirteen juriſdictions.

I. THE moſt ſoutherly province is the biſhoprick of *IMPERIAL*, or of *CONCEPTION*, which extends from 46° 20′ to the river *Maule*, in about 35 degrees of ſouth latitude: the climate of this province being much like that of *Spain*.

II. THE biſhoprick of *St. JAGO*, or *CHILI PROPER*, extends from the river *Maule*, to beyond that of *Copiapo*, between 25 and 26 degrees of ſouth latitude; which, as well as that of *Imperial*, lies between the *South-Sea*, and the *Cordillera* mountains; being what is properly called *Chili*.

III. THE province of *CUYO*, or *CHICUITO*, beyond the mountains, which bounds it on the weſt: but how far it extends eaſtwards, towards *Paraguay*, and part of *Terra Magellanica*, is unknown.

I. THE biſhoprick, or diſtrict of *IMPERIAL*, contains the following conſiderable cities, ſea-port towns, and other places.

1*ſt*. THE city of *Imperial*, which gives the name to the biſhoprick, is ſituated in 72 degrees, 15 minutes of weſt longitude, and 38 degrees 30 minutes of ſouth latitude; in one of the moſt agreeable ſpots in the whole country, on a pleaſant river, anciently called *Cauten*, and now *Imperial*, from the city. It is about 130 miles diſtant from *Conception*, 10 or 12 from the ſea, 330 from the city of *St. Jago*, and 70 north from *Baldivia*. The territory belonging to this city is very fruitful; bearing corn, with all ſorts of fruits and pulſe: though the black grapes never ripen ſo kindly as the white ones, and the muſcadines. The country is partly hills, and partly vallies; the hills being of a gentle and eaſy aſcent, with good paſtures, and ſhelter for cattle: nor does the ground require much watering; having frequent and large dews that fertilize it. This city was a biſhop's ſee, and began to increaſe at firſt very much, on account of the excellency of its ſoil and ſituation; ſo that it would, probably, have become a very conſiderable place, if it had not been deſtroyed by the *Indians*; whereupon the epiſcopal ſee was removed to the city of *Conception*.

THE river *Imperial* is large; it runs a great way up into the country; and the banks of it are very well inhabited by *Indians*: but its mouth affords no good harbour for ſhips of any burthen; becauſe of the flats, which are only about three fathoms and a half in depth.

2*d*. THE city of *Conception*, otherwiſe called *Penco*, from the *Indian* name of the place, is ſeated on the edge of the ſea, at the bottom of a bay of the ſame name, on the eaſt ſide of it, in 73 degrees

grees 15 minutes of weſt longitude, and 36 degrees 20 minutes of ſouth latitude, 140 miles ſouth of *St. Jago*. It was founded by *Peter Baldivia*, the conqueror of *Chili*, after he had ſubdued the neighbouring *Indians:* but the *Indians* afterwards deſtroyed it, under *Caupolican*; and it was rebuilt by *Mendoca*.

At this time, there are no remains of any fortification; the town being open on all ſides, and commanded by five eminences, among which that of the *Hermitage* advances almoſt to the middle, and overlooks it all. There is no other defence but one low battery, on the edge of the ſea; which commands only the anchoring place before the town, being a good quarter of a league from it, to the north-weſt: nor is this want of fortifications made up by men, and able officers.

The maeſtre de campo, or colonel, is a general officer for all martial affairs without the town; being commonly one of the inhabitants, who has no experience, and whom the preſident of *Chili* appoints for three years. Under him is a lieutenant-general to the preſident, a major, and captains: but the troops he commands are not numerous; for the whites cannot make a body of two thouſand men, and thoſe very ill armed, both in the town and country about it.

The militia conſiſts of two companies of foot, and ſome horſe; which were all formerly in the king's pay, who allowed money for the maintaining of three hundred and fifty men, as well for the defence of the town, as of the advanced poſts and garriſons: but when *Frezier* was there, in 1712, that pay had failed for ſeveral years, and

all things were in diſorder; the ſoldiers having been obliged to diſperſe themſelves up and down to get their living; ſo that if the *Indians* ſhould have an inclination to revolt, they would find the *Spaniards* in a defenceleſs condition.

THE incurſions of the *Indians* have occaſioned the removing of the royal court of chancery, which was eſtabliſhed at *Conception*, in the year 1567, to the city of *St. Jago*. Since *Philip* V. aſcended the throne of *Spain*, there has been only one oidor, or judge, of the court, who performs the functions of governor, and is the chief in the adminiſtration of juſtice: the court is compoſed of ſix regidores, or aldermen, two alcaldes in the nature of bailiffs, one royal enſign, an alguazil mayor, or head ſerjeant, and one depoſitary general: all which places are elective, and continue only a year.

WHEN the *Indians* poſſeſſed themſelves of *Imperial*, the city of *Conception* became the ſee of a biſhop, who is ſuffragan to the archbiſhop of *Lima*, the capital of *Peru*: but his chapter conſiſts only of two canons, and ſome prieſts; who are moſt of them ignorant of claſſical learning.

FATHER *Feuilee*, who reſided ſome time in this city, gives the following deſcription of it. It is ſeated in a little valley, called *Penco*, on the ſea-ſhore; having, on the eaſt, high mountains, from which deſcend little rivers, that run acroſs the town. On the north, it has the entrance of the bay; the bay itſelf on the weſt; and the river *Biobio* on the ſouth. The ſtreets, like thoſe of all the towns in this new world, are drawn by a line; and moſt of the

the houſes are built with earth, in the form of oblong ſquares; only one ſtory high, and covered with pantiles: they are large, but ill furniſhed; the inhabitants ſtill feeling the effects of the ill uſage they have received from the native *Indians*, who are ſuch irreconcileable enemies to the *Spaniards*, that they have plundered and burnt this town three or four times. Each houſe has a garden belonging to it, well furniſhed with all ſorts of fruit-trees, which produce ſuch a prodigious quantity of fruit, that they are obliged to thin them, otherwiſe the branches would break, nor could the fruit come to maturity.

THERE are ſix monaſteries in this city. Towards the middle of the town, there is a large ſquare, on the ſouth-ſide of which ſtands the pariſh church. On the eaſt ſide ſtood the biſhop's palace; and on the two other ſides are ſhops, where the women go in the night time to buy ſuch neceſſaries as they want for their families; it being againſt the cuſtom of this country for women of any reputation to go abroad in the day; which is a very ſingular, though conſiderable abuſe.

THE iſland of *Quiriquina* lies at the mouth of the bay of *Conception*; being ſomewhat lower than the continent, with which it forms two paſſages into the bay. That to the W. S. W. is not very good for large ſhips, though paſſable in caſe of neceſſity; but, unleſs well known, it is dangerous venturing along the ridge of rocks, which advances far towards the middle of it. The north-eaſt paſſage is half a league wide, and clear of any danger. The bay itſelf is two leagues wide from eaſt to weſt; by three, from north to ſouth.

There

There are only two good anchoring places in winter, to be under ſhelter from the north winds, which are violent, and much to be apprehended during five months in the year: the one of them is at the ſouth point of *Quiriquina*, in ten or twelve fathom water, a cable's length from the ſhore; which, though very good, and ſheltered from thoſe winds, is not much frequented, becauſe too remote from the town, and from the continent: the other is at the bottom of the bay, near a village called *Talcaguana*, in five or ſix fathom water; which is the only place of ſafety, whilſt the north wind prevails: but, in ſummer, ſhips may anchor before the town, north-weſt from the battery: and boats may go eaſily aſhore; though in winter it is quite otherwiſe. There is every where conveniencies for wooding and watering; as alſo for building of ſhips.

THE country in which the town of *Conception* is ſeated, abounds in all things, not only to ſupply the neceſſaries of life, but alſo containing infinite wealth. There is gold found in ſeveral of the adjacent parts, eſpecially about 36 miles to the eaſtward, at a place called *Eſtancia del Rey*, or the *King's Station*; where, by waſhing, they get thoſe bits of gold, called by the *Spaniards* pepitas, or grains; ſome of which have weighed ſeveral ounces, and were extraordinary fine. Formerly much was got near *Angol*, which is about 72 miles off; and if the country was inhabited by a laborious people, it might be had in a thouſand parts, where they are ſatisfied there are good waſhing places; that is, lands where gold is got by only waſhing the earth in water.

THE

THE ſecurity of the town conſiſts in its trade, which keeps a conſiderable number of ſhips in the bay, and intimidates the *Indians* from attempting any thing againſt the inhabitants; who, from a confidence of this, live in eaſe and indolence.

THERE is a beneficial trade carried on by the inhabitants of the city of *Conception*, with the *Indians* behind them, who trade with the *Spaniards* in a very particular manner; though they have never negociated a peace with *Spain*. Theſe *Indians* are called *Aucaes*, and inhabit the mountains, where they retain the primitive cuſtoms and manners of their anceſtors. When a *Spaniard* goes to trade with them, he addreſſes himſelf to the cazique, or chief; who, on perceiving the ſtranger, cries out, *What, are you come?* the *Spaniard* anſwers, *Yes, I am come*: then the cazique ſays, *Well! what have you brought me?* the merchant anſwers, *A preſent*; and the prince replies, *Then you are welcome*. He then provides a lodging for the merchant near his own, where all his family go to viſit the ſtranger, in expectation of ſome preſent; and, in the mean time, a horn is ſounded to give notice to the *Indians* who are abroad, that a merchant is arrived. This ſoon aſſembles them together about the merchant, who exhibits his treaſure, conſiſting of knives, ſciſſars, pins, needles, ribbands, ſmall looking-glaſſes, and other toys; which the *Indians* carry away, after ſettling the price, without giving any thing in exchange: but, after a certain time is elapſed, the horn is ſounded again, by the direction of the cazique; when the *Indians* immediately return, and punctually perform their reſpective engagements: the goods they deal in being

being cattle, ſkins of wild beaſts, and ſome gold; but they bring very ſmall quantities of the latter; as they are ſenſible how dear the poſſeſſion of that metal coſt their anceſtors and their neighbours.

3*d*. *BALDIVIA*, or *Valdivia*, is ſituated in 72 degrees, of weſt longitude, and 39 degrees, 40 min. of ſouth latitude; 300 miles ſouth of *Jago*, and 140 miles N. E. of the iſland of *Chiloe*. It was firſt founded by *Peter Baldivia*, in the year 1552, in a plain about 4 or 5 fathoms above the ſurface of the ſea; near which was a fort, to keep the *Indians* in awe: but thoſe people were filled with ſuch reſentment at the tyrannical government of the *Spaniards*, that they took up arms, killed *Baldivia*, and emancipated themſelves from the yoke of *Spaniſh* ſlavery. They alſo plundered and deſtroyed the town; but it was afterwards rebuilt a little higher up the land, on an eminence at the point of a peninſula, formed by two rivers; which, with the iſlands before it, make it the moſt ſecure and ſpacious harbour on the coaſt of *Chili*.

THE town is incloſed with walls, built with earth, and defended by about twelve pieces of cannon, which are ſixteen pounders: but it has only one pariſh church, and a convent of jeſuits.

THE harbour, or port, of this town, is ſo advantageouſly ſituated, that it has engaged the *Spaniards* to build ſeveral forts to defend the entrance of it againſt ſtrangers; becauſe they look upon it as the key of the *South Seas*.

THE paſſage up to the town, for great ſhips, is on the eaſt-ſide, being about ſix leagues: but it is not above two leagues from the ſea by another paſſage on the weſt-ſide, where the ſmall veſſels go up:

up: and Sir *John Narborough* obſerves, that three rivers fall into the harbour, though they are not navigable much beyond the town.

THE *Dutch* were deſirous of ſettling here, in 1643, to ſecure a convenient place, for facilitating their entering the *South-Seas*. And accordingly they made themſelves maſters of it: but want, diſeaſes, and more particularly the death of their general, having weakened them, they were obliged to retire; leaving behind them their baggage, and thirty pieces of cannon, upon advice of the ſuccours ſent againſt them by the vice-roy of *Peru*.

THE *Engliſh*, under Sir *John Narborough*, viſited this port, by the command of king *Charles* II. in 1670; who was of opinion, that the town might be eaſily taken: and commodore *Anſon*, in 1741, intended to attack it, in purſuance of the reſolution of a council of war, and an article contained in his majeſty's inſtructions to him, to endeavour to ſecure ſome port in the *South Seas*, where the ſhips of the ſquadron might be careened and refitted. As *Baldivia* is the principal frontier of the diſtrict of *Chili*, lord *Anſon* propoſed, that the reduction of ſo important a place, ſhould be his firſt attempt, after his arrival in the *South Seas*: in conſequence of which, new inſtructions were given to the captains of the ſquadron; whereby, though they were ſtill directed, in caſe of ſeparation, to make the beſt of their way to the iſland of *Nueſtra Senora del Socoro*; yet they were to cruize off that iſland only ten days; from whence, if not joined by the commodore, they were to proceed, and cruize off the harbour of *Baldivia*, making the land between the latitudes of 40°, and 40° 30′; taking care to keep

keep to the ſouthward of the port; and, if in fourteen days, they were not joined by the reſt of the ſquadron, they were then to quit this ſtation, and to direct their courſe to the iſland of *Juan Fernandez*; after which, they were to regulate their further proceedings by their former orders: but the total and almoſt inſtantaneous ſeparation of the ſquadron, in paſſing round the iſland of *Terra de Fuego*, which was owing to the unſeaſonable time of the year when this gallant commander was ſent upon the expedition, prevented his deſigned attack upon *Baldivia*.

THE white people of *Peru*, and *Chili*, who are baniſhed for their crimes, are ſent to this port, as well as to the town; where they are employed about the fortifications, and other ſervices of the garriſon, which is compoſed of none but ſuch people, who are made ſoldiers and officers, even during the time of their puniſhment. The vice-roy is annually to ſend three hundred thouſand pieces of eight, or about fifty-three thouſand, five hundred pounds ſterling, to keep up the fortifications, and maintain the garriſon: yet, this ſum is not exactly furniſhed; however, the preſident of *Chili* never fails to ſend a good ſupply every year, of which the governors make ſo conſiderable an advantage, that this poſt is the moſt coveted of any, on account of the revenue. Though it ought to be diſagreeable, by the ill company there is in the garriſon; as alſo on account of the rain which continues ſix months every winter.

THE number of inhabitants in this city may amount to between two and three thouſand: but its commerce is not ſo conſiderable now as formerly;

merly; becauſe ſeveral gold mines in its neighbourhood are not wrought at preſent. However, there are ſtill eight or ten veſſels, of between four and five hundred tons each, which are employed in carrying on the trade between this port and *Lima*, where they export hides, goat ſkins tanned, *Cordouan* leather, ſalt meat, corn, and ſome gold; bringing back chocolate, ſpices, ſugar, and all ſorts of *European* goods.

4*th*. *OSORNO* is an inland town, ſituated in about 71 degrees of weſt longitude, and 39 degrees of ſouth latitude, 50 miles ſouth of *Baldivia*, on the northern bank of the river *Bueno*; and as many from the ſea coaſt to the eaſt.

The adjacent country is not fruitful, and produces few of the neceſſaries of life: but it is rich in gold mines; for which reaſon the town is very populous. *De Noort* ſays, that this town lies in about 42 degrees of ſouth latitude; is larger than *Baldivia*, has a *Spaniſh* governor, and that they make here woollen ſtuffs, and linnen cloth. *De Laet* adds, that within the limits of the territory of the town, there are above two hundred thouſand *Indians*, whom *Corneille* calls *Chauracabis*, who pay tribute to the *Spaniards*, and ſerve them without any reward. To the eaſtward of this town, there is a volcano in the *Cordillera* mountains.

5*th*. *VILLA RICA*, is about 55 miles diſtant from *Baldivia*, towards the north-eaſt; and about nine or ten from the *Cordillera* mountains, being ſituated on the weſtern bank of a lake called *Mallabauquen* by the *Indians*, which is three leagues long from eaſt to weſt, and two broad from north to ſouth. The ſoil about this city is very fruitful; being

being a clay, of which they make very good bricks. Moſt of the inhabitants work in wool, and make tolerable cloth; as alſo linnen waiſt-coats.

THE *Pehuenches*, an *Indian* nation, inhabit the foot of the mountains, and live chiefly by hunting, in which exerciſe they are prodigiouſly dexterous: but moſt of their country is very cold, and produces hardly any corn or wine.

6th. ANGOL, or *Villa Nueva de los Infantes*, is ſituated in 71 degrees of weſt longitude, and 37 degrees of ſouth latitude, 130 miles N. of *Baldivia*, and about 32 from the *Cordillera*. It ſtands in a large open plain, where the land is very fertile, and fruits come to great maturity. There is good wine; as alſo fine raiſins dried in the ſun, figs, and other dried fruits; with a great quantity of tall cypreſſes, yielding a very ſweet-ſcented wood, of which *Herrera* ſays, they make a gum lac. The great river *Biobio* runs by it, ſerving it for a ditch on the ſouth-ſide; and on the north-ſide another pleaſant rivulet comes running from hills of a moderate height, turning many mills for the uſe of the city.

THE *Spaniards* have ſome other forts in this part of the country; as that of *St. Peter*, on the ſouth ſide of the river *Biobio*, three leagues from *Conception*. Higher up are *Talquemahuida*, *St. Chriſtopher*'s, *St. Joanna*, and *Ycombel*: but thoſe of *Boroa*, *Coloe*, *Repocura*, *Tucapel*, and even *Imperial*, have been long deſtroyed and abandoned.

II. IN *CHILI PROPER*, or the biſhoprick of *St. JAGO*, are the following conſiderable cities, and principal places.

1*ſt. St.*

1ſt. *St. JAGO*, or *St. James the Apoſtle*, the capital of all *Chili*, is ſituated in 69 degrees 40 minutes of weſt longitude, and 33 degrees 12 minutes of ſouth latitude, about 240 miles from *Conception*, towards the north-eaſt, at the weſt foot of the *Cordillera* mountains, from which it is about 6 miles diſtant; and about 54 miles eaſt of the *Pacific Ocean*; ſtanding in a beautiful plain, of about 75 miles in extent, and watered by three rivers, the principal of which is the *Maypo*, or *Maypocho*, on whoſe banks the *Indian* villages are very numerous.

It was founded, in the year 1541, by *Peter Baldivia*, who cauſed the plan of it to be marked out in ſquares, like a draught-board, by the ſame meaſure as thoſe of *Lima* in *Peru*, that is, 150 varas, or *Spaniſh* yards, or 68 fathoms on each ſide; from whence came the meaſure called quadra, which they uſe in this country to divide the cultivated land, as if it were into acres. Each of thoſe ſquares of houſes was divided into four parts, called by them ſolares, for every perſon to have a commodious apartment: though, in proceſs of time, that ſpace was farther divided into ſeveral other parts; yet they have ſtill ſo much room, that there is ſcarce a houſe in the town without a court before, and a garden behind.

The whole city is ſo happily watered, that, by the conveniency of canals cut from the river *Maypocho*, their gardens are not only plentifully ſupplied, but the inhabitants can alſo keep their ſtreets continually clean and cool, by turning a ſtream of water into any of them, whenever they think proper.

THE ſtreets are laid with the four cardinal points of the horizon; north, ſouth, eaſt, and weſt; being five fathoms wide, exactly in a line, and neatly paved with ſmall ſtones, divided in the nature of furrows, by others that are larger, croſſing both ways at equal diſtances, and leaving in the middle about two feet and a half of running water, to waſh or cool the citizens when they pleaſe. Thoſe which run eaſt and weſt, receive their waters from the firſt canals of the river; and thoſe which croſs from north to ſouth, from the canals that run in the middle of the ſquares of houſes, a-croſs the gardens and the ſtreets, under little bridges, from whence it is cauſed to flow out. But, if it was not for this relief, the gardens would produce nothing for want of rain, during eight months in the year; whereas, by this means, the city affords all the delights of the country, in relation to fruit and herbs, having a cool ſhade in the day, and at night the ſweet ſcents of orange flowers, with many others, which perfume the houſes.

THE earthquakes, which are frequent here, have much endamaged the city; particularly, thoſe of 1647, and 1657; the firſt of which was ſo violent, that it almoſt overturned the whole town, and left ſuch unwholeſome vapours in the air, that all the inhabitants died, except about three or four hundred. Since that time, there has been ſome alteration in the plan, by the enlarging of monaſteries; ſome of which have extended themſelves beyond the ſtrait lines: however, it is ſtill ſo open, and well diſtributed, for the conveniency of publick and private perſons; that, if the houſes were raiſed above the level of the ſtreets,

ſtreets, and of a better ſtructure, it would be a very agreeable city.

In the centre of the city is the royal ſquare, called *Placa Real*; the area of which is 4096 fathoms, that is, each ſide is 64 fathoms, or 384 feet, beſides the breadth of four ſtreets; ſo that there are eight avenues leading into the ſquare, in the middle of which is a fountain, with a braſs baſon. The weſt ſide contains the cathedral, and the biſhop's palace: on the north ſtands that of the preſident, the royal-court, the council-houſe, and the priſon: the ſouth ſide is a continued row of piazzas, or uniform arches, with very commodious ſhops under them, for the conveniency of merchants; as alſo a gallery over them, to ſee the bull feaſt: and on the eaſt ſide are the houſes of the principal merchants.

The ſtructure of the houſes is the ſame as is uſed throughout all *Chili*; being only a ground floor, built with unburnt bricks; excepting that here they are handſomer than in other places, and the churches richer in gilding; ſome of which are built of free ſtone; and alſo ſome of a kind of pebbles brought from a ſmall rock, at the eaſt-end of the city, called *St. Lucy's Hill*; from whoſe ſummit there is a full view of the city and parts adjacent, which affords a very agreeable landſcape.

The preſident, or governor of *Chili*, has his uſual reſidence at *St. Jago*: he is ſubordinate to the vice-roy of *Peru*; but the diſtance very much leſſens the ſubordination; ſo that he may be looked upon in *Chili* as a vice-roy himſelf, for the ſeven years his government continues.

THE governor preſides in the royal court, which is compoſed of four oidores, or judges; two fiſcals, or attornies general, one of whom has the charge of protecting the *Indians*, and the affairs of the croiſade; alſo an alguazil mayor di corte, or head ſergeant of the court; the chancery ſecretary, reporters, and others. There lies no appeal from a judgment, upon a writ of error, or review upon a royal deciſion, which take cognizance only of matters of importance, or ſuch as have been decided in other courts; unleſs it is to the royal council of the *Indies*.

OTHER matters are decided in the council houſe, which is compoſed of two alcaldes, or judges, a royal enſign, an alguazil mayor, or head ſerjeant, and ſix rigidores, or aldermen.

THE eccleſiaſtical ſtate, as well as the ſecular, has a dependance on *Lima*; but the power of the biſhop is very much circumſcribed. There are eight monaſteries of men; three of franciſcans, two of jeſuits, one of the order of mercy, one of the brethren of St. *John* of God, and one of dominicans; which are the only orders eſtabliſhed throughout all *Chili*. There are alſo five nunneries; and all theſe communities are numerous, ſome of them containing above two hundred perſons.

THE tribunal of the inquiſition of *Chili*, is alſo ſettled at *St. Jago*, where the commiſſary general reſides, with his officers, called familiares, who are the informers; and other commiſſaries are diſperſed throughout all the towns and villages ſubordinate to him; who apply themſelves to the diſcovery of ſuch unhappy perſons, whom they think proper to ſubject to the barbarous proceedings of this inhuman inquiſition. THE

THE number of inhabitants may be about eight thouſand whites, and between twenty and thirty thouſand *Indians* and *Mulattoes*. The citizens are wealthy, and live much at their eaſe; many of them retiring here from *Baldivia*, the *Conception*, *Valparaiſo*, and other places, when they have acquired eſtates by trade: beſides, there are ſome of the citizens who are continually accumulating fortunes by being concerned in the gold mines at *Tiltil*, which are about half way between *St. Jago*, and the ſea; as alſo in ſeveral lavaderoes nearer the city, which are ſo very rich, that ſometimes they yield pieces of gold of an ounce weight, and twenty-three caracts fine.

IN the mountains immediately behind the city, particularly in that called *St. Chriſtopher Lampanquio*, there have been mines of gold, ſilver, iron, copper, lead, and tin, diſcovered, about and ſince the beginning of the preſent century: but they are neglected, either for want of hands, or becauſe they are found to yield leſs profit than ſome others. As for the *Indians*, they deal little in theſe metals on their own account; contenting themſelves with raiſing corn, and feeding cattle, of both of which they have great plenty: but they are very far from being rich; for, even in a country where money is ſo plenty, their wheat, which is very good, will not yield more than a groat a buſhel.

2d. *VALPARAISO*, or *Val Parayſo*, is a town, ſituated on the *South-Sea*, in 71 degrees 30 minutes of weſt longitude, and 32 degrees 35 minutes of ſouth latitude, about 90 miles north-weſt of *St. Jago*, which it ſerves in nature of a port.

THIS is one of the moſt conſiderable havens in theſe ſeas; being conſtantly frequented by veſſels from *Callao* and *Panama*, which come here to lade corn, and are of conſiderable burthen: therefore, experienced pilots are always to be met with here for any part of the coaſt, and eſpecially to the northward.

ACCORDING to *Frezier*, ſhips generally run ſo cloſe to the ſhore, that they have three anchors on the land, made faſt to ſtones, or piles; at which diſtance they have ſtill eight or ten fathom water. He obſerves, that this way of making faſt is good; becauſe in ſummer, every day regularly, about noon, the breezes come up at ſouth-weſt and ſouth, ſo ſtrong, that they make the beſt anchors give way: however, care muſt be taken of a ſhoal, that is within a cable's length of the ſhore, near the battery called *Caſtillo Blanco*, or the *White Caſtle*, on which there is not above thirteen or fourteen feet water at the ebb. In other reſpects, he ſays, the bay is very ſafe, and ſhips may turn and anchor every where, from fifty to eight fathom water: but they muſt take care, when they take a trip towards the *Siete Hermanas*, or *Seven Siſters*, that is to the eaſtward, not to draw nearer the ſhore than two cables length and a half, oppoſite to a little running water, croſſed by a great reddiſh road; in which place there is a ſhore, where there is no more than two fathom and a half water. Ships generally anchor only in that nook of the road, which is before the fort, for the conveniency of trade, and their own ſecurity: yet, the ſame author ſays, that road is quite bad in winter; becauſe the north winds, which blow in at the mouth without

without any oppoſition, make the ſea there ſo boiſterous, that ſhips have been ſometimes forced aſhore. The ſouth winds are no leſs violent there in ſummer: but, as they come over the land, they make no ſea; and if they ſhould force ſhips from their anchors, they can only be drove out to ſea.

THE fort is of little ſignification; both becauſe it is ill built; and becauſe the road it defends is near other creeks, which afford the ſame conveniencies as here; particularly the creek of *Quintero*, which is defenceleſs, and but five leagues from *Valparaiſo*. It is true, that the bay of *Valparaiſo*, as being neareſt to the capital, is the moſt frequented in *Chili*; for which reaſon it has been thought fit to ſecure it againſt the inſults of the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*, who have often ranged along thoſe coaſts.

FORMERLY, there was only a little battery, level with the water; but they have ſince built the great fortreſs, at the foot of the mountain. It ſtands on an eminence of an indifferent height, croſſed towards the ſouth-eaſt and north-eaſt by two ſtreams, which form two natural ditches, between twenty and twenty-five fathom deep, ſunk down almoſt to the level of the ſea: ſo that it is abſolutely parted from the neighbouring eminences, which are a little higher. The ſide next the ſea is naturally ſo ſteep, that there is no going up without much difficulty; and on the land ſide, or next the high mountain, it is defended by a ditch, which croſſes from one ſtream to the other, and thus cuts off the encloſure of the fortreſs ſomething near to a ſquare. As the ſituation of the place would not

permit the making of a regular fortification, it cannot properly be called any other than walls of entrenchments, following the compaſs of the height, which flank one another but very little, and ſometimes not at all. At the middle of the wall, which is above the town, there is a ſmall redan, or indented work, of ſeven fathoms in front, with a guerite, or centinel's box. The oppoſite ſide, above the ſtream of *St. Auguſtin*, is only defended by the flank of a demi-baſtion, which forms a dead angle; the face whereof makes too oblique a defence. The ſide next the mountain conſiſts of a curtain of twenty-ſix fathoms, and of two demi-baſtions of twenty fathoms face, and eleven flank; ſo that the line of defence is but of forty-five fathoms. All this part is built with brick, raiſed twenty-five feet in height, on a beam, being a ſmall ſpace of ground, between the wall and the moat. The depth of the ditch is about ten feet, and its breadth three fathoms towards the ſaliant angles, whence it has its defence to the angle of the epaule, or ſhoulder of the baſtion. It is cut in a ſoft rock, which has been made a little ſteep at the two ends, to render it inacceſſible by way of the ſtreams. The parapets are but two feet and a half thick, and the reſt of the encloſure of the place is only a piece of maſonry made of rubbiſh, and very weak. There is no rampart, but on the land ſide, to cover the fortreſs, and hinder its being commanded by the mountain, which riſes gently: but the greateſt misfortune is, that the flanks can be battered in reverſe, that is, on the backs; and the curtains and faces enfiladed, or ſcoured along their whole length from neighbouring eminences,

eminences, within muſket ſhot; ſo that it is very eaſy to render them uſeleſs.

At the foot of the high fort, adjoining to the town, is a battery of nine pieces of cannon, raiſed thirty feet high, on a key of the ſame height, whence they can fire upon the anchoring place level with the water: but, beſides that it has no defence from the poſition, it is commanded by all the parts about. This is called *Caſtillo Blanco*, or the *White Caſtle*; becauſe it has been whitened, that it may be ſeen at a diſtance. Behind this battery are the gate, the ſtairs, and the aſcent, which lead from the town to the fortreſs, along a way covered with a piece of wall; and higher up a boyau, or branch of a trench, the epaulement whereof does not cover the gate of the body of the place, which is all open to the road. In the middle of the curtain, or the ſide next the mountain, is another gate, to which they climb up out of the ditch, for want of a draw-bridge; and this way the conduit of water paſſes, drawn from the ſtream of *St. Auguſtin* for the upper fort, which might be eaſily cut off; when the garriſon could have water no where but from the rivulet, which runs from the bottom of the ſtream of *St. Francis*, through the middle of the town.

At the foot of the fortreſs, in a little jut, or narrow ſpace, is the town of *Valparaiſo*, conſiſting of about a hundred poor houſes, without any order, and of ſeveral heights; ſtretching out a long the ſea, where are the granaries, or ſtore-houſes for corn: but, though it is ſo ſmall, it has a pariſh church, and two monaſteries. It contains about one hundred and fifty families; but there are ſcarce thirty

thirty of them white; the reſt being black, mulattoes, and meſtizoes. The number of men able to bear arms is very inconſiderable: though the neighbouring dwellings or farms, upon the firſt ſignal from the fortreſs, furniſh ſix troops of horſe, mounted at their own expence; moſt of whom have no other arms but ſwords. However, upon notice given by the centinels kept along the coaſt, they are very regular in drawing together; at leaſt, ſome parts of thoſe troops, when a ſhip appears, which is not thought to be *Spaniſh* built.

FATHER *Feuillee* ſays, that the veſſels from *Lima* arrive here uſually in *October*, and return in *March*, to avoid the north winds; furniſhing all the harbours of *Chili* with *European* goods, ſuch as cloth, ſilk, and other things, which the *Chileſians* may want.

SHIPS ſometimes lie at the port of *Quintero*, for conveniency, till they can get a loading from *Valparaiſo*, which conſiſts chiefly in corn; and ſuch vaſt quantities are ſent to market, that the magiſtrates have a diſcretionary power of ordering as much as they think proper to be thrown into the ſea, that the remainder may ſell the better.

THE equipment of the ſquadron by the *Britiſh* government, in the year 1740, to enter the *South-Seas*, at firſt gave the *Spaniards* very terrible apprehenſions: but the ſeparation of this force ſoon diſſipated their fears; for the ſquadron, which originally conſiſted of ſix ſhips, and 961 men, was reduced to three ſhips, and 335 men, when commodore *Anſon* arrived at *Juan Fernandez*, in *June* 1741. However, this brave officer, though he was diſabled from executing what he intended,

was

was determined to diſtreſs the *Spaniards* as much as poſſible; for which purpoſe, he began to cruize in theſe ſeas, and, on the 14th of *September* following, took a prize called the *Nueſtra Senora del Monte Carmelo*, commanded by Don *Manuel Zamorra*, burden 450 tons, having fifty-three ſailors, whites and blacks, and twenty-five paſſengers on board. The cargo of this ſhip conſiſted chiefly of ſugar, and great quantities of blue cloth made in the province of *Quito*, ſomewhat reſembling *Engliſh* coarſe broad-cloths, but inferior in quality: they had beſides ſeveral bales of a coarſer ſort of cloth of different colours, ſomewhat like *Colcheſter* bays, called by the *Spaniards*, *Pannia de Tierra*; with a few bales of cotton, and ſome tobacco; as alſo ſome trunks of wrought plate, and 23 ſerons of dollars, each weighing upwards of two hundred pounds weight avoirdupois. She was bound from *Callao* in *Peru*, to the port of *Valparaiſo*, and propoſed to have returned from thence loaded with corn, and *Chili* wine, ſome gold, dried beef, and ſmall cordage, which is converted into larger rope at *Callao*. The commodore returned with his prize to *Juan Fernandez*; being informed by the priſoners, that the *Spaniſh* ſquadron fitted out to purſue him, under the command of admiral *Pizarro*, had met with greater misfortunes than his own; not ſo much as one ſhip being able to come into the *South Seas:* therefore, the crew of the *Centurion* flattered themſelves, that they might meet with ſome valuable captures, and thereby indemnify themſelves for the incapacity they were under of attempting any of the conſiderable ſettlements on ſhore; eſpecially as the *Wager* was loſt,

which

which had on board ſome field pieces for land ſervice, ſome coehorn mortars, and ſeveral kinds of artillery, ſtores, and pioneers tools, intended for the enterprize againſt *Baldivia*. The commodore was aſſured, from the information of his priſoners, that, whatever his ſucceſs might be, as to the prizes he might make, he had nothing to fear, weak as he was, from the *Spaniſh* force in this part of the world: though, at the ſame time, he diſcovered he had been in moſt imminent peril from the enemy, when he leaſt apprehended it, and when his other diſtreſſes were at the greateſt height. For he learnt, from the letters on board, that *Pizarro*, in the expreſs which he diſpatched to the vice-roy of *Peru*, after his return to the river of *Plate*, had intimated to him, that it was poſſible ſome part, at leaſt, of the *Engliſh* ſquadron might get round: but that, as he was certain from his own experience, if they arrived in thoſe ſeas it muſt be in a very weak and defenceleſs condition; he adviſed the vice-roy, in order to be ſecure at all events, to ſend what ſhips of war he had to the ſouthward, where, in all probability, he would intercept the *Engliſh* ſhips ſingly, before they had an opportunity of touching at any part for refreſhment; in which caſe, he doubted not but the *Engliſh* would prove an eaſy conqueſt. The vice-roy of *Peru* approved of this advice: he had already fitted out four ſhips of force at *Callao*; one of 50 guns, two of 40, and one of 24 guns, which were intended to join *Pizarro*, when he arrived on the coaſt of *Chili*: but he now ſtationed three of theſe off the port of *Conception*, and one of them at the iſland of *Fernandez*, where they

continued

continued cruizing for the *Engliſh* ſhips, till the 6th of *June*; when, not ſeeing any thing of them, and conceiving it to be impoſſible that they could have kept the ſeas ſo long, they quitted their cruize, and returned to *Callao*; fully perſuaded that the *Engliſh* ſquadron was either periſhed, or at leaſt had been driven back.

COMMODORE *Anſon* was alſo informed, that ſeveral other merchantmen were bound from *Callao* to *Valparaiſo*: upon which, he immediately ſent the *Tryal* ſloop to cruize off the laſt mentioned port; ſeparating the other ſhips, to employ them in diſtinct cruizes; as he would thereby increaſe his chance for prizes; as alſo run a leſs riſque of alarming the coaſt, and occaſioning a diſcovery. He then ordered the *Glouceſter* to proceed to the latitude of 5 degrees ſouth, and to cruize there off the high land of *Paita*, at ſuch a diſtance from ſhore as ſhould prevent his being diſcovered. After which, the commodore left *Juan Fernandez*, to join the *Tryal* ſloop in her ſtation off *Valparaiſo*, and found ſhe had taken a prize called the *Arranzazu*, of 600 tons, proceeding on the ſame voyage, and with much the ſame cargo as the *Carmelo*. The commodore manned this prize, and ordered captain *Saunders* to cruize in her off the high land of *Valparaiſo*, keeping it from him N. N. W. at the diſtance of 14 leagues; to continue on that ſtation 24 days; and then, if not joined by the commodore, to proceed down the coaſt to *Piſco*, or *Naſca*, where he would be certain to meet him. An embargo along the coaſt, and the equipment of a ſquadron from *Callao*, was apprehended by the commodore; upon which, he reſolved to

haſten

haſten down to the leeward of *Callao*, to join captain *Mitchel* off *Paita*; that, uniting his ſtrength, they might be able to give the *Spaniards* a warm reception, if they attempted to put to ſea: but they were afraid to venture out, and the commodore ſoon afterwards reduced *Paita*, as will be more particularly mentioned in the diviſion of *Peru*.

3*d*. *LA SERENA*, or *Coquimbo*, was founded by *Baldivia*, in 1544, and is ſituated in 71 degrees of weſt longitude, and 29 degrees 50 min. of ſouth latitude, at the mouth of the river *Coquimbo*, on the *Pacific Ocean*, 260 miles north of *St. Jago*.

THIS city is ſeated at the lower part of the vale of *Coquimbo*, a quarter of a league from the ſea, on a little riſing ground, about four or five fathoms high; which nature has formed like a terraſs, extending from north to ſouth in a ſtrait line along the town, the ſpace of about a quarter of a league. The firſt ſtreet forms a very pleaſant walk, which commands a proſpect of the whole bay, and the neighbouring country: it goes on ſtill in a line, turning away from the weſt to the eaſt, along a little vale full of evergreens; being moſt of them myrtles, called by the *Spaniards*, arrayanes: and, in the midſt of thoſe pleaſant groves, the river of *Coquimbo* runs winding about. This river is almoſt every where fordable, ſupplying the town with water, and freſhening the adjacent meadows, after having run from the mountains, where in its paſſage it fertilizes ſeveral vales, whoſe ſoil refuſes no ſort of tillage.

BALDIVIA,

BALDIVIA, who made choice of this pleaſant ſituation, to build a town, which might ſerve for a retreat in the paſſage from *Chili* to *Peru*, being charmed with the deliciouſneſs of the climate, called it *La Serena*, the name of the place of his birth; to which it had more right than any other place in the world; the name ſignifying the *Serene*: for here there is continually a ſerene and pleaſant ſky. The ſtreets are all exactly in a ſtrait line from one end to the other, like *St. Jago*, from eaſt to weſt, and from north to ſouth. The quarters, or ſquares they form, are alſo of the ſame dimenſions; with each a rivulet running through it: but the ſmall number of inhabitants, the foulneſs of the ſtreets which are not paved, with the meanneſs of the houſes which are made of mud walls, and thatched, make it look like a plain, and the ſtreets like the walks in gardens: for they are ſet round with fig, orange, olive, palm-trees, and others, which afford an agreeable ſhade.

The moſt conſiderable part of the city is taken up by two ſquares, and ſix monaſteries; without reckoning the pariſh church, and the chapel of *St. Agnes*. But formerly there was a church at *St. Lucy*, on an eminence of the ſame name, which runs out in a point to the middle of the town; being of the ſame height as the firſt terraſs, and commanding all the town, on account of the lowneſs of the houſes, which have only a ground floor. Beſides, from this eminence, as from an amphitheatre, appears a beautiful landſcape, formed from the town, the plain which reaches down to the ſea, the bay, and its mouth.

A per-

A perpetual verdure reigns here, unmoleſted by ſtorms, without diſagreeable heat, and free from any inconvenient cold. The fertility of the ſoil makes the country abound with the neceſſaries of life, eſpecially corn, wine, and oil, exquiſite in their kinds, and exceſſively cheap. There is a numerous breed of horſes, and great plenty of cattle, as alſo of tame and wild fowl. The partridges are inſipid, but the turtle-doves are very delicious, and there are abundance of ducks in a little pool near the port. There is a good fiſhery in the bay for mullets, pezerayes, ſoles, and a delicious fiſh called teſſon, which is peculiar to this coaſt: but there is no good place for caſting of a net, becauſe the ſhore is full of ſtones.

THE diſcovery of the mines of *Copiapo*, and the vexations of the corregidores, or chief magiſtrates, daily contribute towards depopulating the town; for, though thoſe mines are near three hundred miles from *Coquimbo* by land, ſeveral families are gone there to ſettle; ſo that, at preſent, there are not above two hundred families, and at moſt three hundred men fit to bear arms, excluſive of the neighbourhood. But the fertility of the ſoil keeps abundance of people in the country; particularly in the vales of *Elques*, *Sotaqui*, *Salſipued*, *Andacol*, and *Limari*; from whence they bring corn ſufficient to load four or five ſhips, of about 400 tons burden, to ſend to *Lima*. They alſo ſupply *St. Jago* with great quantities of wine and oil; which are eſteemed the beſt along the coaſt. Theſe proviſions, together with ſome few hides, tallow, and dried fleſh, compoſe all the trade of the inhabitants of *Coquimbo*, whoſe indolence makes

makes them feel the gripe of poverty; though their country is one of the richeſt parts of the kingdom in all ſorts of metal.

THEIR trade for *European* commodities is ſo inconſiderable, that their annual conſumption of ſuch goods ſeldom amount to twenty-five hundred pounds ſterling; which they receive in return for their own merchandize at *Lima*, and principally tranſport into other parts of *Chili*.

IN winter, when the rains are ſomewhat plentiful, gold is found in almoſt all the rivulets that run down from the mountains; and would be found all the year, if the rains were to continue. About thirty miles to the eaſtward of the town, are the waſhing places of *Andacol*, where gold is 23 caracts fine; and the work always turns to great advantage, when there is no ſcarcity of water. The inhabitants affirm, that the earth breeds; that is, that gold is continually growing; becauſe, ſixty or eighty years after it has been waſhed, they find almoſt as much gold as at firſt. Beſides theſe waſhing places, there are ſo many gold mines, and ſome of ſilver, on the adjacent mountains, that they would employ 40,000 men, as *Frezier* was informed by the governor of *Coquimbo*; and they propoſed to ſet up mills there, but wanted labourers.

THE copper mines are alſo very common, about nine miles eaſt from *Coquimbo*; where they have wrought a long time at a mine, which ſupplies almoſt all the coaſts of *Chili* and *Peru*, with utenſils for the kitchen; though they uſe more earthen ware, or ſilver, for this purpoſe, than copper. The jeſuits have another mine, fifteen miles north

from the city, on a mountain called *Cerro Verde*, or *Green Hill*; which is high, and ſhaped like a ſugar-loaf; ſo that it may ſerve for a land-mark to the port. There are an infinite number of others, which are neglected for want of ſale: and it is affirmed, that there are alſo mines of iron, and quick-ſilver.

THE land along the coaſt, though indifferently high, looks, at 25 or 30 leagues diſtance out at ſea, as if it was overflowed, and the high mountains over it appearing always covered with ſnow; which is a natural effect of the roundneſs of the ſea, and is ſenſibly perceived at ſo ſmall a diſtance. As ſoon as a ſhip has a ſight of the bay of *Coquimbo*, it is eight leagues to the ſouthward of the town; when ſhe muſt keep up with the land to ſee the mouth of the bay, and get to the windward; the ſouth and ſouth-weſt always prevailing there, except two or three months in winter. About three quarters of a league to the windward, is the mouth of a little creek, called *La Herredura*, or the *Horſeſhoe*. Next to the leeward appear three or four rocks; the largeſt of which, being fartheſt out at ſea, and called *Paxaro Ninno*, is the third part of a league north-weſt and by north from point *Tortuga*, being the ſtarboard point of the continent that cloſes the port of *Coquimbo*. To the ſouthward of this rock, is a little iſland ſomewhat ſmaller; between which, and the continent, is a paſſage of ſeventeen fathoms of water, but very narrow: whereas the mouth of the bay is two leagues and a half wide, where there is no danger: but, becauſe the winds blow continually from ſouth and ſouth-weſt, it is convenient to keep cloſe to the ſtarboard point, and run cloſe under the rock, called *Paxara Ninno*, which

which is clear within a boat's length, to gain, at the fewer trips, the good anchoring ground, called the port, which is within a cable's length of the weſt ſhore, where they anchor from ſix to ten fathom water; the bottom being black ſand, near a rock ten or twelve foot long, which riſes five or ſix foot above the water, ſhaped like a tortoiſe, from which it takes its name. Ships are ſheltered from all winds, by cloſing the ſtarboard, or *Tortuga* point, with the larboard point; ſo that the land appears on all ſides, and there is no rolling ſea: however, no more than twenty-five, or thirty ſhips, can enjoy that benefit. In the port, there is not only the conveniency of riding at anchor very near the ſhore, as ſtill as in a baſon; but alſo, in caſe of neceſſity, a ſhip of twenty guns may be careened on the *Tortuga* rock, where there is twelve foot water at low-ebb, quite cloſe to it. But, as all conveniencies are ſeldom found in one port, this has its defects. The moſt conſiderable of them is, that ſhips anchor there a league from the watering place; which is, to the eaſt-north-eaſt, in a rivulet that runs into the ſea; and, if it is taken at low-ebb, the water is always ſomewhat brackiſh; though it does not appear to be unwholſome: and the ſecond inconvenience is, that there is nothing for fuel, but ſome buſhes, which are only fit to heat an oven; without going into the vale, nine miles from the port.

4*th*. *GUASCO*, is a port town, ſituated in about 71 degrees of weſt longitude, and in 27° 50′ of ſouth latitude, near 80 miles to the north of *La Serena*, according to the maps; though *Dampier* makes it but 10 leagues, or 30 miles. He ſays, that within the port, is a ſmall round iſland; and, at the

bottom of the bay, near this iſland, is a river of freſh water; right againſt the mouth of which is the common anchoring place. In this port, ſhips are defended from the ſouth, and ſouth-weſt winds: the land is pretty even, and at the top of the port is a plain of ſand. Off the ſouth-weſt point of the port, are ſeven or eight rocks, about which are many ſhoals, and there is no ſailing between them and the main. *Dampier* adds, that the adjacent country is reputed to be well peopled with *Spaniards*: but *Frezier* ſays, the port is not frequented; becauſe there is no other trade than what is carried on by a private perſon, who takes copper out of the mines.

5th. COPIAPO, is a town ſituated in about 70 deg. 30 min. of weſt longitude, and 27 deg. of ſouth latitude, 500 miles north of *St. Jago*, at the mouth of a river of the ſame name; which, with an iſland that lies before it, forms a tolerable harbour. This town is about 180 miles north of *La Serena*: but the country between theſe places is one of the worſt in the world; having neither town or village, tree or ſhrub, river or brook: ſo that the cattle upon the road frequently periſh for want of refreſhment. However, there are ſeveral mines of copper and tin in this uninhabitable territory: and, in a mountain on the ſouth-eaſt, there have been found very fine turquoiſe ſtones; though, for want of any ſettlement near it, the farther ſearch of them has been abandoned: for the colds of this country are ſo great, that the *Indians* of *Peru* are frequently killed by its ſeverity.

THE port of *Caldera* belongs to the town of *Copiapo*; having a road tolerably ſafe; and would, probably,

probably, be much frequented, if wood and water were not exceſſively ſcarce and dear.

COPIAPO lies fourteen leagues to the eaſtward of port *Caldera*, and twenty leagues according to the ordinary road, over a miſerable country, deſtitute of all things, either pleaſant or convenient; being a place of no great importance till the year 1710, when it began to be conſidered in another light. A *Spaniſh* author ſays, it is now the richeſt place in the world, and that its foundations are of gold; meaning, that the town ſtands upon a gold mine, which is exceſſively rich: however, this is not wrought at preſent; becauſe they have diſcovered richer mines, at about ſix miles diſtance; from whence they bring the ore on mules to the mills, which are within the town. In 1713, there were ſix of thoſe mills, which the *Spaniards* call trapiches: and, *Frezier* ſays, they were making a ſeventh of that ſort, which was to be called the royal engine, with hammers and pounders, that can bruiſe or grind ten times as much as the trapiches; that is, ſix cheſts a day, each cheſt yielding about twelve ounces: but they muſt yield two to pay the coſt; and the ounce of gold is ſold here for twelve or thirteen pieces of eight caſt, or about two pounds, fifteen ſhillings ſterling.

It is uncertain what theſe mines might produce, if properly managed: but ſome computation may be formed, from an account given by a *Fleming*, who was employed in working them in the year 1720. The town is open, and the houſes ſtand ſcattered up and down in a very irregular manner; the inhabitants being about 700, and the perſons

employed in the mines 1000 at leaſt. Their mills were then increaſed to twelve; and, they extracted from the mineral, about thirty thouſand ounces of gold in a year, as appeared by the account given in by the inſpector of the mines: which gold might be ſold on the ſpot for about fifty ſhillings an ounce; and conſequently theſe mines annually yield to the value of about eighty thouſand pounds ſterling.

BESIDES the gold mines, there are ſeveral mines of iron, braſs, tin, and lead, about *Copiapo*; which the inhabitants have not thought proper to work: though the lead mines, about ſixty miles ſouth of the town, are imagined, by ſome intelligent perſons, to be as valuable as the gold ones: becauſe, ſome people who have viſited them, have picked up, on the ſurface of the earth, ſeveral pounds of lapis lazuli, one of the moſt valuable commodities in the world; being a ſort of precious ſtone, of a blue colour, veined and ſpotted with white and yellow; which is principally uſed for making ultramarine: and it is affirmed, that this *Chileſian* ſtone is not at all inferior to that which comes from *Perſia* and *Siam*; but is rather of a deeper blue, with fewer veins. Saltpetre lies upon the ground two inches thick in many places; which alone would be ſufficient to attract a trade in any other country. In the *Cordillera* mountains, about one hundred miles eaſt-ſouth-eaſt, there are mines of the fineſt ſulphur, or brimſtone, that can be ſeen; which is taken pure from a vein two feet wide, without requiring to be cleanſed, and is worth three pieces of eight, or about eleven ſhillings ſterling, a quintal, or hundred weight, at the

the port; from whence it is carried to *Lima*. And all the country is full of mines of ſal gemm, or rock-ſalt; for which reaſon ſweet water is very ſcarce.

III. In the province of *CUYO*, or *CHICUITO*, to the eaſt of *Chili*, beyond the *Cordillera* mountains, are the following towns.

1*ſt*. *MENDOCA*, is the capital of the country; being ſituated in about 68° 25′ degrees of weſt longitude, and 34° 20′ of ſouth latitude, at the foot of the *Cordillera*, cloſe by the paſs of the mountains that leads into *Chili*, and at the head of a river, which, with the *Turuyan*, falls into the lake of *Guanacache*, at about 70 miles diſtance from it to the ſouth-eaſt. This town had its name from *Mendoca*, vice-roy of *Peru*, and was built by *Peter Caſtillo*. The jeſuits have a college here; and there are copper mines in the neighbourhood, which are very much eſteemed.

2*d*. *SAN JUAN de la FRONTERA*, or *St. John of the Frontiers*, is about 120 miles diſtant from *St. Jago*, and about 100 from *Mendoca*, to the north-eaſt; lying alſo at the head of one of the rivers that runs into the lake of *Guanacache*. *La Martiniere* ſays, it is now the chief town of *Cuyo*; being the moſt populous place in the country; and in the mountains adjacent to it, there are very rich ſilver mines.

3*d*. *UCO*, is about 70 miles to the ſouth of *Mendoca*; but no ways remarkable.

4*th*. *St. LEWIS*, or *Oromonte*, is 170 miles to the ſouth eaſt of *Mendoca*, and 70 miles from the lake of *Guanacache*. The two laſt mentioned places, rather deſerve the name of hamlets than of

towns. However, *Ovallé* ſays, that, in his time, all thoſe places began to increaſe; becauſe the weſt part of *Chili* was overſtocked with people, which occaſioned many *Spaniards* to remove to *Cuyo*.

THE whole country is remarkable for its fertility, which is principally owing to the numerous rivulets of melted ſnow, that run down from the circumjacent mountains: its products being corn, wine, and oil; which are prodigious in quantity, and excellent in quality.

SECTION VI.

The iſlands of CHILI; *containing a particular deſcription of the iſlands of* JUAN FERNANDEZ.

THE principal iſlands along the coaſt of *Chili*, are *Noſtra Senora de Socoro*, *Chiloe*, *Mocha*, *St. Mary*'s, and the iſlands of *Juan Fernandez*.

THERE are alſo ſeveral other iſlands extending along the coaſt of *Chili*, from 46 to 42 deg. of ſouth latitude, which are called the *Archipelago* of *Chonos*; the principal being the iſland of *St. Catalina*, *Llamas*, *Inchin*, *Chunquen*, *Manien*, *Noſtra Senora de Socoro*, *de los Chonos proper*, *Guaſo*, *Madalena*, *Caylin*, *Lemui*, *Apiao*, *Quinchao*, *Chauones*, and ſome others: but none of them are well known, except the iſland of *Noſtra Senora de Socoro*,

1ſt. THE iſland of *NOSTRA SENORA de SOCORO*, according to lord *Anſon*'s voyage, lies in 71 deg. 12 min. of weſt longitude from the *Lizard*, which laſt is 5 deg. 47 min. weſt of *London*; and in 45 deg. of ſouth latitude. It is a ſmall, uninhabited

bited iſland, but ſo well ſituated for ſhips entering the *South Seas*; that commodore *Anſon*, when he left the coaſt of *Braſil*, ordered his captains, as ſoon as they had paſſed the *Streights le Maire*, round *Cape Horn*, into the *South Seas*, to rendezvous at this iſland, and from thence to continue their courſe to the iſland of *Juan Fernandez*. The commodore arrived at the iſland of *Socoro* on the 8th of *May*, 1741, and cruized in that ſtation ſeveral days, in expectation of meeting with the reſt of his ſquadron. While he continued here, his men were perpetually alarmed with the fears of being driven on ſhore upon this coaſt, which appeared too craggy and irregular to give them the leaſt proſpect, that, in ſuch a caſe, any of them could poſſibly eſcape immediate deſtruction. For the land had a moſt tremendous aſpect; the moſt diſtant part of it, and which appeared far within the country, being the *Andes*, extremely high, and covered with ſnow: the coaſt itſelf ſeeming quite rocky and barren, and the water's edge ſkirted with precipices. In ſome places, they diſcerned ſeveral deep bays running into the land, but the entrance into them was generally blocked up by numbers of little iſlands: and, though it was not improbable, but there might be convenient ſhelter in ſome of thoſe bays, and proper channels leading thereto; yet, as they were utterly ignorant of the coaſt, had they been driven aſhore by the weſtern winds, which blew almoſt conſtantly there, they did not expect to have avoided the loſs of their ſhip, and of their lives. But the reſt of the ſquadron could not join the commodore, who, after ſtruggling with ſeveral turbulent ſtorms, and finding

ing an increaſe of the ſcurvy among his men, ſtood for the iſland of *Juan Fernandez*, where he arrived on the 9th of *June* following.

ABOUT the latitude of 47 degrees ſouth, there is an iſland near which the *Wager*, belonging to commodore *Anſon*'s ſquadron, and commanded by captain *Cheap*, was loſt by ſtriking on a ſunken rock about a muſket-ſhot from the ſhore.

2*d*. *CHILOE*, is an iſland ſituated between 71° 30′ and 72° 30′ of weſt longitude, and between 41° 50′ and 44 degrees of ſouth latitude: being about 150 miles long, and 21 broad. The ſouth and eaſt parts of it are divided from the continent of *Chili*, by a part of the ſea, which is about 30 miles over: and the north part of it is about 136 miles ſouth of *Baldivia*. The coaſt is very ſubject to ſtorms, and tempeſtuous weather, eſpecially in *March*; when the winter begins, and prevents ſhips from putting to ſea; ſo that they muſt continue there till the ſummer returns, and the north winds abate.

THE face of the country is various; as it conſiſts of mountains, vallies, woods, champaign, ſavannah, or meadow and marſhy grounds; having ſome fine ſprings, and rivulets of freſh water.

ACCORDING to *Brewer* and Sir *John Narborough*, it abounded in corn, cattle, and fruit, both *European* and *Indian*, as alſo ambergreaſe: though *Techo*, and ſome others ſay, it is barren, and one of the pooreſt of the *Spaniſh* ſettlements. Theſe different accounts may be eaſily reconciled: for, when Sir *John Narborough* was upon the iſland, there were ſeveral plantations well cultivated by the *Spaniards*; which were afterwards ruined by the native *Indians*, who recovered the country, and left

left the *Spaniards* little more than the town of *Caſtro*, which has been ſo frequently burnt and plundered, that it is now reduced to a miſerable village; whereby the lands are uncultivated, and appear unfruitful; eſpecially, as the *Indians* ſow and plant no more than what is juſt ſufficient to furniſh their families with food.

THE town of *Caſtro* was built by the *Spaniards*, in the year 1600, when the *Chileſians* had almoſt driven them from the continent. It is the only town upon the iſland; being ſituated on the weſt ſide, in 42 degrees, 20 min. of ſouth latitude. *De Laet* ſays, it ſtands between two brooks, and has a ſmall caſtle, which commands the harbour: but the town has neither walls nor ramparts; and the houſes lie ſcattered about in a very irregular manner.

ACCORDING to *Frezier*, the *Spaniards* have alſo a little fort in this iſland; which is called *Chacoa*: but always ill-provided with warlike ſtores. He likewiſe ſays, that there are about forty other iſlands about *Chiloe*, which all take their names from it: but he muſt mean part of the *Archipelago* of *Chonos*, which lies between *Chiloe* and the continent.

3d. THE iſland *Da la MOCA*, or *MOCHA*, lies a ſmall diſtance from the coaſt, almoſt oppoſite to the mouth of the river *Imperial*.

OLIVER NOORT, who was there in the year 1600, ſays, this iſland lies five or ſix leagues out at ſea; being pretty large, with a ridge of hills in the middle, from whence a freſh-water river deſcends. It is inhabited by *Indians*, who retain an implacable enmity againſt the *Spaniards*; from whoſe cruelty they fled, and peopled this iſland.

SPILBERG

SPILBERG, the *Dutch* admiral, who was here in 1616, anchored on the north-ſide of the iſland, in 13 fathom water, within half a league of the ſhore; on which ſide the land is low, and very broad; but on the other ſide there are many rocks, againſt which the waves beat with great fury. He landed ſome boats, and the natives met him with refreſhments; treating him with great marks of hoſpitality: for they exchanged ſheep for hatchets, corals, and other trifles; but would not admit the *Dutch* into their houſes, or rather the miſerable hutts they lived in.

SIR *John Narborough* places this iſland in 38 degrees, 30 min. of ſouth latitude; and ſays, that the *Spaniards* told him there was gold here; but that the natives were unwilling to part with it.

MR. *FUNNEL*, who was here in 1704, ſays, that they durſt not touch at this iſland, for fear of being murdered by the natives; who are always at war with the *Spaniards*, and think all white men to be ſuch.

4*th*. *St. MARY's* iſland lies almoſt oppoſite to the town of *Conception*, not many miles from the continent. *Frezier* ſays, it is low, almoſt plain, and about three quarters of a league in length from north to ſouth. According to the draught of *Oliver Noort*, it appears to be leſs than *La Mocha*; but riſes in hills much after the ſame manner. *Spilberg* repreſents a large bay on the weſt-ſide of this iſland, where he anchored in ſix fathom water. And Sir *John Narborough* obſerves, that there is good anchoring on the north ſide of this iſland, in a fine ſandy bay, with eight or nine fathom water.

THE *Spaniards* are maſters of this iſland, and have

have a fort on it with five guns; where the garriſon live very comfortably, as they are unmoleſted by the *Indians*, and as the country abounds with corn, potatoes, fruit-trees, ſheep, and hogs.

5th. The iſlands of *JUAN FERNANDEZ*, or *JOHN FERNANDES*. The *Spaniards* have generally mentioned two iſlands under this name, ſtiling them the greater and the leſſer: the greater being alſo called *Juan Fernandez proper*, or *La de Tierra*; and the leſs being called *Maſa Fuero*, or *La de a Fuera*, becauſe it is more diſtant from the continent.

THE iſland of *Juan de Fernandez proper*, or *La de Tierra*, is ſituated about 84 degrees of weſt longitude, and in 34 degrees, 45 min. of ſouth latitude, according to *Dampier*, and the chart publiſhed in commodore *Anſon*'s voyage: though captain *Sharp* places it in 33 degrees, 40 min. in which he is followed by the publiſher of lord *Anſon*'s voyage in his narrative: but it rather appears to be in 79° 20′ of longitude, and in 34 degrees of latitude. It is about a hundred and ten leagues from the continent of *Chili*; being about twelve leagues in circumference, according to *Dampier*; governor *Pullen* ſays, it is between thirty-eight and forty miles round; but, according to lord *Anſon*'s voyage, its greateſt extent is between four and five leagues, and its greateſt breadth ſomewhat ſhort of two leagues.

GOVERNOR *Pullen* ſays, the ſoil of this iſland is indifferent upon the hills, which are overgrown with woods: but its vallies are fine, fruitful, and pleaſant, interſperſed with ſavannahs, or natural meadows, which are capable of great improvements, ſo as to produce every thing agreeable to the climate.

The

The woods afford ſeveral kinds of trees fit for building; though none proper for maſts. The graſs of the ſavannahs is not long and flaggy, as in the other parts of *America*, but thick and ſhort; therefore, ſo extremely fit for grazing, that it has been aſſerted, theſe ſavannahs are capable of maintaining a thouſand head of cattle, beſides goats, who grow fatteſt on the moſt barren parts of the iſland.

GOVERNOR *Pullen*, during the war with *France* and *Spain*, in the reign of queen *Anne*, was conſulted by the miniſtry how it was practicable to prevent the treaſures of *Peru* and *Chili*, from being brought to *Europe* by the *French* and *Spaniards*; as alſo, how to exclude the *French* from that traffic, whereby they were enabled to maintain a war ſo long againſt the confederates: in conſequence of which, the governor adviſed the miniſtry to ſend a ſquadron of men of war into the *South Seas*, to be ſtationed at this iſland. He obſerved, that the ſeaſon of the year proper to begin this voyage, is from the firſt to the middle of *September*: but he adviſed, by all means, that they ſhould ſet out by the middle of *Auguſt*, to make their arrival ſome ſmall time in the *South Seas*, before the *French* trade that went the ſame year: for, by this meaſure, they could hardly fail of deſtroying all the ſhips bound there that ſeaſon, and perhaps meet with ſome returning home; becauſe they muſt obſerve the ſame time of year, and return by the ſame route of thoſe ſeas, as they went into them by. The route they always uſe in going there, he ſays, is by or round *Cape Horn*, the ſouthermoſt promontory of all *America*: for they never venture through the

ſtraights

ſtraights of *Magellan*; becauſe they find, by experience, that for one ſhip which gets through, three are forced back, and ſo loſe their voyage that year, to the ruin of their owners: but, having ſufficient ſea-room the other way, they are never expoſed to any ſuch riſque. After they have doubled *Cape Horn*, they ſteer directly for the iſle of *Juan Fernandez*, to refreſh their men, and take in freſh water; for they never miſſed that iſland if they could help it; becauſe, their men are almoſt all in the ſcurvy by that time, and it would infallibly occaſion a mutiny, if the captain ſhould refuſe touching there. But what principally induced him to mention the ſettling of this iſland, was the breeding of cattle, and cultivating the land; by which means great advantage might accrue to the inhabitants; becauſe the ſhips that paſs the ſtreights of *Magellan*, or by *Cape Horn*, conſtantly touch here, on account of their men having, by this time, contracted an epidemic ſcurvy. The governor foreſaw one objection which would be made to his propoſal; and that was, the difficulty there would be in maintaining this ſettlement at ſuch a diſtance from *Britain*, and from any *Britiſh* colonies: but to this he anſwered, that no iſland was more capable of being fortified, ſo as to reſiſt any enemy who could attack it in that part of the world: for there are only two bays in the iſland capable of receiving ſhips, which are both at the eaſt-end; and a ſmall charge would ſoon build ſuch works, as would render it impracticable for any people to land there againſt the will of the inhabitants: and the weſt-end, which is the higheſt and moſt barren part of the iſland, is of ſuch natural

tural ſtrength, that a ſmall body of men might defend it, againſt the greateſt force that could be brought to aſſail it.

THIS iſland was diſcovered by *Juan Fernando*, in a voyage he made from *Lima* to *Baldivia*; who was pleaſed with its ſituation, ſoil, and climate: therefore, he reſolved to ſettle it; imagining that its produce might very well ſupport four or five hundred families. On his return to *Lima*, he endeavoured to get a patent for that purpoſe; and, in his firſt inſtance, was favourably received; though he was not able to obtain the grant at laſt; ſo that it has continued uninhabited ever ſince.

COMMODORE *Anſon* was particularly induſtrious in directing the roads and coaſts of this iſland to be ſurveyed, and other obſervations to be made; knowing, from his own experience, of how great conſequence theſe materials might prove to any *Britiſh* veſſels employed in thoſe ſeas. The publiſher of his voyage gives a diſtinct account of the ſituation, productions, and conveniences of this iſland; which particulars, he ſays, they were well enabled to be minutely inſtructed in, during their three months continuance there; and adds, that theſe advantages belonging to this iſland, will merit a circumſtantial deſcription, as it is the only commodious place in thoſe ſeas, where *Britiſh* cruizers can refreſh and recover their men after their paſſage round *Cape Horn*, and where they may remain for ſome time without alarming the *Spaniſh* coaſt.

IT was on the 9th of *June*, 1741, when the people on board the *Centurion*, firſt deſcried the iſland of *Juan Fernandez*; bearing N. by E. $\frac{1}{2}$ E. at eleven or twelve leagues diſtance; and appearing

to

to be a very mountainous place, extremely ragged and irregular: though, when they came nearer in with the ſhore, they could diſcover, that the broken craggy precipices, which appeared ſo unpromiſing at a diſtance, were far from barren, being in moſt places covered with woods; and that, between them, there were every where interſperſed the fineſt vallies, cloathed with a moſt beautiful verdure, and watered with numerous ſtreams and caſcades; no valley of any extent, being unprovided of its proper rill; which gave infinite pleaſure to the commodore, as moſt of his people were ſeverely afflicted with the ſcurvy, and were obliged to be ſent on ſhore for their recovery.

THE only ſafe anchoring at this iſland is on the north-ſide, where there are three bays: but the middlemoſt, known by the name of *Cumberland-Bay*, is the wideſt and deepeſt, and, in all reſpects, much the beſt: for the other two, denominated the eaſt and weſt bays, are ſcarcely more than good landing places, where boats may conveniently put their caſks on ſhore.

CUMBERLAND-BAY is well ſecured to the ſouthward, and is only expoſed from the N. by W. to the E. by S. but, as the northerly winds ſeldom blow in that climate, and never with any violence, the danger from that quarter is not worth attending to: however, the ſouthern winds, which generally prevail here, frequently blow off the land in violent guſts and ſqualls, which ſeldom laſt longer than two or three minutes. It is adviſeable for all ſhips to anchor on the weſtern ſide of this bay, within little more than two cables length of the beach: where they may ride in forty fathom

of water, and be, in a great meaſure, ſheltered from a large heavy ſea, which comes rolling in whenever an eaſtern or a weſtern wind blows.

THE northern part of this iſland, is compoſed of high craggy hills, many of which are inacceſſible, though generally covered with trees: but the ſoil is ſo looſe and ſhallow, that very large trees on the hills ſoon periſh for want of root, and are then eaſily overturned; which occaſioned the death of one of commodore *Anſon*'s ſailors. The *Spaniſh* priſoners obſerved, to the commodore, that the appearance of the hills in ſome part of the iſland was like that of the mountains in *Chili*, where the gold is found: ſo that it is not impoſſible but mines might be diſcovered here. In ſome places, there are ſeveral hills of a peculiar ſort of red earth, exceeding vermilion in colour; which, perhaps, on examination, might prove uſeful for many purpoſes.

THE ſouthern part of the iſland is widely different from the reſt; being dry, ſtoney, and deſtitute of trees; as alſo very low and flat, compared with the hills on the northern part: it is ſurrounded by a ſteep ſhore; and, having little or no freſh water, is never frequented by ſhips: beſides, it is expoſed to the ſoutherly wind, which generally blows here the whole year round, and very hard in the winter ſolſtice.

THE trees, of which the woods on the northern ſide of the iſland are compoſed, are moſt of them aromatics, and of many different ſorts: but there are none of them of a ſize to yield any conſiderable timber, except the myrtle-trees, which are the largeſt on the iſland; though even theſe will not work to a greater length than forty feet. The top

of

of the myrtle-tree is circular, and appears as uniform and regular, as if it had been clipped by art; bearing on its back an excreſcence like moſs, which in taſte and ſmell, reſembles garlic. There is alſo the piemento-tree; and the cabbage-tree, which generally grows on the precipices, and in no great plenty, each tree yielding only a ſingle cabbage.

EXCLUSIVE of a great number of plants of various kinds, not commonly known to mariners, almoſt all the vegetables are found here, which are uſually eſteemed to be particularly adapted to the cure of thoſe ſcorbutic diſorders, which are contracted by ſalt diet, and long voyages. There are great quantities of water creſſes, and purſlain; with excellent wild ſorrel, and a vaſt profuſion of turnips, and *Sicilian* radiſhes: beſides, there are many acres of ground covered with oats and clover.

THE excellence of the climate, and the looſeneſs of the ſoil, render the place extremely proper for all kinds of vegetation: for, if the ground is any where accidentally turned up, it is immediately overgrown with turnips, and *Sicilian* radiſhes. Commodore *Anſon*, therefore, having with him garden-ſeeds of all kinds, and ſtones of different ſorts of fruits, ſowed lettices, carrots, and other garden-plants; for the better accommodation of his countrymen who ſhould touch here again. He alſo ſet in the woods a great variety of plumb, apricot, and peach-ſtones; the laſt of which have throve to a very remarkable degree.

THIS may be ſufficient in general, as to the ſoil and vegetable productions of the iſland; but the face of the country, at leaſt the north part of it, is ſo extremely ſingular, as to merit a particular

conſideration. The woods, which cover moſt of the ſteepeſt hills, are free from all buſhes and underwood; affording an eaſy paſſage through every part of them; and the irregularities of the hills and precipices, neceſſarily trace out, by their various combinations, a great number of romantic vallies; moſt of which have a ſtream of the cleareſt water running through them, that tumble in caſcades from rock to rock, as the bottom of the valley, by the courſe of the neighbouring hills, is, at any time, broken into a ſudden ſharp deſcent. But ſome particular ſpots occurred in theſe vallies, where the ſhade and fragrance of the contiguous woods, the loftineſs of the over-hanging rocks, and the tranſparency and frequent falls of the neighbouring ſtreams, preſented ſcenes of ſuch elegance and dignity, as would be rivalled with difficulty in any other part of the globe: for it is in this place, perhaps, that the ſimple productions of unaſſiſted nature, may be ſaid to excel all the fictitious deſcriptions of the moſt animated imagination.

FORMER writers have related, that this iſland abounded with great numbers of goats, and their accounts are not to be queſtioned; as this place was the uſual haunt of the buccaneers and privateers, who formerly frequented thoſe ſeas. There are two inſtances to confirm this; one of a *Moſquito Indian*, and the other of *Alexander Selkirk*, a *Scotchman*, who were left here by their reſpective ſhips, lived alone upon the iſland for ſeveral years, and conſequently were no ſtrangers to its produce. *Selkirk*, who was the laſt, after a ſtay of between four and five years, was taken off the place by the *Duke* and *Dutcheſs* privateers of *Briſtol*, in 1709; whoſe

whoſe manner of life, during his ſolitude, was, in moſt particulars very remarkable; and he tells us, among other things, that, as he often caught more goats than he wanted, he ſometimes marked their ears, and let them go; which was found to be true, when commodore *Anſon* was here; for his men caught ſeveral of theſe animals marked in this manner. But the goats are now much diminiſhed, through the policy of the *Spaniards*, who were apprized of the advantages which the buccaneers and privateers drew from the proviſions of goats-fleſh; and therefore endeavoured to extirpate the breed, to deprive their enemies of this relief. For which purpoſe, they have put on ſhore great numbers of large dogs, who have increaſed a-pace, and have deſtroyed all the goats in the acceſſible parts of the country; ſo that there now remain only a few among the craggs and precipices, where the dogs cannot follow them. Theſe are divided into ſeparate herds, of twenty or thirty each, that inhabit diſtinct faſtneſſes, and never mingle with each other: by which means it is extremely difficult to kill them; and the whole number in all the herds together are thought ſcarcely to exceed two hundred upon the whole iſland.

THE dogs, who are maſters of all the acceſſible parts of the iſland, are of various kinds; ſome of them very large, and are multiplied to a prodigious degree: but, as it is ſeldom that goats fall in their way, it is imagined they live principally upon young ſeals.

As commodore *Anſon*'s men were tired of eating fiſh, and as goats-fleſh was ſcarce, they began to eat ſeals, which they came to reliſh by degrees,

and called it lamb: beſides, they eat another amphibious creature, called a ſea-lion, which they called beef. Seals are found here in the greateſt plenty of any part of the world; their ſkins being of an extraordinary value for the fineneſs of their furs, and their fat makes very good train-oil. The ſea-lion bears ſome reſemblance to the ſeal, but is much larger; for, when arrived to full growth, they are from twelve to twenty feet in length, and from eight to fifteen in circumference. Their ſkin is about an inch thick, beneath which is at leaſt a foot of fat before a man can come at either lean or bones, and the fat of ſome of the largeſt will afford a butt of oil: they are likewiſe ſo full of blood, that if they are deeply wounded in a dozen places, there will inſtantly guſh out as many fountains of blood, ſpouting to a conſiderable diſtance; and it is known that one of them will bleed two hogſheads full. Their ſkins are covered with ſhort hair, of a light dun colour; but their tails, and their fins, which ſerve them for feet on ſhore, are almoſt black: their fins, or feet, are divided at the ends like fingers; the limb which joins them not reaching to the extremities, and each of theſe fingers is furniſhed with a nail. The males have a large ſnout, or trunk, hanging down five or ſix inches below the end of the upper-jaw; which the females have not, nor are they of ſo large a ſize. Theſe animals divide their time equally between the land and ſea; continuing at ſea all the ſummer, and coming on ſhore at the ſetting in of the winter, where they reſide during all that ſeaſon. In this interval they engender, and bring forth their young; having generally

two

two at a birth; which at firſt are about the ſize of a full-grown ſeal, and are ſuckled with the milk of the dam. During the time they continue at ſhore, they feed on the graſs and verdure which grows near the banks of the freſh-water ſtreams; and, when not employed in feeding, ſleep in herds in the moſt miry places they can find. Commodore *Anſon*'s people killed many of theſe animals for food; particularly for their hearts and tongues, which were eſteemed as very good eating, and preferable even to thoſe of bullocks. In general, there is no difficulty in killing them; becauſe they are incapable either of eſcaping or reſiſting; for their motion is the moſt unwieldy that can be conceived; and their blubber, all the time they are moving, is agitated in large waves under their ſkins.

THESE are the principal animals, which commodore *Anſon*'s people found upon the iſland: for they ſaw but few birds, and thoſe chiefly hawks, black-birds, owls, and humming-birds. They neither ſaw the pardela, which burrows in the ground, and which former writers have mentioned to be found here: but, as their holes are often met with, it is ſuppoſed the dogs have deſtroyed them, as they have almoſt done the cats, which were numerous in *Selkirk*'s time; but commodore *Anſon*'s people ſaw only one or two during their whole ſtay: however, the rats ſtill keep their ground, and are very numerous.

THE whole bay is well ſtored with great variety of fiſh; having large cod, cavallies, gropers, breams, maids, ſilver-fiſh, congers of a peculiar kind, and a black fiſh called a chimney-ſweeper,

like a carp in ſhape, and very delicious in taſte. The beach, indeed, is every where ſo full of rocks and looſe ſtones, that there is no poſſibility of haling the ſeyne; but great quantities of fiſh are to be caught in angling; and the craw-fiſh lie in great abundance near the water's edge, weighing generally eight or nine pounds a-piece, and of a moſt excellent flavour.

THIS iſland is ſo well ſituated for making reprizals upon the *Spaniards* in the *South-Seas*, that, during the late war, the *Spaniſh* merchants expreſsly ordered their captains to keep out of ſight of it; as well knowing, that, if any *Engliſh* ſquadron was in thoſe ſeas, the iſland of *Fernandez* was moſt probably the place of their rendezvous.

THE iſland of *Maſa Fuero*, is about twenty-two leagues to the weſtward of *Juan Fernandez*; being near four miles in length. It had been repreſented, by former navigators, as a barren rock: but, while commodore *Anſon* was at *Juan Fernandez*, he was joined by the *Glouceſter*, commanded by captain *Mitchel*, who acquainted the commodore, that he had been forced by the winds as far as this iſland; and that he endeavoured to ſend his boat on ſhore there for water, of which he could obſerve ſeveral ſtreams; but the wind blew ſo ſtrong upon the ſhore, and occaſioned ſuch a ſurf, that it was impoſſible for the boat to land; though the attempt was not altogether uſeleſs, as his people returned with a boat-load of fiſh. The captain alſo aſſured the commodore, that this iſland was almoſt every where covered with trees and verdure; adding, that it appeared to him far from impoſſible but ſome ſmall bay might be found on it,

it, which might afford ſufficient ſhelter for any ſhip deſirous of refreſhing there.

In conſequence of this intelligence, the commodore ſent the *Tryal* ſloop to examine this iſland; which was accordingly done; and, as the knowledge of it may be of great conſequence hereafter, the accounts given of this place, to the commodore, are neceſſary to be inſerted.

The *Tryal* ſloop found that it bore from the greater *Juan Fernandez* W. by S. and that it was a much larger and better ſpot than had been generally reported: for former writers have repreſented it as a ſmall barren rock, deſtitute of wood and water, and altogether inacceſſible: but the *Tryal*'s people found it was covered with trees, and that there were ſeveral fine falls of water pouring down its ſides into the ſea. They alſo found, that there was a place where a ſhip might come to an anchor on the north ſide of it; though the anchorage is inconvenient; for the bank extends but a little way, is ſteep, and has very deep water upon it; ſo that ſhips muſt come to an anchor very near the ſhore, and there lie expoſed to all the winds but a ſouther-ly one: and, beſides the inconvenience of the anchorage, there is likewiſe a reef of rocks running off the eaſtern point of the iſland, about two miles in length; though there is little danger to be feared from them, becauſe they are always to be ſeen by the ſeas breaking over them.

This place has at preſent one advantage beyond the iſland of *Juan Fernandez proper*; for it abounds with goats, who have not been accuſtomed to be diſturbed, and are no ways ſhy or apprehenſive of danger, till they have been frequently fired at.

at. Theſe animals reſide here in great tranquility; becauſe the *Spaniards* have not thought the iſland conſiderable enough to be frequented by their enemies, and therefore have not been ſolicitous to deſtroy the proviſions upon it; ſo that no dogs were on the iſland when the *Tryal* ſloop was there: though, it is probable, the *Spaniards* will not neglect to deſtroy the goats here, as well as upon the other iſland, ſince they are now ſenſible that they can be ſerviceable to their enemies. Beſides the goats, the *Tryal*'s people found there great numbers of ſeals and ſea-lions: and, upon the whole, they ſeemed to imagine, that though it was not the moſt eligible place for a ſhip to refreſh at; yet, in caſe of neceſſity, it might afford ſome ſort of ſhelter, and prove of conſiderable uſe, eſpecially to a ſingle ſhip, who might apprehend meeting with a ſuperior force at the other iſland.

COMMODORE *Anſon* continued on the iſland of *Juan Fernandez*, or cruizing about it, from the 12th of *June*, to the 19th of *September* 1741, when the ſeaſon ſet in for navigating theſe ſeas, and the commodore proceeded upon his voyage; having firſt ſent out captain *Mitchel*, in the *Glouceſter*, with orders to proceed to the latitude of five degrees ſouth, and to cruize there off the high land of *Paita*, at ſuch a diſtance from ſhore, as ſhould prevent his being diſcovered: on which ſtation he was to continue, till he ſhould be joined by the commodore, which would be whenever it ſhould be known that the vice-roy had fitted out the ſhips at *Callao*; or, on Mr. *Anſon*'s receiving any other intelligence, that ſhould make it neceſſary to unite their ſtrength.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The DESCRIPTION *of* PARAGUAY, *or* RIO DE LA PLATA.

SECTION I.

The extent, and nature of the country; with ſome account of the Indians. *In what manner the* Portugueſe *firſt invaded this country, under* Alexius Garcia. *What diſcoveries were made here by* Sebaſtian Cabot; *and how the* Spaniards *made their ſettlements in this country, under Don* Pedro de Mendoza: *with ſome remarks on the jeſuits of* Paraguay. *The ſix diſtricts, or ſub-diviſions, of this province; with a particular account of thoſe of* Paraguay proper, *and* Tucuman; *their principal towns, number of inhabitants, rivers, and trade.*

THIS extenſive tract of territory received its name from the river *Plata*, which riſes near the city of that name in *Peru*, and runs to the ſouth-eaſt through this country. It is bounded on the north by part of *Brazil*, the land of the *Amazons*, and part of *Peru*: on the eaſt by the ocean: on the ſouth by *Chili*, and the *Terra Magellanica*; as alſo on the weſt by another part of *Peru*. Its utmoſt northern boundaries are generally placed in 12 degrees of ſouth latitude, beyond the town of

Porto

Porto de los Reyes, which is ſituated at the top of the lake of *Xarayes*: and the ſouthern borders are commonly ſet down in 35 degrees 30 minutes: ſo that it is about 1380 miles in length. It alſo extends from about the 48th to the 66th degree of weſt longitude, in the broadeſt part; which is from the *Andes*, to the mouth of the river *St. Francis*: ſo that its greateſt breadth is about 1080 miles; though not above half that number on the ſouth extremity, where it is narroweſt.

IT is an old obſervation, that names are not always impoſed according to the reaſon of things: thus *Columbus*, who diſcovered the new world, had not the honour of giving his name to it; but it was called *America*, from *Americus Veſputius*, who deſcribed it, or at leaſt firſt publiſhed his deſcriptions to the world: and, in the ſame manner, the *Spaniards* call that great river, which falls into the ocean in 35 degrees of ſouth latitude, *Rio de la Plata*; though, in reality, it is the leaſt of three rivers, which compoſe that magnificent ſtream. The firſt of theſe is the great river of *Paraguay*, which riſes in the latitude of 16; and, ſomewhat below the city of *Aſſumption*, it joins the *Rio de la Plata*, in the latitude of about 25. About 100 miles lower, they are joined by the great river *Parana*: beſides, there are ſeveral other rivers, which concur in forming ſo great a body of water in ſo long a courſe, and roll in conjunction towards the ſea.

THAT part of this country, which lies weſt of the river *Paraguay*, conſiſts of large plain lands, extending about 750 miles in length; without any trees; or, at leaſt, any thing that looks like timber:

ber: but, in the country to the eaſtward of that river, which borders on *Brazil*, there is a variety of hills and vallies, of woods and champaign.

THE north part of this country, which lies in the tropic of *Capricorn*, has annually very heavy rains, ſtorms, and tempeſts, when the ſun is vertical, in *November* and *December*; as other countries have, which lie in the ſame latitude within the ſouthern tropic. At this time, all the flat country is overflowed; their ciſterns, and reſervoirs of water, being repleniſhed, which ſerve them the reſt of the year, till the rains return: their lands are moiſtened, ſo as to be capable of tillage; and, whenever theſe rains fail, it occaſions a famine among the inhabitants.

BUT it is directly contrary, in that part of the country which lies ſouth of the tropic of *Capricorn*; for it is ſummer there in *November*, *December*, and *January*: when the rivers that riſe within the tropics, ſwell after the rains are fallen, and overflow their banks as they paſs through the ſouthern parts of the country, which they enrich with a great fertility.

THE *Indians* of *Paraguay* are repreſented as a brave people; having defeated ſeveral conſiderable bodies of *Spaniards*, when they firſt invaded their country. It was a great many years before the *Spaniards* could fix themſelves even in the plains: and the natives defended themſelves ſo well in the woods and mountains, to the eaſtward of the river *Uragua*, that they were never ſubdued, till the jeſuits found means to inſinuate themſelves into their good opinion, and brought them into a kind of ſubmiſſion to theſe artful miſſionaries, by the force of flattery,

flattery, and without the leaſt compulſion of arms; where theſe divines live like ſovereign princes, and have founded a kind of government that never before exiſted in the world; which will be more particularly repreſented under the diviſion of *Indian America*.

THE firſt adventurer that penetrated into this country was *Alexius Garcia*, a *Portugueſe*; who was ſent upon that enterprize, by the governor of *Braſil*, in the year 1524: when he marched acroſs *La Plata*, as far as the borders of *Peru*, where he amaſſed a great quantity of plate: but was cut off by the *Indians*, on his return, with moſt of his men: and *George Sedenho*, who was ſent out with a party to ſupport him, alſo ſhared the ſame miſerable fate.

SEBASTIAN CABOT was employed, in the year 1526, by the emperor *Charles* Vth, to make a farther diſcovery of ſouth *America*. He entered the mouth of the river *La Plata*, which was firſt diſcovered by *John Diaz de Solis*, in 1515; ſailed up that river as far as the place where *Garcia* was defeated, and met with the plate he had accumulated on the confines of *Peru*, which he purchaſed of the natives for an inconſiderable value; and concluded he had made an important diſcovery; as he apprehended this treaſure to be the product of *Paraguay*. Accordingly, he erected a fort where the town of *Aſſumption* now ſtands: after which, he detached *Alvara Ramon*, with one of his ſhips, to ſail up the river *Uragua*, and get farther intelligence of the mines, which he imagined were to be found near the banks of that river: but *Ramon*, and his people, were cut off by the natives.

WHEN

When *Cabot* had made ſome farther diſcoveries of the country, he ſent *Ferdinand Calderon*, and *George Barlow*, with intelligence thereof to *Spain*, who delivered their diſpatches to the emperor, at *Toledo*, about the end of *December*, 1527. Upon this advice, his imperial majeſty offered the merchants, who had contributed towards the expence of this voyage, that they might continue the expedition, and ſhare in the profits; which they refuſed, and his majeſty took it all upon himſelf: but, though the conſequence of maintaining a diſcovery, 600 miles in length, was ſo conſiderable a thing, nothing was done for a long time upon this occaſion. However, *Cabot* continued in expectation of ſupplies for about five years; when his patience was exhauſted, and he returned to *Spain* with one ſhip, which he had ſaved, and all the men that were left alive. He repaired immediately to court, and informed the emperor of the nature of his expedition; the ſubſtance of his relation being as follows: That the chief race of the *Indians*, in thoſe parts, was that of the *Guaramies*, a warlike, treacherous, and imperious people, who called all the other *Indians* ſlaves that could not ſpeak their language; continually waging war on them, wherein they were extremely bloody and cruel, killing all they could, without taking any priſoners. The territory of the city *De la Plata* was inhabited by this nation, and their country extended above 1500 miles: from whence they invaded *Peru*, and returned home in a victorious manner: but *Cabot* concluded a treaty of peace and amity with theſe people; eſtabliſhed the colony of *San Eſpiritus*; got information of them concerning the country, as alſo

alſo of the gold and ſilver of *Peru*; from whence the river was called *De la Plata*, or of plate, or ſilver, for there is none in its neighbourhood; and he found ſeveral valuable ſtones, which the natives gave by way of barter. He alſo reported that the country was very plentiful and temperate; the nations, in it, being the *Charruans*, and *Quiondies*; in the iſlands *Guaranies*; higher up, on a river on the left hand, the *Carcarans*; ſtill higher up, the *Trimbuns*, *Currundans*, and *Camies*; farther on, the *Quilbaſans*, *Colibines*, and *Chanans*; next, the *Mecoretans*, and the *Mepenes*; beyond which, there were twenty-ſeven other nations of different names, cuſtoms, and languages.

CABOT found, that credit was the more readily given to this report, as he had brought home ſo conſiderable a quantity of treaſure. Upon which, ſeveral of the beſt families in *Spain* ſollicited the court to be ſent on an expedition to *Paraguay*: in conſequence of which, a body of 2200 land men, beſides marines, were embarked for the river of *Plata*; among whom were thirty heirs of noble families; and the whole was commanded by Don *Pedro de Mendoza*; who arrived at the mouth of the river *La Plata*, and founded the town of *Buenos Ayres*, in 1535. But this was not done without great oppoſition from the natives, who defeated ſeveral bodies of *Spaniards*: after which, *Mendoza* returned to *Spain*; leaving *Oyola*, his deputy-governor, behind him, with part of the troops; who abandoned *Buenos Ayres*, and retired to the fort of *Aſſumption*.

THE governor *Alvaro Nunez Cabeza de Vaca*, afterwards made farther diſcoveries; planted colo-

nies

nies as far as the north of *Tucuman*; rebuilt *Buenos Ayres*, and founded ſome other towns near the mouth of the river *La Plata*.

FRANCIS de ACQUIRE was detached with 200 men from *Chili*, in 1553, by *Baldivia*; when he built the city of *St. Jago*, the metropolis of *La Plata*. *John Gomez Zarita*, was alſo ſent from *Chili* to *La Plata*, with another body of troops, in 1555; when he built the town of *Cordova*, and made an entire conqueſt of all the country as far as the river *Paraguay*: but the provinces to the eaſtward of that river, inſtead of being conquered by the force of the *Spaniards*, were reduced by the artifice of the miſſionaries; in return for which ſervice, the crown of *Spain* conferred the property of that country upon thoſe fathers, who have thereby eſtabliſhed for themſelves a temporal dominion.

THE unconquered *Indians* are governed by their own chiefs, or caziques: but that part of the country which has been ſubjected to the dominion of *Spain*, is under the direction of two *Spaniſh* governors; one of them having his reſidence at *St. Jago*, in the diſtrict of *Tucuman*; and the other at the town of *Aſſumption*, in the diſtrict of *Rio de la Plata*: though both of them are under the ſuperintendency of the vice-roy of *Peru*; and they have alſo ſub-governors in every diſtrict.

THIS country has one archiepiſcopal ſee, being that of *Rio de la Plata*: with four ſuffragan biſhoprics; *St. Jago del Eſtero*, *Aſſumption*, *Panama*, and *Paraguay*.

THE province of *Paraguay*, comprehends the ſeveral diſtricts, or ſubdiviſions, following: 1*ſt. Paraguay proper.* 2*d. Tucuman.* 3*d. Rio de la Plata.*

4*th*. *Guayra*. 5*th*. *Parana*. 6*th*. *Uraguay*: and the following is a diſtinct repreſentation of each of theſe provinces.

I. *PARAGUAY PROPER*, or *PARAQUARIA*. This is the moſt northern diſtrict; being bounded by the country of the *Amazons* on the north; on the eaſt by the province of *Guayra*; on the ſouth by thoſe of *Rio de la Plata*, and *Parana*; and on the weſt by that of *Tucuman*: but on the weſt and north parts its true boundaries are very uncertain.

THE chief towns in *Paraguay proper*, lie in the following order: 1. *Aſſumption*. 2. *Villa Rica*. 3. *Maracajo*. 4. *Aracacia*. 5. *Upane*. 6. *Puerto de la Candelaria*. 7. *Santa Fee*. 8. *Xeres*. 9. *Saint Ignatio*. and 10. *Old Conception*.

1. *ASSUMPTION*, the metropolis of *Paraguay*, ſtands on the eaſtern banks of the river of its name, a little above the place where the *Picolmago* falls into it; being ſituated in 59 degrees 35 minutes of weſt longitude, and 24° 47′ of ſouth latitude; about 150 miles above the confluence of the *Paraguay* and *Parana*, where the former begins to be called *Rio de la Plata*. It was built by the *Spaniards* in 1538; being remarkable for its healthy and advantageous ſituation, as well as for the number of its inhabitants; having about four hundred families of *Spaniards*, and ſeveral thouſands of meſticoes, and mulattoes. The adjacent territory is exceeding rich and fruitful; producing plenty and variety of fruits, not only of thoſe which are natural to the country, but of thoſe which have been tranſplanted thither from *Spain*; and the air is ſo temperate, that the trees are cloathed with a perennial and delightful verdure. There are likewiſe

likewiſe very noble and rich paſtures in the circumjacent plains, on which are bred very numerous herds of cattle; ſo that there is ſuch an extraordinary plenty of all proviſions in the town, as to make the natives, blacks and others, ambitious of living in it.

THE *Indian* nations that border on its territory, are the *Quatatoes*, *Mogaloes*, *Connanenaquaes*, and others: who are all paſſionately fond of, and affectionate to the *Spaniards*; being ready to ſerve them, on all occaſions, with a ſincere and cordial friendſhip. For, it is to be obſerved, that the *Spaniſh* inhabitants are the deſcendants of ſome of the beſt families in *Spain*; who ſettled here, ſoon after the dregs and ſcum of their own, and of other *European* nations, had flocked into other parts of *America*; and, being moſtly gentry, knew better how to gain the affections of theſe people, than the *Portugueſe*.

CONTIGUOUS to the town is a mountain of extraordinary height; and, about 450 miles higher up the river there is a lake, called by the natives *Utapua*; which is principally taken notice of, for a rock that rears itſelf up in the middle of it, of a prodigious height, and extraordinary circumference.

2d. *VILLA RICA*, or the *Rich Town*, is alſo ſituated near the eaſtern banks of the *Paraguay*; about 24 miles north of *Aſſumption*, on a ſmall river of no name, or conſequence: but, for what is to be found in the accounts of this country, *Villa Rica* has nothing conſiderable to anſwer its pompous name.

MARACAJO, *ARACACIA*, and *UPANE*, are ſtill farther northwards, and leſs known.

THOSE called *Puerto de la Candelaria*, and *Santa Fee*, are the two moſt diſtant northward from the metropolis; and have nothing worth notice, except their fruitful territories. The latter is ſituate between the two ſmall rivers of *Pierai* and *Yaquorii*, which fall into the *Paraguay*; but the town ſtands about 32 miles eaſt from the river. *Xeres*, called *De la Frontera*, by the *Spaniards*, as it is the moſt eaſtern verge of their dominions in this country, was once a flouriſhing place, and had a miſſion, or college of miſſionaries; being ſituated in the inland part, between the *Paraguay* and *Parana*; but it has long ſince gone into decay, and now lies in ruins.

THESE towns are all on the eaſt ſide of the *Paraguay:* but on the weſt are the towns of *Conception*, and *Saint Ignatio*. The former is ſituated on the *Vermeio*, or *Red River*, which comes down from the mountains of *Peru*, and falls into the *Paraguay:* being formerly well inhabited by the *Spaniards*; but has ſince gone to ruin. That of *Saint Ignatio*, is ſituated on the river *Lobo*; but, being likewiſe abandoned by the *Spaniards*, is now in the ſame condition as the former.

II. THE province of *TUCUMAN*, is bounded on the north by *Chaco*; on the ſouth by *Cuyo*, and the territory of the *Pampas*; on the eaſt by *Paraguay proper*, and *Rio de Plata*; and on the weſt by the imperial biſhoprick of *St. Jago* in *Chili*; extending itſelf from *Rio Vermeio*, which parts it from *Chaco* on the north, to that called *Rio Quarto*, which divides it from *Cuyo* on the ſouth; being almoſt ten deg. that is, from the 24th to the 34th of ſouth latitude: and from eaſt to weſt, where broadeſt, that is, from the river *Salado*, to the ridge *De la*

Cor-

Cordillera, which parts it from *Chili*, it extends more than 7 degrees; that is, from 62 to 69 ½ of weſt longitude: ſo that it lies, for the moſt part, in a very temperate and healthy climate; and, though it has no mines, either of gold or ſilver, its territory is both rich and well cultivated, eſpecially towards the government of *Chili*; but it has ſome deſart places towards the *Magellanic* ſide.

THE chief places in *Tucuman* are, 1. *San Jago del Eſtero*. 2. *San Salvador*, or *Xuxui*. 3. *San Miguel*. 4. *Salta*, or *Lerma*. 5. *Londres*. 6. *Cordoua*. 7. *Eſteco*. 8. *Rioja*. 9. *Pulupas*. 10. *Sota la Punta*. 11. *Capo de San Lucia*. 12. *De los Santos*.

1*ſt*. *SAN JAGO del ESTERO*, the metropolis of this province, and an epiſcopal ſee, is ſituated in 65 degrees of weſt longitude, and 27 degrees 40 minutes of ſouth latitude, on the banks of the *Dolce*, or *Sweet River*, which is here pretty large and navigable; being able to carry large veſſels, and affording plenty and variety of fiſh. However, the town is not very conſiderable; conſiſting only of about 300 houſes; or, as ſome ſay, 500 families; and is quite without walls, ditch, or any other fence. The general part of the inhabitants are of the meſtico, and mulatto kind; of dark yellow complexions, lazy and ſickly, occaſioned by the heat of the climate; and more given to pleaſure than to any traffic, or induſtry. The town ſtands on a flat ground, but ſurrounded with forreſts, which ſtagnate the air; ſo that there are not above 300 men in it fit to bear arms, including the natives and blacks. The women are generally handſome,

but are frequently troubled with wens, or ſwellings in the throat.

THE neighbouring country is rich, producing plenty of wheat, rice, and barley; as likewiſe fruits of all ſorts, eſpecially figs and raiſins. The forreſts afford plenty of game; but are infeſted with tigers, and other voracious beaſts; particularly one ſort, called guanacos, which are as large as common horſes, with long necks, ſmall heads, and ſhort tails; in whoſe maw is found the occidental bezoar.

THE town has four churches; the cathedral, that of the jeſuits, and two more belonging to other monaſteries. The inquiſitor, or governor of this province, who is a ſecular prieſt, has his reſidence here; and nominates his ſubſtitute officers in the other parts of the country.

THE town is reported to lie almoſt in the midway between the mines of *Potoſi*, and the town of *Buenos Ayres*; being about 150 miles diſtant from each: ſo that the plate is brought here from *Potoſi* on the backs of mules; becauſe the country of the *Charcas*, which lies to the northward of this province, is very mountainous: but, from *St. Jago* to *Buenos Ayres*, the plate is carried in waggons, over one continued plain, where there are neither hills or woods to be diſcovered: however, the place is of no farther conſequence.

2*d*. *SAN SALVADOR*, or *XUXUI*, ſtands near the confines of *Peru*, at the foot of a high mountain, which forms part of the *Andes*. It has a conſiderable river running by it, a little above the place where it falls into the *Leon*; from which both deſcend into the *Rio Vermeio*, or *Red River*.

This

This town has about 300 houſes; and is the moſt northerly of all this province, being within one degree of the ſouthern tropic, and about 249 miles from *Potoſi*.

3*d*. *SAN MIGUEL*, or *St. MICHAEL*, was the firſt town the *Spaniards* founded in this country; and is pleaſantly ſituated on a fertile plain, near the banks of a ſmall river, that falls into the *Rio Dolce*, near *San Jago*, from which it is diſtant about 54 miles to the north-weſt. Mr. *Baudrand*, who calls it *St. Michael de Eſtero*, ſays it is the capital of *Tucuman*, and an epiſcopal ſee, under the metropolitan of *La Plata*. The plain, on which it ſtands, is fertile, producing plenty of wheat, rye, and barley; as alſo ſuch fine graſs, that it breeds great quantities of cattle; and likewiſe yields cotton, flax, ſome wine, and great abundance of wood for all uſes. The air is reckoned one of the ſweeteſt, and moſt ſalubrious in all *Paraguay*; which makes the country well inhabited, and ſtored with all the conveniences of life.

4*th*. *SALTA*, or *LERMA*, ſtands on a ſmall river, which ſoon after falls into a neighbouring lake; being at a little diſtance ſouth-eaſt from *San Salvador*, and eaſt from the burning mountain of *Copiapo*. It is principally inhabited by *Spaniards*; to whom the town, and the adjacent territory, belong; having about 400 houſes, and five or ſix churches, or monaſteries.

It has neither walls, ditches, or any other defence, but the bravery of its inhabitants; who, by the frequent wars they had with their neighbours, are become expert ſoldiers: for, they have about 500 men capable of bearing arms; beſides their

ſlaves, negroes as well as mulattoes, which may amount to about thrice that number.

SALTA is a place of great reſort, on account of the great quantity of corn, meal, wine, cattle, ſalt meat, fat, and other ſuch commodities, which are ſent from hence into *Peru* and other parts.

5th, *LONDRES*, is ſituated near a great marſh of the ſame name, in 29 deg. 12 min. of S. latitude, being built by *Tarita*, governor of this province, in 1555, to keep the natives in awe; who alſo called it *Londres*, in compliment to queen *Mary* of *England*, then conſort to king *Philip* of *Spain*.

6th, *CORDOVA*, or *CORDUBA*, about 300 miles ſouth of *San Jago del Eſtero*, and 480 north-weſt of *Buenos Ayres*, is a conſiderable town in this province; but ſituate on a marſhy, though rich and fertile, ſoil. It has a biſhop, chapter, and ſome monaſteries; beſides a convent of jeſuits; lying in 63 deg. 30 min. of W. longitude, and 31 deg. 30 min. of S. latitude, in a temperate healthy climate, with equal winter and ſummer; all the territory about it being full of cattle, and abounding with excellent paſture. It produces plenty of corn, fruits, and other neceſſaries; and has ſeveral plentiful ſalt-pits; ſo that the town carries on a conſiderable trade in thoſe commodities with *Peru*; eſpecially as it lies on the road to *Buenos Ayres*; taking gold and ſilver in return for its merchandize. The inhabitants are *Spaniards*, and amount to about 300, who are chiefly employed in tilling the ground, and manufacturing of cotton cloth, which they ſend to *Potoſi*.

BUT *ESTECO*, or *Talavera*, *Rioja*, *Pulupas*, and the other places of this province, have nothing conſiderable.

SECTION

SECTION II.

A particular account of the provinces of RIO DE LA PLATA, GUAYRA, PARANA, *and* URAGUAY: *their principal towns, number of inhabitants, rivers, and trade: but more particularly of the commerce of* Buenos Ayres; *and of the* Aſſiento *treaty, for furniſhing it with negroes.*

III. *RIO DE LA PLATA*, or *LA PLATA PROPER*, is ſo called from the remarkable river of that name, along whoſe banks it extends itſelf, on each ſide, about 600 miles in length, from north to ſouth; and about 300, where it is broadeſt, from eaſt to weſt: being bounded on the north by the provinces of *Chaco*, *Paraguay proper*, and *Parana*; on the eaſt by that of *Uraguay*; on the ſouth by the territory of *Pampas*; and on the weſt by *Tucuman*: but the limits of theſe provinces are far from being certainly known; eſpecially thoſe between this province and *Tucuman*; there being no boundaries fixed between them, becauſe the whole country is plain and champaign, without mountains, or hills, or even ſo much as a tree, houſe, or hut, by which they might be terminated.

THE chief towns in this province are, 1. *Buenos Ayres*. 2. *Santa Fee*. 3. *Corricentes*. 4. *Santa Lucia*. and 5. *Chanas*; beſides ſeveral others of leſs conſequence.

1. THE town of *BUENOS AYRES*, is ſo called from its pleaſant and healthy ſituation; being ſituated in 57 deg. of W. longitude, and 34 deg.

25 min. of ſouth latitude, upon a gentle riſing ground, at about 50 leagues from the mouth of the *Rio de la Plata*, and upon the ſouth ſide of it; that river being here 7 leagues in breadth, and navigable by any ſhip 60 leagues above the town; but no farther, on account of a great cataract. The churches and houſes were very mean and low, till within theſe few years; being commonly built with mud, and the latter but one ſtory high; though not ſo much for want of ſtone, as of lime, which they have lately learnt to burn from the *Europeans*, as likewiſe to make bricks and tiles. The whole town contains about 4000 houſes, and conſiſts of two principal ſtreets croſſing each other; but has ſix churches, one of which is the cathedral, and four others belong to four different monaſteries eſtabliſhed here; being the trinitarians, franciſcans, dominicans, and jeſuits. This town is the reſidence of a *Spaniſh* governor, who lives in a caſtle, or fort, defended only by mud walls, mounted with 40 cannon, and generally garriſoned by 400 or 500 men.

FATHER *Feuillee* ſays, that the winters are commonly very rainy here; the winds fierce; with thunders frequent and dangerous: as alſo that the ſummers are exceſſive hot, and would be ſcarcely ſupportable, if they were not alleviated by cooling winds, which commonly begin about eight of the clock in the morning, and continue till the evening.

THE territory about it, which is of a great extent, is very fertile in fruits of all ſorts, and full of paſture grounds covered with great quantities of cattle; which would be ſtill more ſo, if duly cultivated, eſpecially in corn; but the people are indolent,

dolent, and content themſelves with what nature produces without labour. It formerly bore very excellent vines, from which they made ſome ſorts of exquiſite wines; beſides the vaſt quantities of grapes they dried for uſe. But theſe they ſuffered to be deſtroyed by the piſmires; which chanced one year to appear in ſuch ſwarms, that they eat them all up root and branch; ſo that the *Spaniards* were obliged to pluck them up; and have now only a few that grow in gardens, which muſt be kept in veſſels full of water, to prevent theſe inſects from deſtroying them.

HOWEVER, *Buenos Ayres* is a very conſiderable place of trade; as all *European* merchandizes are brought here, and ſent from hence to *Peru* and *Chili*: beſides, great numbers of negroes were alſo brought here, and ſold to thoſe countries; which commerce was carried on by other nations, in the following manner.

THE firſt *Aſſiento*, or farm, was a treaty, or contract, made in 1702, between the king of *Spain*, and the *French Guinea* company, for furniſhing the *Spaniſh* dominions in *America* with negro-ſlaves: whereby the complement of negroes was to be 3800 yearly, during the continuance of the war about the *Spaniſh* ſucceſſion; and 4800 in time of peace: the duty being fixed at 33 piaſters and one third, or 5*l.* 19s. 5*d.* $\frac{1}{4}$ ſterling, for every negro. But, by the treaty of *Utrecht*, the *French* ceded the *Aſſiento* treaty to the *Engliſh*, who entered into a treaty with the *Spaniards*, for the furniſhing of negroes, which was to commence the 1ſt of *May* 1713, and terminate the 1ſt of *May* 1743. The *Engliſh South-Sea* company undertook

took to ſupply *Spaniſh America* yearly, with 4800 negroes; for which the ſame duty was to be paid as had been ſettled by the *French*. The 42*d* article of this treaty, which was the laſt and moſt conſiderable of all, was not included in the treaty with the *French*: for this article permitted the *Engliſh Aſſientiſts* to ſend into the ports of *Spaniſh America*, every year the treaty was to ſubſiſt, a ſhip of 500 tons, laden with the ſame commodities the *Spaniards* uſually ſend there; with a licence to vend the ſame, conjointly with them, at the fairs of *Porto Bello* and *Vera Cruz*; which was a conceſſion diametrically oppoſite to the ancient policy, and uſual jealouſy, of the *Spaniards*, with regard to their *American* commerce. By ſome additional articles, the *Engliſh* were alſo allowed to ſend their ſhip yearly, though the flota, or *Spaniſh* galeons, ſhould not ſail for *America*; that the firſt ten years this veſſel might carry 650 tons; as alſo that the commodities, which might remain after the ſale of the negroes, ſhould be ſent to *Europe*, after the ſlaves had been landed at *Buenos Ayres*; and, if their deſtination was to *Porto Bello*, *Vera Cruz*, *Carthagena*, and other ports of *Spaniſh America*, they ſhould be tranſmitted to the *Antilles*, and none of them to the *South-Sea*. However, on the commencement of the laſt war with *Spain*, the *Engliſh Aſſientiſts* were deprived of four years enjoyment of their trade; which was afterwards entirely relinquiſhed, in prejudice of the company, by a convention between the two crowns, ſubſequent to the definitive treaty of peace; on condition, that the *Spaniſh* monarch ſhould pay what was due to the *Aſſientiſts*, on account of the detention of their ſhip in the year 1726.

THE

THE gold and ſilver of *Peru* and *Chili* are exported from *Buenos Ayres* to *Europe*; as alſo great quantities of hides and tallow, with ſuch other commodities, as are furniſhed by this part of *America*: for the importance of this place principally conſiſts in its convenient ſituation for commerce; whereby the moſt valuable commodities, in the moſt diſtant provinces of the *Spaniſh* empire, are brought here to be exchanged for *European* goods; ſuch as *Vigognia* wool from *Peru*, and copper from *Coquimbo*: as alſo from *Corrientes* and *Paraguay*, tobacco, ſugar, yellow-wax, cotton thread, and cotton cloth; moſt of the latter being uſed at *Buenos Ayres*, and in its neighbourhood, by the ſlaves and other domeſtics; becauſe it is cheaper, and anſwers their purpoſe full as well as either *Dutch* or *French* linnen.

THE merchants of *Buenos Ayres* alſo receive great quantities of the herb called *Paraguay*, which is of great value in theſe countries; the uſe made of it being to compoſe an infuſion, or tea, to recover ſuch perſons as work in the mines from thoſe terrible cholics, and intolerable diſorders in the ſtomach, as are cauſed by the exhalations in ſuch places. The herb of *Paraguay* is of two ſorts; the *Camini*, and *Yerva con Palos*; but they are uſually mixed together, notwithſtanding the one is double the value of the other. Thoſe who go to *Paraguay* to buy this herb, are obliged to ſtay two years before they return: the firſt crop being always beſpoke, and diſpoſed of; ſo that theſe traders muſt content themſelves with making the beſt bargains they are able for the next crop; for which purpoſe, preſents to the governor, and many

many other articles of that ſort, are neceſſary. The annual amount of this trade, is at leaſt a million of pieces of eight, or 179,166*l.* 13*s.* 6*d.* ſterling; all paid for in goods; becauſe no money is permitted to paſs in the government of *Paraguay*. Theſe goods are knives, ſciſſars, ribbands, taffaties, ſilk ſtockings, *Engliſh* bays, hats of all ſorts, and coarſe cloth from *Quito*; which are carried through this great extent of country in little waggons; though there are not leſs than fifteen or ſixteen great rivers between *Buenos Ayres* and *Corrientes*, where the cattle are obliged to ſwim, and the goods are paſſed over on floats, made by taking the waggons to pieces. The merchants never bring any more of theſe commodities to *Buenos Ayres*, than are abſolutely neceſſary for the ſupply of the inhabitants; but ſend them to *Santa Fee*, to avoid the expence of double carriage, and the expence of double duties: from whence they tranſport the herb of *Paraguay* to *Potoſi*, partly in waggons, and partly on mules; which they perform at all times of the year with equal facility; and, though it is a journey of 1500 miles, they commonly perform it in about ſix weeks. They diſpoſe of the herb of *Paraguay* for ready money, and generally gain upon it, *cent. per cent.* having ſometimes made three hundred *per cent.* of the goods by which they purchaſed it in exchange. But the journey to *Chili*, is much more troubleſome; becauſe the paſſage through the mountains is only to be effected from *December* to *March*; when it takes up about a week: though from *St. Jago* to the mines, the way is entirely eaſy, and very pleaſant.

THE

THE commerce between *Buenos Ayres* and *Peru*, in general, is principally for the ſale of cattle and mules: but thoſe who are concerned in the former, muſt firſt aſk permiſſion of the governor; which is never refuſed, if the petition is backed by a preſent of ſome thouſand pieces of eight. The next thing to be done, is to take thirty or forty thouſand of wild cows out of the paſtures belonging to his Catholic majeſty; which is performed by perſons who apply themſelves to that buſineſs for their livelihood, and who deliver theſe animals at about three pieces of eight, or about 10*s.* 9*d.* ſterling, a head: at which rate, 30,000 cattle may come to about a hundred thouſand pieces of eight, or 17,916*l.* ſterling; and may fetch at market two hundred and fifty thouſand, or 44,741*l.* 12*s.* 6*d.* ſterling.

THE commerce of mules is carried on in a very different manner: for the merchants of *Peru* and *Potoſi* ſend factors annually to *Buenos Ayres* on this account. They firſt obtain a licence from the governor, on giving him a very conſiderable preſent: after which, they addreſs themſelves to the inhabitants of *Buenos Ayres*, and to ſuch perſons as have farms in the neighbourhood; who enter into agreements, ſpecifying the times when, and the number of beaſts that ſhall be delivered. Theſe mules are received at the appointed time; when the purchaſers mark them with a hot iron on the ſhoulders, and are afterwards to maintain them at their own expence. They coſt between 2 or 3 pieces of eight each, or about 9*s.* ſterling; and are driven by pretty quick journies to *Salta*, which is about two thirds of the way to *Potoſi*; where they winter,

winter, and are fatted with all imaginable care. When they are in full fleſh, they are conducted to *Potoſi*, where they are ſold for 7, 8, or 9 pieces of eight *per* head, or generally for about thirty ſhillings ſterling: but ſuch as are carried farther into *Peru*, are ſold for 40 or 50 pieces of eight, or about 8 *l.* ſterling; and ſometimes much more.

THERE is alſo a contraband trade carried on from *Buenos Ayres* with the *Portugueſe*, who poſſeſs the oppoſite ſhore of the *Rio de la Plata*; and take occaſion, at proper opportunities, to ſend little veſſels laden with their own commodities, as well as with ſuch as they receive from *Europe*; which is very frequently done, though the *Spaniſh* governors are well apprized of ſuch tranſactions: but it is intereſt governs them in this part of the *Indies*.

2*d*. *SANTA FEE*, or *St. FAITH*, is the next *Spaniſh* eſtabliſhment in this province, to that of *Buenos Ayres*, from which it is diſtant about 210 miles to the north-weſt; being ſituated in 39 degrees, 40 minutes of weſt longitude, and in 31 degrees, 40 minutes of ſouth latitude, at the conflux of the rivers *Salado* and *Paraguay*: all the territory quite down to *Buenos Ayres*, on each ſide of the river, being very delightful, and rich in all productions. The town is built of brick, and was founded by the *Spaniards* for the defence of the rich gold and ſilver mines which are in the neighbourhood of this ſettlement: though the *Spaniards* are averſe to opening them, for fear they ſhould encourage ſome of their enemies to come and take poſſeſſion of their treaſure.

3*d*. *CORRIENTES*, or *CORIENTES*, is the next town in courſe up the river, and ſtands about

about 80 leagues higher; being built by the *Spaniards* at the confluence of the *Parana* and *Paraguay*; but it is ſo ſmall and inconſiderable, that it noways anſwers the dignity of its ſituation, between thoſe two remarkable rivers. *Santa Lucia*, and *Chanas*, are ſtill leſs worthy of notice; being only villages, lying on the river between the two towns of *Santa Fee*, and *Corrientes*.

4*th*. The province of *Parana*, is ſo called from the great river of the ſame name, which is its boundary on the ſouth, where it divides it from *Uragua*: it is alſo bounded by *Guayra*, and *Paraguay proper* on the north; by *Braſil* on the eaſt; and by *La Plata proper* on the weſt. Its length, as far as it has been diſcovered, is computed to be about 400 miles; though great parts of it are unknown: and the breadth, in ſome places, is about 340 miles.

The towns belonging to this diſtrict, formerly lay on the *Parana*, in the following order: *San Ignatio* on the weſt-ſide of it, about 30 leagues above the place where it joins with the *Paraguay*: *Itapoa*, or the *Incarnation*, about 16 leagues higher on the ſame ſide: *Corpus*, about 20 leagues higher on the eaſt-ſide: *Mundai*, on a river of the ſame name, near its fall into the *Parana* on the weſt: *Santa Maria d' Ignazu* on the eaſt, and now lying in ruins: *Acarai*, over againſt it on the weſt-ſide: *Jovara* on a river of the ſame name: and *Paquiri* on another of its name, oppoſite to it. But very little is known of theſe towns, except their ſituation; and much leſs of thoſe of *Loretto* and *San Ignatio*, on the *Cucapa* and *Yuti*, which lie

remote from the river; as alſo of that of *St. Ann*, on the lake *Appupan*.

5th. THE province of *Guayra*, is bounded by *Paraguay proper* on the north, by *Braſil* on the eaſt, by *Parana* on the ſouth, and by the river *Paraguay* on the weſt. Its greateſt extent from eaſt to weſt is computed about 450 miles, and about 420 from north to ſouth; though its boundaries towards *Braſil* are uncertain, or rather unknown. The tropic of *Capricorn* cuts it almoſt into two equal parts; ſo that its climate muſt be very hot: though it is moiſt on account of the great dews and rains; which make it very fruitful in proviſions, as well as diſeaſes; inſomuch, that, on account of the latter, ſome have repreſented it as a fitter habitation for wild beaſts, than human creatures. However, we are told, that it was tolerably well peopled at the firſt coming of the *Spaniards*; which is farther confirmed by the number of towns and villages, that have been ſince deſerted or deſtroyed, either by the ſickneſs of the inhabitants, or by the inhumanity of the *Braſilian Portugueſe*, who either deſtroyed the people, or obliged them to quit their habitations. The town of *Guayra Cividad*, is ſituated in about 24 degrees of ſouth latitude: *St. Xavier* is 300 miles to the eaſtward, on the confines of *Braſil*: and *Conception* lies on a river, about the ſame diſtance ſouth-weſt of *St. Xavier*. The inhabitants of theſe little *Spaniſh* towns, are the poſterity of ſome of thoſe who ſettled there in 1550; but they live miſerably, having no other bread than what they make of the root called mandioc; nor any fleſh, except that of the wild beaſts which they deſtroy.

6th. THE

6th. THE province of *Uragua*, or *Urvaiga*, is bounded by *Parana* on the north; on the ſouth by the mouth of *Rio de Plata*; on the eaſt by the *Captainrick del Rey*, in *Braſil*; and on the weſt by *Rio de la Plata*, from which it is ſeparated by the river of that name. It is in length from north-eaſt to ſouth-weſt, about 630 miles; and in breadth, from eaſt to weſt, about 390, where broadeſt; but much narrower in other parts.

THE moſt remarkable towns formerly in this country, were *Los Reyes*, *Aſſumption*, *Conception*, *St. Thomas*, *St. Nicolas*, *San Miguel*, *Los Apoſtolos*, *Santa Tereſa*, *Jeſu Maria*, *San Joachin*, *Santa Anna*, and *San Salvador*: which, with ſome others of leſs note, were built by the *Spaniards*; but have been ſince abandoned, and gone moſtly to ruin.

THESE are the principal places, and things, worthy of obſervation, in that part of *Paraguay*, which is now in the poſſeſſion of the *Spaniards*: but the more extenſive and populous part of the country is ſtill retained by the independent *Indians*; or by the jeſuits, to whom they have in a manner ſubmitted, and acknowledged their eccleſiaſtical government; as will be particularly repreſented under the diviſion of *Indian America*.

CHAP. III.

The DESCRIPTION *of* PERU.

SECTION I.

The extent and boundaries of this country: the nature of the ſoil, and climate; with a farther deſcription of the South-Sea. *An account of the lakes, ſprings, and rivers of* Peru. *Of the produce of the country; its vegetables, minerals, and animals: but particularly of the quinquina, or* Peruvian *bark; and the balſam of* Peru: *as alſo of the mines of gold, ſilver, and mercury; the method of getting and refining thoſe metals; with obſervations upon their nature, value, and utility: as likewiſe of the* Peruvian *ſheep, and the bezoar-ſtone.*

BEFORE the *Spaniards* invaded this country, it was ſeparated into two grand diviſions: the limits on the north, being the river *Paſſao*, or the *Azure River*, almoſt under the equinoctial: the ſouthern limits extended as far as the country of the *Araucoes*, a nation of *Chili*, in 40 degrees of ſouth latitude; or, at leaſt, as far as the river *Maule*, in 35 degrees: the *Andes* were the eaſtern boundaries: and the weſtern part was bounded by the *South-Sea*, or *Pacific Ocean*.

THE limits of modern *Peru*, as circumſcribed by the *Spaniards*, are much the ſame now, as formerly among the *Indians*, except on the ſouth: for

for the *Spaniards* ſtill bound it by the province of *Popayan*, which extends to the equator, on the north; by the *Andes* on the eaſt; by *Chili* on the ſouth; and by the *Pacific Ocean* on the weſt: whereby it extends from about the equator to 25 degrees of ſouth latitude only, or about 1500 miles miles from north to ſouth: though, as the land runs very irregular from the north-weſt, to the ſouth-eaſt, it muſt be near 1800 miles in length. It is alſo generally about 160 miles in breadth, from eaſt to weſt: but, in the ſouthern parts, as about the *Chachiapoyas*, it may be four or five hundred miles broad.

The face of the country, according to *Acoſta*, is very different, as it is more or leſs diſtant from the ſea; who, as well as *Herrera*, divides the whole into three long narrow ſlips: 1*ſt*. The *Lanos*, which are ſandy plains, running along the ſea coaſt, about 30 miles broad: 2*d*. The *Sierras*, which are hills beyond thoſe plains, intermixed with vallies, being about 75 miles broad: 3*d*. The *Andes*, or *Cordillera* mountains, ſtill farther within the land; which are ſteep craggy mountains, far ſurpaſſing all the reſt in height, and about 85 miles broad.

The *Andes* and *Sierras*, are two ridges of mountains that run from north to ſouth, parallel to each other, for above 3000 miles: but, beyond the city of *Cuſco*, in about 13 degrees and a half, the two ridges of mountains ſeparate themſelves to a greater extent; incloſing a fruitful and extenſive plain, which is called the province of *Collao*, or *Callao*; watered by many rivers, and by the great lake of *Titicaca*, which is 240 miles in circumfe-

rence; and moſt of theſe rivers fall into the lake. The *Andes* are cold barren mountains, where the ſnow continues great part of the year; in the ſame manner as has been before deſcribed under the province of *Chili*. The *Sierras* are alſo hills which have the appearance of a general ſterility; though there are fine vallies between them, yielding great plenty of grain, and variety of fruits. The *Lanos*, are alſo perfectly barren; except a few vallies, into which they turn ſmall winding ſtreams; as alſo, that part of the coaſt, which lies within three or four degrees of the equator, where they have ſome heavy, or refreſhing rains, a great part of the year: but, as this part of the country is generally exceſſive hot, it is not ſo well inhabited as the *Sierras*, where the vallies are more temperate.

DAMPIER and *Wafer* obſerve, that *Peru* has generally a high bold ſhore, where there is no landing, except at the ports, or in ſome particular bays. The height of the *Andes*, along the coaſt of *Peru*, is unparallelled; and the diſorders, which travellers feel there, from the pureneſs and ſubtilty of the air, are aſtoniſhing: whereby this whole ridge of mountains is rendered almoſt entirely deſart and uninhabited. There are alſo ſome other mountainous uninhabited deſarts in *Peru*, where a ſudden blaſt of air ſometimes ſtrikes a traveller dead in an inſtant: ſo that the *Spaniards*, who formerly paſſed this way to *Chili*, now either go by ſea, or by the ſide of theſe mountains, to avoid the danger; for many people have periſhed in going over them; and others, who have eſcaped with their lives, have loſt their fingers and toes. *Acoſta* relates,

relates, that he was informed by general *Coſtilla*, who loſt three toes in paſſing this deſart to *Chili*, that they fell off without pain: and that, as the ſame general marched over it once before with an army, great part of his men ſuddenly fell down dead, and their bodies remained there without ſtench or corruption. *Wafer* likewiſe relates, that he landed with 30 of his men at *Vermeio*, or *Bermejo*, in 10 deg. of ſouth latitude, in ſearch of water, and marched four miles up a ſandy bay; where they found the ground covered with dead men, women, and children; which lay ſo thick, that a man might have walked on them half a mile: that theſe bodies appeared, as if they had not been dead a week; but, when he handled them, they proved as dry, and light, as a ſpunge, or a piece of cork: as alſo, that he carried on board the body of a boy, of about nine or ten years of age, deſigning to have brought it to *England*; but the ſeamen had a ridiculous conceit that the compaſs would not traverſe aright, while a dead body was on board; and compelled him to throw it into the ſea. *Acoſta* conjectures, that the people he mentions were killed by the exceſſive coldneſs of the air; which preſerved their bodies from putrefaction after they were dead: but it is more rational to believe, that they were deſtroyed by hot winds, or peſtilential blaſts, which are ſometimes met with in the vallies between the hills; and it may rather be ſuppoſed that the hot ſands preſerved their bodies from corruption: for, near the ſame latitude, in the deſarts of *Eaſt-India*, *Perſia*, and *Africa*, the *Samiel*, or *Hot Winds*, are frequently met with, which have the like effects.

IT is not apparent, that the original natives had any general name for this country: which was looked upon as the dominion of the great king, or emperor of ſouth *America*, who was called the inca, or inga: therefore, it might be called, the empire of the inca's; as *India* is called the empire of the great moghol. But, as to the modern name of *Peru*, *Garcillaſſo de la Vega* gives the following account of its obtaining that appellation.

**VASCO NUNEZ de BILBOA*, who firſt diſcovered the *South-Sea*, was conſtituted adelantado of it, by his Catholic majeſty, in 1514, and governor of all the kingdoms and countries he ſhould diſcover: upon this, *Nunez* ſettled on the *South-Sea*, where *Panama* was afterwards built, and ſent four ſhips out upon diſcoveries; one of which ſtretched to the ſouthward beyond the equinoctial line, and ſailed cloſe by the ſhore, where the boat ſurpriſed an *Indian*, and took him priſoner. They enquired of him, either by ſigns, or by the *Indians* which they carried with them, what country it was? But the *Indian* miſapprehended them; and, imagining they aſked him his own name, anſwered, *Beru*: the *Spaniards* ſtill ſeemed importunate to know ſomething more; and the *Indian* anſwered *Pelu*, which was the name of the river, or a common name in the language of thoſe people for any river. However, from both theſe words, the *Spaniards* formed another, and called the country *Peru*, or *Piru*; and the dominions of the inca's, of which this was the moſt northerly province, have ever ſince gone under the general name of *Peru*.

THE only ſea that waſhes the coaſt of *Chili*, is the *South-Sea*, or *Pacific Ocean*; which has been partly

* See this Volume, p 133.

partly deſcribed under *Chili*. * This ſea, along the coaſt of *Chili*, ſwells and runs with long high ſurges, or waves, at the new and full moon: but they are ſafe enough at ſea, as they never break there; though, where they fall in upon the ſhore, they make it very dangerous landing. At *Guiaquil*, in 3 degrees of ſouth latitude, the tide runs very ſtrong, and riſes 16 or 18 feet perpendicular: but it does not riſe ſo high on any part of the coaſt to the ſouthward, where there are not ſuch bays, or ſo many rivers, as here: for the tides always run ſtrongeſt, and riſe higheſt, in gulphs or bays of the ſea, and up the mouths of rivers. *Funnel* obſerves, that the winds in the *Peruvian* ſeas, and on all the weſtern ſide of *America*, from 38 degrees ſouth, to 7 degrees north, are always ſoutherly two points upon the ſhore: ſo that where the coaſt runs north and ſouth, the wind is at S. S. W. and where the coaſt runs S. S. E. the wind is due ſouth; except it is in the night, when the ſea-wind generally ceaſes, and there comes a fine moderate gale from the land, which they call the land-breeze: but *Dampier* remarks, that on promontories, head-lands, and ſuch places as lie open to the ſea, they have ſcarce any of theſe land-breezes; the advantage of which, are chiefly to be found in creeks and bays. This navigator alſo ſays, that the ſoutherly winds on the coaſt of *Peru*, continue to blow 140 or 150 leagues from the ſhore before they alter: but then they may be perceived to come about more eaſterly; and, about 200 leagues to the weſtward of that ſhore, the true trade-wind ſets in at E. S. E. which never alters till they have paſſed the *Pacific Ocean*,

* See this Volume, p. 207.

Ocean, and arrive at the *Eaſt Indies*. However, both *Dampier* and *Funnel* relate, that at *Arica*, which lies on the coaſt of *Peru*, in 18 degrees of ſouth latitude, for near 100 leagues to the ſouthward, this ſea is very ſubject to calms, within 35 or 40 leagues of the ſhore: but that theſe calms are not uſual on any other part of the coaſt. It is alſo obſerved, that when the ſun is in the northern ſigns, from *March* to *September*, the ſky is generally bright and clear: though, when the ſun returns back to the ſouthern ſigns, the weather is frequently ſo thick and hazy, that they cannot take an obſervation, notwithſtanding they have no rain at ſea, or upon the coaſt.

THE weather on ſhore is various, according to the ſituation of the land: for the *Lanos* never have a drop of rain upon them; but thick miſts frequently riſe there: on the *Sierras*, the rains fall when the ſun is in the ſouthern ſigns, as is the caſe in other countries between the equator and the tropic of *Capricorn*: and on the *Andes*, it rains, or ſnows, two thirds of the year, being always exceſſive cold. As the vallies between the *Sierras* are the moſt fruitful parts of the country, their ſeaſon for planting and ſowing, is at the beginning of the rains: and their harveſt at the return of the dry weather: their vintage is alſo in the fair ſeaſon; and their vines thrive beſt in thoſe vallies near the ſea, where there is little or no rain, and which are watered by rivulets that fall from the hills in the rainy ſeaſon. But moſt part of the *Lanos* are barren deſarts, bearing neither trees nor herbs; and are very little inhabited, except a few port towns ſituated at the mouths of rivers.

THERE

THERE are ſeveral extenſive lakes in *Peru*; particularly that of *Titicaca*, which, as already mentioned, is 240 miles in circumference, and ſituated in the valley of *Callao*; the middle of it being in 16 degrees, 40 minutes, of ſouth latitude; and in 68 degrees, 20 minutes, of weſt longitude. This lake, like the adjacent ſea, is navigated by ſhips, and other veſſels: but it is ſometimes ſubject to ſtorms; and the firſt ſhip which the *Spaniards* built upon it, was drove on ſhore by a tempeſt, and broken to pieces. The water of it is not ſo ſalt as the ſea; but too thick and foul to be drank: there are many fiſh, with prodigious flocks of wild ducks, and other water fowls: beſides, the towns and villages bordering upon the lake, are eſteemed the moſt agreeable dwellings in *Peru*. From this lake, iſſues a large ſtream to the ſouthward; which forms another lake, called *Paria*, not much inferior to the former in its dimenſions; with ſeveral iſlands in it: and on the banks of theſe lakes are rich ſavannahs, or meadows, that feed great herds of cattle. There are alſo many lakes upon the mountains, that are the ſources of ſeveral large rivers; two of which, on the high mountains, are particularly mentioned by *Acoſta*; being on the ſide of the great road leading from *Arequippa* to *Callao*. From one of theſe iſſues a river that falls into the *Pacific Ocean*; and from the other the river *Aporima*, reputed to be the principal ſtream that forms the great river *Amazon*, which falls into the *Atlantic Ocean*, and is eſteemed the largeſt river in the world. There are alſo a great number of lakes in the higheſt tops of the *Peruvian* mountains; from whence many rivers derive their ſources.

THERE

THERE is a great variety of ſprings in that part of the country which is remote from the ſea: but very few on the ſandy plains near the ſhore. *Acoſta* mentions one, of a very extraordinary nature, near the quickſilver mines in *Guancavitica*; which, he ſays, throws out hot water, that, in running a little way, turns into ſtone, and forms a rock, ſoft, light, eaſily wrought, and very durable, ſo as to ſerve the inhabitants for building their houſes. There are alſo, at *Cape St. Helena*, and ſeveral other parts of *Peru*, fountains of liquid matter, called coppey, reſembling tar, or pitch, and put to the ſame uſes, by mariners, for the preſervation of their ropes, planks, and tackle; which is not only aſſerted by *Acoſta*, but is alſo corroborated by *Dampier* and *Funnel*. At a farm, near the city of *Cuſco*, is a fountain whoſe waters are naturally converted into ſalt; which would be very beneficial to the proprietor, if ſalt was not ſo plentiful in the country. The waters near *Guiaquil* are celebrated for curing venereal diſeaſes; on which account they are continually reſorted to by great multitudes of people; as this diſtemper is very prevalent in *Peru*.

THE rivers of ſouth *America* generally riſe in the *Andes*, and particularly thoſe of *Peru*, as well as thoſe of *Chili*: but ſome of theſe rivers run eaſtward, and fall into the north ſea, or *Atlantic Ocean*; and others run weſtward into the *South Sea*, or *Pacific Ocean*: the former having an extenſive courſe, and ſome of them being the largeſt rivers in the known world: but the latter are rather torrents than rivers, made by the annual rains, which commonly fall on the mountains between *May* and *September*; and are perfectly dried up before *January*;

January; the ſtreams being ſo ſhallow and rapid, that ſcarce any of them are navigable.

THE four principal rivers, that riſe on the eaſt ſide of the *Andes*, within the limits of *Peru*, are *1ſt*, The *Magdalena*, or *Grande*; which riſes in the province of *Quito*, near the equator; and runs above 1000 miles directly northward, falling into the north ſea, between *Carthagena* and *St. Martha*. *2d*, The river of *Oronoque*, or *Oronoka*; whoſe ſource is near that of *Magdalena*: it takes its courſe firſt to the eaſtward for 1500 miles and upwards; then turns directly north, and runs almoſt as far to the northward; falling into the north ſea, near the iſland of *Trinity*; after dividing the countries of *Paria* and *Guiana*: though, according to ſome accounts, both theſe rivers have their ſources in *Popayan*. *3d*, The river of *Amazons*, which is generally eſteemed to be the largeſt river in the world: being formed at firſt by two ſtreams, that riſe near eleven degrees aſunder; and different travellers differently aſſert each of them to be the true river of *Amazons*. The firſt of theſe riſes near *Quito*, a little ſouth of the equator, and runs ſouth-eaſt. The other has its ſource from the lake of *Paſto*, in eleven degrees of ſouth latitude: it firſt runs about five degrees northward, then turns to the eaſtward; and unites its waters with the former. After this confluence, the united ſtreams run between 3 and 4000 miles further eaſtward; being enlarged by a multitude of other conſiderable rivers, falling into it, both on the north and ſouth ſides; till it diſcharges itſelf into the *Atlantic Ocean*, under the equator; being, at leaſt, 50 leagues wide at the mouth. *4th*, The river of *Plata*, which

which is little inferior to the laſt, and riſes near the town of *Plata*, in *Peru*, in 20 deg. of ſouth latitude. It firſt runs to the eaſt-ward, till joined and augmented by ſeveral other ſtreams: then its courſe is bent directly ſouth, till it comes into 34 degrees; when it ſtretches away to the eaſt-ward; falling into the *Atlantic Ocean*, in 35 degrees of ſouth latitude, near the town of *Buenos Ayres*, in *Paraguay*; being about 30 leagues broad, where it diſembogues itſelf into the ſea.

THE principal rivers of *Peru*, which riſe on the weſt ſide of the *Andes*, and fall into the *Pacific Ocean*, are, *1ſt*, The *Coloncha*, which empties itſelf into the ſea, in 2 deg. of ſouth latitude. *2d*, *3d*, *4th*, *5th*, and *6th*, The *Daule*, or river of *Guiaquil*, and the *Narangal*, in 3 degrees: the *Bolas*, *Tenques*, and *Jubones*: all of them falling into the gulph of *Guiaquil*. *7th*, and *8th*, The *Catamayo*, and *Colan*, in 4 deg. ½. *9th*, The *Piura*, in 5 deg. *10th*, *11th*, and *12th*, The *Lano*, *Seco*, and *Paſcamayo*, between 6 and 8 deg. *13th* and *14th*, The *Chicama*, and *Chimo*, in 9 deg. *15th*, The *Santa*, in 11 deg. *16th*, The *Mala*, in 12 deg. *17th*, The *Naſca*, in 14 deg. *18th*, The *Nombre de Dios*, in 18 deg. *19th*, The *Camarones*, in 19 deg. *20th*, The *Pica*, in 21 deg. *21ſt*, The *Salado*, in 25 deg.

As to the natural productions of *Peru*, they are rich, uſeful, and neceſſary: either as to vegetables, minerals, or animals.

THERE is a great ſcarcity of foreſts, or timber-trees, except in the province of *Quito*, near the equator; where there are plenty of cedars, cotton-trees, cocoa-trees, palms, mangroves, bamboes, maho-trees, light-wood, and ſeveral other kinds, which

which grow in *Mexico*: but none are ſo valuable as the quinquina, or peruvian bark.

THE quinquina is alſo called quinaquina, china-china, and kinkina; cortex peruvianus, or the peruvian bark; the bark; and popularly the jeſuit's bark, being, at its firſt introduction, chiefly ſold and adminiſtered by the jeſuits. The tree which yields this bark grows in ſeveral parts of *Peru*; but the beſt and fineſt ſort is produced on the mountains, about 40 miles round the city of *Loxa*. The tree is tall, and about the thickneſs of a cherry-tree; tapering from the root upwards; but without any branches till near the top, where they grow regular, as if lopped by art; and, with the leaves, which are round and indented, form an exact hemiſphere. It bears a long reddiſh flower, from whence ariſes a kind of pod, in which is found a kernel, like an almond, cloathed with a ſlight rind. The bark is blackiſh on the outſide; but ſometimes mixed with white ſpots, where grows a kind of moſs, by the *Spaniards* called barbas, whoſe leaves reſemble thoſe of the plumb-tree. *Emery* obſerves, that there are two ſorts of the quinquina tree; the one cultivated, and the other wild; but that the former is much preferred to the other: that the beſt bark is of the moſt lively colour, reſembling dark cinnamon, moſt curled up, as coming from the ſmall branches; of a bitter taſte, very aſtringent, or rough and ſtiptic upon the tongue: as alſo that the thick flat dark-coloured is not ſo good; and is of no value, if it wants the bitter taſte and ſtipticity. *Bernard* ſays, that the bark which comes from the trees, at the bottom of the mountains, is thickeſt; becauſe it receives moſt nouriſhment

ment from the earth; being ſmooth; of a whitiſh yellow without, and a paliſh yellow within: that which comes from the trees at the top of the mountains is abundantly more delicate: but the trees which grow in the middle of the mountains have a bark ſtill browner than the other, and more rugged: they are all bitter; but that from the trees at the bottoms of the mountains leſs than the others. It follows from hence, that the bark of the leaſt virtue grows in the loweſt places; becauſe it abounds more with earthy and watery parts, than that which grows high, and is for the contrary reaſon better: but the beſt grows in the middle of the mountains, where it has neither too much, nor too little nouriſhment. There is alſo another kind of this bark, which comes from the mountains of *Potoſi*, that is more brown, bitter, and aromatic than the former; but much ſcarcer than any of the reſt.

ACCORDING to the moſt authentic accounts, the *Spaniards* diſtinguiſh four ſorts of this precious bark; as, the *caſcarilla colorada*, or *reddiſh bark*; *amarylla*, or *yellowiſh*; *creſpilla*, or *curling*; and *blanca*, or *whitiſh*. The *colorada*, and *amarylla*, are reputed the beſt. The *creſpilla* is the produce of the ſame ſort of tree; only growing in a cold climate, which impairs the quality of the bark, and renders it whitiſh on the outſide, cinnamon coloured within, and unfit for medicinal uſe. But the *blanca* is procured from another ſpecies of the tree; of a much larger trunk; and the leaves of a lighter green colour: the bark being a very thick ſpongeous ſubſtance, whitiſh on the outſide, and ſo tough as to require the force of an axe to ſlice it from the tree.

WHEN

When the *blanca* is firſt cut down, it is as bitter as the beſt ſort, and has then the ſame virtue in the cure of intermitting fevers; but, when dry, and kept any length of time, it grows good for nothing. Though, in reality, both ſorts are found to have much more certain and ſpeedy effects when green, than when dry; ſo that the *Europeans* only come in for the ſecond virtues: beſides, the bad ſort is in great plenty, and the good extremely ſcarce; for which reaſon, large quantities of the worſt ſort are mixed with a little of the fine bark ſent from *Panama* to *Europe*.

The ſmall bark, that curls up like ſticks of cinnamon, and is much eſteemed in *England*, as being ſuppoſed to be ſent from the branches of the tree, and therefore more efficacious in the cure of fevers, is only the bark of the young trees; which, being very thin, curls in this manner: for the bark of the branches is never gathered, as it would not compenſate the charge of cutting.

The ſeaſon for cutting the bark is in *Auguſt*, when the country is dry; and the cutters are *Indians*, provided each with a large knife and bag. When they have ſliced down the bark as high as they can reach, they faſten ſhort ſticks, with withs, to the tree, at proper diſtances, like the ſteps of a ladder; whereby they aſcend, and ſlice to the very top, till the bag is full; when they carry it to the low country, to dry in an adjacent hut; which is done by ſpreading it in the open air, and turning it frequently: but, if it happens to be cut wet, they carry it immediately to the low country to dry; otherwiſe it loſes its colour, turns black, and rots.

AFTER a tree has been barked, it requires eighteen, or twenty years, to grow again: and there is an opinion, that the better ſort of bark will ſoon be exhauſted, or at leaſt inacceſſible; either on account of its diſtance from any inhabited place, and the impenetrability of the woods where it grows; or by the want of *Indians* to cut it, whoſe race, through the cruelties of the *Spaniards*, is like to be totally extinct.

THE qualities to be obſerved in the bark, are, that it is heavy, of a firm ſubſtance, ſound, and dry: but ſuch as is rotten, and will ſuck in water preſently, ought to be rejected; as does alſo ſuch as flies into duſt on breaking, or is dirty and unclean. The beſt choice is of little thin pieces, dark and blackiſh without, with a little white moſs ſticking to it, reddiſh within, and of a bitter diſagreeable taſte: for that which is of a ruſſet-colour is of little value; and care ſhould be taken that no other wood is mixed with it, there being ſometimes more of that, than of the bark itſelf.

THE quinquina was but little known in *Europe* till the year 1640: the jeſuits of *Rome* firſt brought it into reputation in *Spain*, and *Italy*, in 1649; and, in 1650, the cardinal *de Lugo*, of that order, brought it into *France*; where it was at firſt ſold for its weight in gold; though, at preſent, it is ſold at *Amſterdam*, from 1*s*. 6*d*. to 2*s*. 3*d*. ſterling the pound. When reduced into powder, it is called the cardinal's powder by foreigners; but more uſually the jeſuits powder, or pulvis patrum. It met with great oppoſition at firſt; when *Chiflet* and *Plempius* diſtinguiſhed themſelves againſt it: but it is now almoſt univerſally allowed to be

one,

one of the beſt and greateſt remedies within the whole province of medicine; eſpecially for the cure of intermitting fevers, for which purpoſe it is given in ſubſtance, tincture, or infuſion: though, as it is a medicine ſome people have an utter averſion to, and as the uſe of it may be attended with bad conſequences, unleſs properly applied, it is neceſſary for the uſe of it to have the direction of an able phyſician.

However, the *Spaniards* ſay, that the uſe of this bark was accidentally diſcovered by an *Indian*, who was in a fever, and drank the water of a pond, wherein ſeveral of theſe trees were fallen, whereby he was cured; which incited ſome curious perſons to enquire into the occaſion, and diſcover this ineſtimable medicine.

The maguey is a tree, from which the *Indians* get a kind of honey, vinegar, and drink: the ſtalks and leaves are alſo good to eat, and may be wrought like hemp; ſo that they make a kind of thread from it, called pica: the wood of it ſerves to cover houſes; its prickles, or thorns, for needles; and the *Indians* uſe the fruit as a kind of ſoap for waſhing.

The *Peruvians* have always been ſupported by their culture of maize, or *Indian* corn, which they uſed like *European* wheat for making bread, and like barley for making a kind of ſtrong beer: but, as the country is generally hot, and dry, as well as mountainous, they had great difficulty in collecting the waters, and introducing rivulets into their arrable lands; without which, this ſort of grain will not grow in that hot climate. The *Indians*, therefore, throw their fields into level

ſquares, that they may retain the water: and where they meet with a mountain of a tolerable good ſoil, they cut it into ſquares, one above another, from the bottom to the top, ſupporting them with little ſtone walls; ſo that they have an appearance like hanging gardens, or ſtairs; and, if they diſcover a fountain on the top of the hill, it ſerves them for watering all the ſquares beneath. The ancient *Indians* were accuſtomed to make aqueducts and canals, ſeveral hundred miles in length, into which they brought all the ſtreams and rivulets they could meet with; from whence every man was permitted, in his turn, to let water into his grounds, for the improvement of his corn and graſs: but the *Spaniards* have ſuffered moſt of their aqueducts to run to ruin; having introduced wheat, and other *European* grain, which require leſs moiſture than the *Indian* corn: beſides, theſe countries are now nothing like ſo populous as they were, when the *Spaniards* firſt ſettled there, and conſequently leſs grain is wanting.

By the ſea coaſt, below *Arequipa*, for 600 miles, the inhabitants uſe no other dung for manuring their lands, than that of ſea fowls, which breed on the iſlands near the coaſt in amazing numbers; and lay ſuch prodigious heaps of dung, that they appear like hills of ſnow at a diſtance. On other parts of the coaſt, more to the ſouthward, the *Indians* dung their ſoil with a ſmall fiſh, like pilchards: though it is with infinite labour that they procure a ſubſiſtance, as they have no ſprings, or rivers, in ſome places; and, as their ſteril ſands are ſeldom ſprinkled with rain, therefore, according to *De la Vega*, the natives, who inhabit the ſea coaſt,

coaſt, dig eight or ten feet deep through the ſand, till they meet with earth that has ſome moiſture in it, where they plant grains of maize in holes, at equal diſtances; and in theſe holes they put ſome pilchards heads, which, without any other dunging, or watering, brings the corn to perfection.

WHEAT and barley were firſt imported into *Peru*, about the year 1540, by a noble lady, who had a plantation beſtowed upon her, by the *Spaniſh* vice-roy, for being ſo great a benefactreſs to the country: becauſe both theſe grains thrive extremely well, and yield a great increaſe in ſeveral parts of *Peru*.

FRANCIS de CARAVANTES, a nobleman of *Toledo*, planted the firſt vines in *Peru*, which he imported from the *Canaries*; and the *Spaniards* ſoon afterwards made wine in this country: but the *Indians* preferred their own liquor, made of *Indian* corn, to any wine made of grapes. They water their vineyards in all parts of *Peru*, chiefly by turning rivulets through them, or letting in the water from ſome adjacent river or reſervoir; for the country is ſo hot and dry, that their vines will yield no grapes if they are not watered: therefore, when they would have them bear fruit, they water the vines, and have grapes at what time of the year they pleaſe.

OLIVES have been alſo carried over to *Peru*, where they never thrive ſo well as other *European* plants; though they are found very agreeable to the ſoil of *Chili*: however, *Peru* abounds in ſugar-canes, oranges, lemons, figs, cherries, apples, pears, quinces, nectarines, peaches, apricots, plumbs, and pomegranates; none of which were

to be found before the *Spaniards* arrived in the country: but there were cocoa-nuts, cacao-nuts, pine-apples, guavas, plantains, and other fruits. Thoſe they call higas de tuna, or tuna figs, are the fruit of the raquette, or euphorbium, as big as a green walnut, covered with points almoſt as ſharp as thoſe of the outward rind of the cheſnut; being wholſome to eat, and of a delicious flavour.

THE *Indians* had neither lettice, radiſhes, turnips, garlic, onions, beets, ſpinnage, aſparagus, melons, cucumbers, peaſe, beans, or rice; of all which there are now great plenty; as there are alſo of roſes, jeſſamine, and many odoriferous flowers, that were never ſeen there till they were imported by the *Spaniards*. But the *Indians* had ſeveral ſorts of herbs, roots, and flowers, unknown to *Europeans*; particularly the caſſavi-root, which ſerved the natives of great part of north and ſouth *America*, inſtead of bread.

FREZIER ſays, the niorbos is a flower peculiar to this country, which ſomewhat reſembles the orange-flower. The herb, called carapullo, grows like a tuft of graſs, and yields an ear, whoſe decoction makes ſuch perſons as drink it delirious for ſome days: but the *Indians* uſe it to diſcover the natural diſpoſitions of their children; for, when it has its operation, they place by them the tools of all ſuch trades as they are permitted to follow: as by a maiden, a ſpindle, wool, ſciſſars, cloth, kitchen furniture, or the like; and by a youth, accoutrements for a horſe, awls, hammers, or other things; and the tool they take moſt fancy to, in their delirium, their parents imagine to be a certain indication of the trade for which they are beſt

beſt adapted. In the plains of *Truxillo*, there is a ſort of tree which bears twenty or thirty flowers, all of them different in form, and of ſeveral colours; hanging together like a bunch of grapes, which is called flor del paradiſo, or the flower of paradiſe. The country alſo produces anami, caranna, ſtorax, caſſia-feſtata, guaiacum, ſarſaparilla, ſaſſifras, copal, dragon's blood, liquid-amber, and ſeveral other gums and drugs, which alſo grow in *Mexico*, and will be mentioned in the deſcription of that province.

But the balſam of *Peru* is more particularly the produce of this province, and proceeds from the trunks and branches of a little tree. There are three ſorts of this drug: the firſt is called the balſam by inciſion, and is a white liquor: the ſecond is called balſam of the ſhell, which drops from the ends of the branches that are cut, where they hang ſmall flaſks, or baſkets, to receive it; and thus it is drawn off till the tree will yield no more; when it is expoſed in the hotteſt places, where it congeals, and changes to a reddiſh colour: but the third is a black balſam, which is made by boiling the bark, branches, and leaves of theſe little trees in water; and after they have boiled ſome time, the fat, or ſcum that ſwims on the top, is taken off; being of a dark brown colour, and, like the others, called balſam of *Peru*. The laſt is generally uſed, as well in phyſic, as for perfumes: it ought to be viſcous, and of a turpentine conſiſtence; of a ſweet agreeable taſte, and having ſome reſemblance of ſtorax.

Gold and ſilver were ſo plentiful in *Peru*, in the ſixteenth century, that *De la Vega* relates,

there had been exported from thence to *Spain*, every year, for twenty-five years ſucceſſively, the value of thirteen millions of pieces of eight; or about two millions, three hundred and forty thouſand pounds ſterling; beſides what had paſſed without account. The ſame author obſerves, that gold was found in every province of *Peru*, in greater or leſſer quantities: ſome being found on the ſurface of the earth, and waſhed down by torrents, which the *Indians* gathered up in baſkets, and ſeparated from the ſand: that the particles of this gold were as ſmall as the filings of ſteel; though pieces were ſometimes found of the ſize and form of melon-ſeeds: and that the gold of *Peru* is generally about 18 or 20 caracts in goodneſs.

GOLD is the heavieſt, pureſt, moſt ductile, and ſhining of all metals; therefore, the moſt valuable. It is generated in mines in ſeveral parts of the world; but the greateſt quantity is brought in bars or ingots from *Peru*, *Chili*, and *Braſil*. That which is found in a maſs or lump in the mines, is called virgin gold; becauſe it comes pure out of the mine, and requires no farther ſeparation; being ſoft enough to receive the impreſſion of a ſeal. The ſecond ſort is in grains, not ſo fine as the firſt. The third is gold mixed with other metals, and the marcaſite, or mineral ſtone; for the gold and ſtone are formed and incorporated together, which is called gold-ore. And the fourth is gold-duſt, mixed with ſand at the bottom of rivulets; there being ten times more gold found in ſuch ſands than is acquired by any other way.

ALL ſtones which contain any metal, are called marcaſite; being a ſort of metallic mineral: but

the

the three principal kinds are marcaſite of gold, of ſilver, and of copper. Marcaſite of gold is in little balls, or nodules, about the bigneſs of nuts; nearly round, heavy, and of a brown colour without. Marcaſite of ſilver is like that of gold, only paler coloured: but the colour within is very different between theſe two metals; the one having a gold colour, and the other a ſilver one; both being ſhining and brilliant. And the marcaſite of copper is about the bigneſs of a ſmall apple; round, or oblong, brown without, yellow and chryſtalline within, ſhining, and brilliant.

THE gold of mines is of two kinds: the one in ſmall pieces, or grains, of various forms and weights; there being ſome of this ſort, among the ſpecimens ſent by *Columbus* into *Spain*, to evince the richneſs of his diſcovery, that weighed eighteen ounces; and the relations of thoſe days aſſure us, that, in 1502, there were others found of thirty-two pounds weight: but the other kind of gold is dug up in ſtony glebes; which is what they call the mineral, or ore of gold. Theſe glebes are of ſeveral colours, and generally 150, or 160 fathom deep: but they uſually contain ſome other mineral matter with the gold; as antimony, vitriol, ſulphur, copper, or ſilver, and particularly the laſt.

THE method uſed for the ſeparation of gold, is firſt to break the metalline ſtone pretty ſmall, with iron mallets; after which, it is carried to the mills, where it is ground into a very fine powder; and then paſſed through ſeveral braſs wire ſieves, one after another, the laſt being as fine as any made of ſilk. When the powder is prepared

prepared in this manner, it is laid in wooden troughs, with a proper quantity of mercury and water; being left to knead and ſaturate in the ſun and air for forty-eight hours. After this, the water is drove out of the tub, as alſo the recrementitious earth, by means of other hot waters poured thereon: when there remains nothing but a maſs of mercury, with all the gold that was in the ore, and the mercury is ſeparated from it by diſtillation in large alembics; after which, the gold is uſually fuſed in crucibles, and caſt into plates or ingots.

THERE are two ſorts of ſilver mines in *Peru*: the one where ſilver is found ſcattered about in ſmall quantities; and the other where it runs in a vein between two rocks. This metal, which is the meaſure or ſtandard of riches in other countries, may be conſidered as the natural commodity of *Peru*: for, throughout the whole of this extenſive territory, there are ſilver mines to be met with almoſt every where, of more or leſs value, according as the ore produces more or leſs ſilver, and can be wrought at a greater or a leſs expence.

THERE are only a few mines to the northward of *Lima*; but to the ſouth they are very numerous: and, on the back of the *Andes*, there lies a nation of *Indians*, called *Los Plateros*, or the *Platemen*, from the great quantities of ſilver in their poſſeſſion; though they have little communication with the *Spaniards*. The beſt part of the mine countries are to the ſouth of *Cuſco*; from thence to *Potoſi*, and ſo to the frontiers of *Chili*; where there is a continued ſucceſſion of mines for the ſpace of three hundred miles; ſome being diſcovered, and others deſerted every day: though it is a common

mon thing for the people here, as well as in other countries, to complain of the preſent times, and commend the paſt; as if there were infinitely greater quantities of ſilver dug out of the mines formerly, than at preſent: and, perhaps, with regard to particular mines, it may be ſo; but, upon the whole, it is certain that the quantities of ſilver which are annually obtained in the *Spaniſh Weſt-Indies*, abundantly exceed what was exported from thence in former times.

THE names of ſuch mines as have been moſt remarkable, or are ſo at preſent, in the country of *Peru*, are thoſe of *Loxa*, *Camora*, *Cuenca*, *Puerto Vejo*, and *St. Juan del Oro*; which are now wrought: but thoſe of *Porco* and *Plata*, are filled up; while thoſe of *Oruro* and *Titiri* are neglected. However, the greateſt number of mines are at *Potoſi*; and thoſe of *Tomina*, *Chocaia*, *Atacuma*, *Xuxui*, *Chalchoques*, *Guaſco*, *Iquique*, and ſome others, are all wrought, with more or leſs profit, according to the ſkill of their proprietors, or of ſuch perſons as have the works under their direction.

THE moſt perfect ſilver which comes from the mines, is called *Pinnas*, by the *Spaniards*; being a lump of ſilver, extremely porous; becauſe it is the remainder of a part made up of ſilver-duſt, and mercury; the latter of which is exhaled, and leaves this remainder of the maſs ſpungy and light. It is this kind of ſilver that is put into different forms by the merchants, with an intention to defraud the king of his duty: therefore, all ſilver in this condition, if found any where on the road, or on board any ſhip, is looked upon as contraband, and liable to ſeizure. But, in regard to the art

of

of refining ſilver, the following is an account of the progreſs of the ore, from the mine to this kind of maſs or cake.

AFTER the miners have broke the ſtone, taken out of the vein of ore, they grind it in their mills with grindſtones; or in the ingenios reales, or royal engines, conſiſting of hammers, or pounders, like the *French* plaiſter-mills. They have generally a wheel, about twenty-five or thirty feet diameter, whoſe long axle-tree is ſet with ſmooth triangles, which, as they turn, hook, or lay hold of, the iron hammers, and lift them up to a certain elevation, from whence they drop at once at every turn; weighing about two hundred pounds, and falling ſo violently, that they reduce the hardeſt ſtones to powder: after which, that powder is ſifted through iron or copper ſieves, to take away the fineſt, and return the reſt to the mill.

WHEN the ore happens to be mixed with ſome metals, which obſtruct its falling to powder, they calcine it in an oven, and pound it over again. In the little mines, where they uſe none but mills with grindſtones, they generally grind the ore with water, which makes a liquid mud, that runs into a receiver: whereas, when it is ground dry, it muſt be afterwards ſteeped, and well moulded together with the feet, for a conſiderable time; for which purpoſe, they make a floor, where they diſpoſe that mud in ſquare parcels, about a foot thick, each of them containing half a caxon or cheſt, that is twenty-five quintals, or hundred weight of ore; and theſe they call cuerpos, or bodies. On each of them, they throw about two hundred weight of

of ſea or common ſalt, more or leſs, according to the nature of the ore, which they mould and incorporate with the earth, for two or three days; when they add to it a certain quantity of quick-ſilver, by ſqueezing a purſe made of a ſkin, wherein they put it to make it fall in drops, with which they ſprinkle the maſs equally, according to the nature and quality of the ore; allowing, to each maſs, ten, fifteen, or twenty pounds; for the richer it is, the more mercury it requires to draw to it the ſilver contained: ſo that they know the quantity only by long experience.

An *Indian* is employed to mould one of theſe ſquare parcels eight times a day, that the mercury may incorporate with the ſilver: for which purpoſe, they frequently mix lime with it; when the ore happens to be greaſy: but great caution is to be uſed, as, they ſay, it will grow ſo hot, that they neither find mercury nor ſilver in it; which ſeems incredible. Sometimes, they alſo ſtrew among it ſome lead or tin ore, to facilitate the operation of the mercury; which is ſlower in very cold weather, than when it is temperate: therefore, they are often obliged, at *Potoſi* and *Lipes*, to mould the ore during a month or ſix weeks; but the amalgama is made in eight or ten days, in more moderate climates.

To facilitate the operation of the mercury, in ſome places, as at *Puno*, they make their buiterons, or floors, on arches; under which they keep fire, to heat the powder of the ore, for 24 hours, on a pavement of brick. When it is imagined that the mercury has attracted all the ſilver, the aſſayer takes a little ore from each ſeparate parcel, which he waſhes in a ſmall earthen plate, or wooden bowl,

bowl, and knows whether it has had its effect by the colour of the mercury found at the bottom: for, when it is blackiſh, the ore is too much heated, and requires an addition of ſalt, or ſome other drug; when, they ſay, the mercury, *diſpara*, that is ſhoots or flies away. But, if the mercury is white, they put a drop under the thumb, and preſs it haſtily; when the ſilver, that is among it, remains ſticking to the thumb, and the mercury ſlips away in little drops.

WHEN they perceive that all the ſilver is gathered, they carry the ore to a baſon, into which a little ſtream of water runs to waſh it, and an *Indian* ſtirs it with his feet to diſſolve it. From the firſt baſon, it falls into a ſecond, where there is another *Indian*, who ſtirs it again, to diſſolve it thoroughly, and looſen the ſilver. From the ſecond, it paſſes into a third, where the ſame is repeated; to the end, that what has not ſunk to the bottom of the firſt and ſecond, may not eſcape the third. When all has been waſhed, and the water runs clear, they find at the bottom of the baſons, that are lined with leather, the mercury incorporated with the ſilver, which they call lapella. This is put in a woollen-bag, hanging up for ſome of the quickſilver to drain through: then they bind, beat, and preſs it; laying a weight upon it, with flat pieces of wood; and, when they have got out as much as they can, they put the paſte into a mould of wooden planks, which are bound together, and generally form the figure of an octagon pyramid cut ſhort, at whoſe bottom is a copper-plate full of little holes: it is now ſtirred, that it may be faſtened; and, when they deſign to make

many

many pinnas, as they call them, that is, lumps of various weights, they divide them with little beds, or layers of earth, which hinder their coming together: but, for this purpoſe, the pella, or maſs, muſt be weighed, deducting two-thirds for the mercury that is in it; and they know, within a ſmall matter, what is the quantity of the neat ſilver.

After this, they take off the mould, and place the pinna with its copper baſe on a trivet, or ſome ſuch inſtrument, ſtanding over a great earthen veſſel full of water, and cover it with an earthen cap, which they again cover with lighted coals, feeding the fire for ſome hours, that the maſs may grow violently hot, and the mercury that is in it evaporate in ſmoke: but, as the ſmoke has no paſſage out, it circulates in the hollow that is between the maſs and cap; till coming down to the water that is underneath, it condenſes to the bottom again, converted into quickſilver; whereby little is loſt, and the ſame ſerves ſeveral times; but the quantity muſt be increaſed, becauſe it grows weak: though, *Acoſta* ſays, they formerly conſumed at *Potoſi*, ſix or ſeven thouſand quintals, or hundred weight of quickſilver every year; whereby a judgment may be formed of the ſilver they obtained.

When the mercury is evaporated, there remains nothing but a ſpongy lump of contiguous grains of ſilver, very light, and almoſt mouldering; which the *Spaniards* call pinnas, being, as is obſerved before, a contraband commodity from the mines; becauſe, by the laws, they are obliged to carry it to the royal receipt, or to the mint, to pay the fifth to his majeſty. These

THESE maſſes are caſt into ingots, on which the arms of the crown are ſtamped, as alſo that of the place where they were caſt, with their weight and quality. It is always certain, that the ingots which have paid the fifth have no fraud in them: but it is otherwiſe with the pinnas, or maſſes uncaſt; for the perſons who make them frequently convey iron, ſand, and other things, into the middle of them, to increaſe the weight; ſo that, in prudence, they ought to be opened, and made red hot at the fire, for the more certainty; becauſe, if it is falſified, the fire will either turn it black or yellow, or melt it more eaſily. This trial is alſo uſed to extract a moiſture which the pinnas contract in ſmall places where they are laid, on purpoſe to make them the heavier: though, in fact, their weight may be one third increaſed, by dipping them in water when they are red hot; as alſo by ſeparating the mercury, with which the bottom of the maſs is always more impregnated than the top: and it ſometimes happens that the ſame maſs is of a different fineneſs.

THE ſtones taken from the mines, the ore, or to ſpeak in the language of *Peru*, the mineray, from which the ſilver is extracted, are not always of the ſame nature, conſiſtence, or colour. In the mines of *Lipes*, they are generally white and grey, mixed with red or blueiſh ſpots; which is called plata blancha, or white ſilver: though, for the moſt part, there appear ſome little grains of ſilver, and very frequently ſmall branches, extending along the layers of the ſtone. There are ſome, on the contrary, as black as the droſs of iron, in which the ſilver has no appearance, called oregrillo, that,

that is blackiſh: but, ſometimes, it is black with lead; on which account, it is called plomo ronco, or coarſe lead; where the ſilver appears is if ſcratched with ſomething harſh; being generally the richeſt, and procured with the leaſt charge; becauſe, inſtead of moulding it with quickſilver, it is melted in furnaces, where the fire evaporates the lead, leaving the ſilver pure and clean. It was from the latter ſort of mines, that the *Indians* drew their ſilver: for, having no uſe of mercury like the *Europeans*, they only wrought thoſe whoſe ore would melt, by heating their furnaces with ylo, or the dung of the llamas, and other beaſts.

THERE is another ſort of ore like the laſt, very rich, and affording the fineſt ſilver; but it turns red, if wetted and rubbed againſt iron; for which reaſon it is called roſicler, ſignifying the ruddineſs of the morning. There is ſome that glitters like talc, or iſinglaſs; but it yields little ſilver, and is called zoroche: the peel is of a yellowiſh red, very ſoft, and broken in bits; being principally wrought on account of the eaſineſs of getting the ore. There is ſome green, not much harder than the laſt, called cobriſſo, or copperiſh; which is very ſcarce and hard to be managed, notwithſtanding the ſilver appears in it, and it is almoſt mouldering: for, ſometimes, after being ground, it muſt be burnt in the fire, and ſeveral other methods uſed to ſeparate it from the copper. And, laſtly, there is another kind of ſcarce and valuable ore, which has been only found in the mine of *Cotamiſo* at *Potoſi*; being threads of pure ſilver, entangled together like burnt lace; ſo fine that they

call it arana, from its reſemblance to the cobweb of a ſpider.

THE veins of mines, of whatever kind, are generally richer in the middle, than towards the edges; and when two veins croſs one another, the place where they meet is always rich: it being alſo obſerved, that thoſe which lie north and ſouth, are richer than thoſe that lie any other way. But thoſe new places, where mills can be erected, and commodiouſly wrought, are frequently preferable to ſuch as are richer, and require more expence; which is the reaſon, why a cheſt of ore, at *Lipes* and *Potoſi*, muſt yield ten marks, of eight ounces each mark of ſilver, to pay the charges; while five marks are ſufficient to pay the expence at thoſe of *Tarama*.

IF the mines are rich, and ſink downwards, they are liable to be flooded; when the miners muſt have recourſe to pumps and machines; or elſe drain them by what they call cocabones, being paſſages made in the ſide of the mountain, for the water to run out, which frequently ruin the owners, by inſenſibly drawing them into an inſupportable expence.

THERE are other ways of ſeparating the ſilver from the ſtones that confine it, and from other metals that are mixed with it, by fire, or ſtrong ſeparating water, made uſe of at ſome mines, where other means fail, and where they make a ſort of ingots, called bollas: but the moſt general and uſeful method is to make the pinnas or maſſes, which are preferred to other forms, on account of their eaſineſs in making, and becauſe they ſave ſome ingredients; being a thing of conſequence in

in works of this nature, where a ſaving in the expence, has the ſame effect as the diſcovery of the mine.

It is natural to ſuppoſe, that, in mines, as well as other things, there happens great variation in their product, and value. The mines which lately yielded moſt ſilver, are thoſe of *Orura*, a little town, 240 miles from *Arica*: but, in 1712, there was one diſcovered at *Ollachea*, near *Cuſco*, that yielded 2500 marks, of eight ounces each, out of every cheſt, being almoſt one fifth part of the ore; though it has ſo much declined, that it is now reckoned among the ordinary ſort. Thoſe at *Lipes*, are the next in eſtimation: for thoſe at *Potoſi* yield little in proportion, and cauſe a large expence, on account of their great depth. However, the quantity of ore that has been already wrought at *Potoſi*, and laid ſeveral years upon the ſurface, is thought capable of affording a ſecond crop; being a proof that theſe minerals generate in the earth, like all other inanimate things; and it is likewiſe certain, from all accounts of the *Spaniards*, that gold and ſilver, as well as other metals, are continually growing, and forming themſelves in the bowels of their natural earths: which opinion is verified by experience, in the mountain of *Potoſi*, where ſeveral mines have fallen in, and buried the workmen with their tools; whoſe bones, and ſome pieces of wood, have been afterwards diſcovered, with veins of ſilver actually running through them.

These mines belong to the perſon that firſt diſcovers them; who immediately preſents a petition to the magiſtrates, to have ſuch a piece of

earth for his own, which is immediately granted: when they meaſure eighty *Spaniſh* yards in length, and forty in breadth, for the diſcoverer; who chooſes what ſpace he thinks fit, and does what he pleaſes with it. The ſame quantity is then meaſured for the king, and ſold to the beſt purchaſer: though, if any other perſon is inclinable to work part of the mine himſelf, he bargains with the proprietor for a particular vein; when all that he digs out is his own property, after paying the royal duty, which is the twentieth part for gold, and a fifth for ſilver: but ſome land-lords find ſuch an account in letting out their ground, and their mills, that they live upon the profit, without any hazard.

THE ſpecific gravity of fine gold is to that of mercury, as 19,640 is to 13,943: to that of the hardeſt lead, as 19,640 to 11,356: to that of fine ſilver, as 19,640 to 10,091: to that of fine copper, as 19,640 to 9000: to that of iron, as 19,640 to 7690: to that of tin, as 19,640 to 7,320: and to that of native red cinnabar, as 19,640 to 7300.

A cubic inch of pure gold, weighs 12 oz. 2 dr. 52 gr. and the cubic inch of ſilver, 6 oz. 5 dr. 28 gr. The pound weight, of 12 oz. troy, of gold, is divided into 24 caracts; and the pound weight of fine gold, according to the *Engliſh* coinage, is worth 48 *l.* 10 *s.* 6 *d.* ſterling; the pound weight of fine ſilver being worth 3 *l.* 6 *s.* 11 *d.* $\frac{1}{2}$ ſterling: fine gold is in value to crown gold, as 1 to .9167; and fine ſilver in value to ſterling ſilver, as 1 to .9260. The *Engliſh* ſtandard for gold, is 22 caracts of fine gold, and 2 caracts of copper; which, being melted together, is eſteemed the true ſtandard for gold coin: that is, if any quantity of fine

fine gold, is divided into 24 equal parts, and 22 of thoſe parts are mixed with two of the like parts of copper, the mixture is called ſtandard gold; an ounce of which, when a guinea is valued at 21 ſhillings, is worth 3 *l.* 18 *s.* 1 *d.* $\frac{81}{129}$; and the pound weight of that gold, is worth 46 *l.* 17 *s.* 8 *d* $\frac{12}{129}$, which, in the reign of *Edward* III. was coined only into 14 *l.* ſterling: but, as bullion, it is worth 4 *l.* an ounce, and 12 ounces of bullion are coined into 44 $\frac{1}{2}$ guineas. The ſtandard for ſilver, is eleven ounces and two penny weight of fine ſilver melted, with eighteen penny weight of copper, which is called ſterling ſilver; 12 ounces of bullion ſilver, being coined into 62 ſhillings; at which rate, the crown piece weighs about 19 d.wt. 8,516,129 gr. the current value is 5 *s.* and the value of the ſame as bullion, at 5 *s.* an ounce is 4 *s.* 10 *d.* $\frac{1}{16}$.

Fine gold is that which loſes nothing of its primitive weight in aſſaying: but, if the loſs is $\frac{1}{24}$ part, it is called 23 caracts fine, or 1 caract better than ſtandard: if it loſes $\frac{2}{24}$ parts, it is 22 caracts fine, or ſtandard: if $\frac{3}{24}$ parts, it is called 1 caract worſe than ſtandard; and ſo, in proportion, as it happens to be better or worſe: but the loſs, on aſſaying ſilver, is computed by penny weights, and other ſubordinate denominations. The preſent value of gold is to that of ſilver, as 14 to 1; but, till the diſcovery of *America*, it was only as 12 to 1; and this proportion varies, as gold is more or leſs plentiful, or as there is a greater or a leſſer circulation of ſilver. However, the preſent proportion, eſpecially if reckoned as 1 ounce to 15, does not ſeem altogether ſo well adjuſted as might be wiſhed; becauſe, conſidering the preſent ſcarcity of ſilver in *Europe*, which is owing to the im-

menſe ſums of that coin carried to the *Eaſt-Indies*, the prevailing cuſtom, lately introduced, of working ſuch great quantities of ſilver into plate, and to the failing of the mines, the price of gold ſeems to be raiſed too high, and requires to be gradually brought back to its firſt proportion.

THE coinage of *Portugal* is the moſt ſimilar of any other nation to the ſtandard of *England*, where it is allowed to paſs current: but the *Spaniſh* coinage is eſteemed one of the moſt imperfect of any in *Europe*; being ſettled at *Seville* and *Segovia*, the only cities where gold and ſilver are ſtruck in thoſe dominions: though ſuch prodigious quantities of pieces of eight, and other ſpecies, are brought from *Peru*, *Mexico*, and other provinces of *Spaniſh America*, that, in this reſpect, it muſt be acknowledged, there is no ſtate in the world where ſo much money is coined as in *Spain*; which chiefly paſſes into the hands of other nations, and particularly of the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*.

ANOTHER part of the riches of *Peru*, conſiſts in their quickſilver, or mercury, of which they have ſeveral mines in the audience of *Lima*; particularly in the mountains of *Oropeza* and *Guancavilca*, near the city of *Guamanga*. Mercury denotes a fluid mineral matter, perfectly reſembling ſilver in fuſion; and is found under three ſeveral forms: 1*ſt*. in ruddy glebes, or clods, called cinnabar: 2*d*. in hard ſtoney glebes; or a mineral ſubſtance, of a ſaffron, and ſometimes a blackiſh, colour: 3*d*. it is alſo found pure; for, upon opening holes in the beds of ſtones, there ſometimes guſhes a vein, or ſtream, of pure mercury, called virgin mercury; which is the beſt ſort for chemical preparations.

There

There are mines of mercury in *Hungary*, *Spain*, and *Italy*, of all the abovementioned kinds: but *Acoſta* obſerves, that the *Peruvian* quickſilver is made from the cinnabar; which is a mineral ſtone, red, heavy, and brilliant; being eſteemed as marcaſite of quickſilver; or rather as quickſilver petrified, and fixed, by means of ſulphur, and a ſubterraneous heat: for it can be chemically reduced, without much trouble or loſs, to the nature of mercury; and each pound of good cinnabar, will yield fourteen ounces of mercury.

THE native *Indians* wrought theſe mines a conſiderable time before the *Spaniards* ſettled in their country, without underſtanding the nature and value of the mineral: for, as the cinnabar yields a vermillion, they only ſought after this ſtone, which they called limpi; and uſed it, like the ancient *Romans*, or modern *Ethiopians*, for painting their faces and bodies on feſtivals and rejoicing times; or elſe to beautify the images of their deities. Nor were theſe quickſilver mines diſcovered by the *Spaniards*, till the year 1567, when *Henriques Garcias*, a native of *Portugal*, happened to meet with a piece of ore, which the *Indians* called limpi; when he imagined that this muſt be the ſame as the *European* vermillion, which he knew was extracted out of the ſame ore with quickſilver: therefore, he went to the mines to make the experiment, and found it to be according as he had conjectured. Upon this diſcovery, a great number of labourers were immediately employed to draw the quickſilver out of the mines, in the neighbourhood of *Guamanga*; one of which is deſcribed, by *Acoſta*, to be a rock of hard ſtone; intermixed

with quickſilver, extending about eighty yards in length, forty in breadth, and 140 in depth; being ſo capacious, that three hundred men might work in it together.

THE refining, or ſeparating quickſilver from the ore, is done in the following manner. The ſtone, or hard ore, wherein it is found, is beat to powder, and put into the fire in earthen pots, well luted and cloſed. When the ſtone is melted by the heat of the fire, the quickſilver ſeparates itſelf, and aſcends till it reaches the top of the pot, where it congeals: though if it was ſuffered to paſs out, without meeting any hard ſubſtance, it would aſcend till it became cold; and then, congealing, it would fall down again: but, as the ore is melted in earthen pots, it congeals at the top of them, which they unſtop, and draw out the metal when it is cold; for, if there remains any fume, or vapour, it endangers the lives of the workmen; who, at leaſt, will loſe their teeth, or the uſe of their limbs.

As mercury is a very fluid body, it is more difficult to be found than other metals: becauſe, according to *Lemery*, it inſinuates itſelf into earth, and the clefts of ſtones; where the miners frequently loſe ſight of it, when they imagine they are juſt going to take it up: nor can men work at it many years, without being afflicted by paralytic diſorders.

QUICKSILVER is the heavieſt of all metals, except gold; to which it is, as 13,943 to 19,640; to lead, as 13,943 to 11,356; and to ſilver, as 13,943 to 10,091: for *Furetiere* affirms, that a ſolid foot of mercury weighs 947 lb. and that a cubical

cubical foot of river water weighs only 70 lb. ſo that a veſſel which will hold 35 pints of water, will contain 947 lb. of quickſilver.

MERCURY is ſold at *Amſterdam*, for about 1 *l.* 14 *s.* ſterling the pound; where it ſhould be choſen white, fluid, clean, quick, and of a beautiful water-colour: but, if the colour is brown and leady, if it ſticks to the hands, or runs in minute globules, it is a ſign that it is not pure, that there is ſome mixture of lead, and conſequently that it is good for nothing.

THE uſes of mercury are very conſiderable in refining gold and ſilver; in gilding, making looking glaſſes, and eſpecially in medicine: but the *Spaniards* never refined their *Peruvian* ſilver with mercury, before the year 1571, when *Ferdinandez de Valeſco* came there from *Mexico*, and put them into this method: after which, they conveyed their quickſilver in ſkins to the port of *Arica* by ſea, and from thence by land carriage to the mines of *Potoſi*; where they extracted much greater quantities of ſilver from their ore by mercury, than they were capable of doing alone by fire: for theſe mines annually conſume about ſeven thouſand quintals of mercury, in refining ſilver; excluſive of the conſumption of other mines.

THERE are ſome precious ſtones found in *Peru*; particularly emeralds, and turquoiſes; as alſo cryſtal; and ſome pearls are fiſhed on the coaſt, which are ſold to the *Peruvians*.

BEFORE the *Spaniards* eſtabliſhed themſelves in this country, the *Peruvians* had no horſes, cows, aſſes, ſheep, goats, ſwine, dogs, cats, and other creatures of the *European* ſpecies: but theſe were afterwards carried over, and have multiplied amazingly,

ingly, eſpecially poultry, which the *Indians* look upon as an extraordinary advantage.

THE animals peculiar to *Peru*, to which the *Europeans* have given the names of ſheep and goats, becauſe they reſemble them more than any other animals in this part of the world, are generally diſtinguiſhed by the names of llamas and vicunnas.

THE llamas, or *Peruvian* ſheep, are alſo called pacos, huanacu, and guanacu, by the *Indians*; as alſo chillehueque in *Chili*; and by the *Spaniards* carneros de la tierra, or the country ſheep: which are again diſtinguiſhed by the tame and the wild, or the large and the ſmall kind. The large tame huanacu, according to *De la Vega*, is of the bigneſs of a ſtag; with a long neck, bowing downwards, and reſembling a camel more than any other beaſt, only it has no bunch on the back. Their bodies are covered with a coarſe wool, and the hide makes excellent leather: but their heads are ſmall in proportion to their bodies; being ſomething between thoſe of a horſe and a ſheep: the upper lip, like that of a hare, is cleft in the middle, through which they ſpit about five or ſix yards from them, againſt any thing that gives them offence; and if any of their ſpittle falls upon the face of a perſon, it makes a reddiſh ſpot, which is ſoon followed by an itching. Their height is from about four feet to four and a half: though they are of ſo gentle and tractable a diſpoſition, that a child may govern them. The tame ones are very different in colour; but the wild ones are always of a cheſnut hue. *Herrera* ſays, ſome of theſe creatures are woolly, and others ſmooth; being larger than *European* ſheep, and leſs than calves.

calves. The fleſh of this animal, when young, is tender and delicate eating; being ſo wholſome and inoffenſive, that it is preferred before chickens for the food of ſick people: though, when they grow up, the fleſh is coarſe; and will keep a long time, if properly ſalted and dried: but they were moſtly valued for carrying burthens, before horſes and mules were imported among the *Peruvians*; for all kinds of merchandize were tranſported from one part of the country to the other, upon the backs of theſe creatures. *Herrera* obſerves, that five hundred, or a thouſand of them go in a body, laden with any ſort of goods, attended only by eight or ten *Indians*, and every ſheep carrying a hundred weight, or at moſt a hundred and quarter; with which they travel about twelve miles a day; though, for one day's journey, they will carry two hundred weight, and travel 24 miles. He alſo ſays, that they love a cold climate: but, that the ſmooth ſheep are apt to take fright, and run up to the mountains, with their burthens on their backs; which makes it ſometimes neceſſary to ſhoot them, to ſave what they carry: beſides, they will ſometimes be ſullen, and lie down; when no beating will cauſe them to riſe; ſo that the *Indians* are obliged to ſit down, ſtroke, cheriſh, and appeaſe them, for two or three hours, before they can get them into humour, and entice them to proceed on their journey. According to the account of *De la Vega*, it is common to ſee eight hundred, or a thouſand of theſe ſheep in a caravan; which are ſo ſure footed, that they will carry their burthens over rocks and precipices, where a man muſt travel on foot with difficulty: he ſays,

their

their uſual burthen is about ſixty or eighty pounds weight, with which they travel nine or ten miles a day; but are not to be driven beyond their accuſtomed pace; for, if they are, they tire and lie down, and there is no getting them up again, though their burdens are taken off their back; on which account, there are always forty or fifty of them unladen in the caravans; and, when one of the laden ſheep begins to be tired, the driver eaſes him of his burthen, by laying it on one that is freſh and unloaded. Other authors obſerve, that theſe animals walk a regular pace; holding their heads up with great gravity: but, that it is impoſſible to make them move with their burden at night; when they lie down, till it is taken off, that they may go and graze. They are no charge to their maſters, who only unload them, and turn them to graze in the common fields, at the end of every ſtage; their common food being a ſort of graſs called ycho, like the ſmall ruſh; only a little finer, with a ſharp point at the end; and with which all the mountains are covered. The ſheep eat little, and ſeldom drink: beſides, they never require ſhoeing; becauſe they are cloven-footed, and have a callous ſpongy matter at the bottom of their feet. The *Spaniards* alſo make uſe of them, in the mines, to carry the ore to the mills; and, as ſoon as they are loaded, they go without any guide to the place where they are uſed to be unloaded. It ſhould be obſerved, that they have a kind of ſpur above the foot, which makes them ſo ſure footed among the rocks; becauſe they make uſe of it to hold, or hook by, in paths of any danger. The leſſer ſort of ſheep, or pacos,

carry

carry no burthen; but their fleſh is almoſt as good meat as the former: their wool being long, and much eſteemed, of which the natives make ſeveral ſorts of ſtuffs for cloathing, and dye it of various colours that never change or fade: but the *Peruvians* never milked either of them, or indeed any other animal. The wild ſheep afford wool, though not ſo fine as the tame ones; nor is their fleſh ſo nouriſhing or delicate: they ſeem to be the ſame as the vicunnas of *Chili*; and *De la Vega* relates, that the males uſually keep a watch on the hills, while the females are feeding in the vallies; to whom they neigh like horſes, when they diſcover any people approaching towards them; upon which, the females fly to their cover, and the males always bring up the rear, till they are out of danger.

THE *Peruvian* goats, called, by the *Spaniards*, vicunnas or vigognias, becauſe they reſemble the *European* goat more than any other animal, is ſhaped much like the llama, but is ſmaller and higher; being larger than a goat, long-legged, without horns, and ſo ſwift of foot, that no greyhound can take it; which makes them uſually ſhot or ſnared by the *Indians*, who hunt them in the higheſt parts of the mountains near the ſnow, and drive them into ſome narrow paſs, where they have faſtened cords a-croſs, three or four feet from the ground, with bits of wool and cloth hanging at them. When the vicunnas come to the paſs, they are terrified at the motion of theſe bits of wool and cloth, and are afraid to proceed farther; ſo that they preſs together in a throng, when the *Indians* kill them with ſtones made faſt

at

at the end of leather thongs: but, if any guanacos, ſuch as have been deſcribed under *Chili*, happen to be with them, they leap over the cord, and are followed by the vicunnas. The fleſh of this animal is lean, tough, and ill-taſted; though in great eſteem with the *Indians*, on account of ſome of its reputed healing and medicinal qualities. Its wool, or rather fine ſoft fur, is much more preferable than the wool of the llamas, being of a light cheſnut colour, and never dyed; ſo that it was uſed for making the fineſt garments and carpets, which were permitted to be uſed and worn only by the incas, and the royal family.

THE guanacos, or vicachas of *Peru*, are larger, and more corpulent, than the vicunnas. The alpaques is a black animal, ſomewhat like the llama, having extraordinary fine wool: but their legs are ſhort, and their ſnouts contracted ſo much as to form ſome reſemblance to the human countenance: the *Indians* alſo make theſe creatures carry a burthen, as well as the llamas, and much of the ſame weight: their wool ſerves to make ſtuffs, cords, and ſacks; their bones are uſed to make utenſils for weavers; and their dung ſerves for firing.

THERE are red and fallow deer in *Peru*; but they are not ſo large as thoſe of *Europe*; and were ſo numerous, before the arrival of the *Spaniards*, that they came in droves into the villages; where the common people never attempted to take or deſtroy them, becauſe they were royal game. They had alſo plenty of rabbits, like thoſe of *Chili*, both wild and tame; which every man was at liberty to keep or take, whenever he had an inclination.

THIS

THIS country was but very little infeſted by wild beaſts: however, they had a few lions, which were neither ſo large, or ſo fierce, as thoſe of *Africa:* there were ſtill fewer bears: only a ſmall number of tygers, upon ſome of the higheſt mountains of the *Cordilleras:* and no wolves at all; which was very happy for the ſecurity of their cattle, eſpecially as the *Indians* had no dogs capable of defending their flocks; nor, indeed, had they any other dogs, but a kind of mongrels, or lurchers, that never barked, and were like thoſe which *Columbus* ſaw in the iſland of *Cuba*, when he firſt diſcovered *America*.

THERE are great numbers of monkeys in this country, of various kinds and colours; ſome black, others grey, and a third ſort ſpotted: ſome with tails, others without, and one kind four times as large as the ordinary monkeys; whoſe tricks and dexterity are ſcarce credible, though mentioned by *Herrera*, aſſerted by *Acoſta*, and corroborated by *De la Vega*; who, among other things, ſay, that their motion and activity are ſo remarkable, that they ſeem to have reaſon and diſcourſe; for, when they leap from one tree to another, if the diſtance is ſo far that one cannot reach the place, they hang themſelves at the bough of a tree, one at the tail of another; and, making a long ſwing, the lowermoſt, with the help of the other, throws himſelf to the bough they aim at, where he faſtens himſelf, and helps his other companions after him.

DE la VEGA mentions a particular beaſt, that is found on the mountains of the *Andes*; being like a cow in ſhape, though leſs, and without horns; of whoſe hides they make buff, and very ſtrong

ſtrong leather. But, he ſays, there are ſcarce any of the pecoree, or warree in *Peru*; or any where to the weſtward of the *Andes:* however, theſe animals, which are a kind of *American* hog, are abundantly met with in *Mexico:* and it is to be obſerved, both in *Peru* and *Mexico*, which lie for the moſt part between the tropics, that their animals are generally of the ſame ſpecies; therefore, thoſe that are more frequently found in *Mexico*, will be mentioned in the deſcription of that province.

HERRERA and *Acoſta* relate, that the bezoar ſtone is found in the ſtomachs and bellies of moſt of the wild cattle of *Peru*; there being ſometimes two, three, or four together, of different ſhapes, ſize, and colour; as black, dark, grey, white, and green; ſome looking as if they were gilded, and covered with ſeveral coats or ſkins: ſome as big as filberts; others of the ſize of walnuts, or pidgeon's eggs; many as large as hen's eggs; and a few as big as oranges. All the beaſts that engender the bezoar ſtone, chew the cud, and uſually feed among the rocks in the ſnow: it is found both in the male and female, who eat, or drink, of ſome paſture and waters, that have been poiſoned by particular herbs, and venomous reptiles: but there is one herb, which the vicunnas, and other beaſts that engender the bezoar ſtone, run to by inſtinct, when they find themſelves poiſoned, and by that means expel the infection: which makes the *Indians* of opinion, that the ſtone in the ſtomach of theſe animals is compounded of this herb; from whence it derives its vertue againſt poiſons, and produces many other ſurprizing effects. The ſtones are frequently formed

in

in the ſtomach, upon little pieces of wood, or ſhells, which are found in the center of the ball: but the *Indians* ſay, that the cattle ſent from *Europe* will not breed the bezoar; becauſe they never eat that extraordinary herb. *Herrera* obſerves, that the value of this ſtone conſiſts in its being of ſingular ſervice againſt infectious diſtempers, the ſpotted fever, and other diſeaſes; as alſo for the pleuriſy, ſtopping of blood, for the milk of women, and epilepſies: but the *Indians* have counterfeited them, by making factitious ſtones, ſince they have found that the real ones have been held in ſuch eſtimation; which have made the good qualities of the latter ſuſpected. However, what the *Indians* relate of this matter, ſeems to agree with what *Pliny* ſays of the mountain goats, which fed upon poiſonous herbs, without ſuffering any damage. Beſides, it is well known, that the bezoar ſtone is found intermingled with the dung of an animal, of the goat-kind, called pazan, in ſeveral parts of the *Eaſt-Indies*, particularly *Golconda*, and *Cananor*; the buds of a certain ſhrub, which the animal uſes to browze, being generally found in the middle of it, and is ſuppoſed to be the baſis, on which this formation is made. A ſtone of one ounce is ſold, in the *Eaſt-Indies*, for about 5 *l.* ſterling; and one of four ounces, for about 100 *l.* ſterling; ſo that the value of the ſtone is augmented according to its magnitude, the price increaſing like that of a diamond: but the occidental bezoar is of a much inferior value to the oriental; being heavier, more brittle, of a dirtier colour, not ſo gloſſy, and of leſs value. Bezoar is eaſily ſophiſticated, and the deceit as eaſily diſcovered: for the

methods of proving it are, 1*ſt*. To ſteep it three or four hours in luke-warm water; when, if the water is not tinged, and the bezoar has not loſt of its weight, it is pure: 2*dly*. To try it with a ſharp red-hot iron; when, if it enters the ſtone, and the heat makes it fry and ſhrivel, it is factitious: 3*dly*, To rub it over a paper ſmeared with chalk, or lime; when, if it leaves a yellow taint on the former, or a green one on the latter, it is good and valuable.

THE firſt horſes and mares were carried over about the year 1495, from *Andaluſia* in *Spain*, to *Cuba* and *Hiſpaniola*; from whence they were tranſported to *Peru* and *Mexico*, where they were of great ſervice to the *Spaniards*, in their conqueſts of thoſe countries, as well as in their invaſion of *Chili*. They were at firſt uſually ſold for two or three thouſand pieces of eight, or about 450 *l*. ſterling, a piece: but this exorbitant price was ſoon abated; for the horſes multiplied here in the ſame manner as in *Chili*, and were turned looſe into the fields, where they proved a better race than their *Spaniſh* ſires; being broke, and made fit for ſervice, at three years of age.

Cows and oxen were alſo highly valued, on their firſt importation, being ſold for two hundred crowns a head; but, in 1554, the price was reduced to one hundred crowns; and, in 1590, they were ſo prodigiouſly increaſed, as to be ſold for about twenty or thirty ſhillings. They were afterwards ſuffered to run wild in the mountains, where they were hunted, and killed for their hides; which made part of the cargoes of ſuch ſhips as ſailed to *Spain*: but their fleſh was little valued,

valued, either by the *Spaniards*, or the *Indians*. The *Spaniards* have a particular manner of hunting, and hocking or hamſtringing, the wild bulls and cows that are found in the forreſts and ſavannahs; which, according to *Dampier*, is done as follows. The hockſer is a perſon who is conſtantly employed, and becomes very expert in this way of hunting. He is mounted on a good horſe, bred up to the ſport; who knows when to advance, or retreat, without giving his rider any trouble to manage him. The hunter carries a pole, about 15 feet long; to which the hocking-iron is faſtened by a ſocket; being made in the ſhape of a half-moon, with a very ſharp edge, and the corners about ſix or ſeven inches aſunder. When the hockſer is mounted, he lays the pole over the head of his horſe, with the iron forward, and then rides after his game, which he ſtrikes juſt above the hock with his iron, and hamſtrings the beaſt; who immediately faces about, and makes at the huntſman with all his force: but the horſe is taught to wheel off to the left, and is too ſwift for the wounded animal. If the hamſtring is not quite cut aſunder by the ſtroke, the beaſt certainly breaks it, by continually ſpringing out his leg; when he can go but on three legs; yet ſtill limps forward to be revenged on his enemy. The hockſer then rides up ſoftly to him, and ſtrikes his iron into the knee of one of his fore legs; when the beaſt immediately tumbles down: upon which, the hockſer diſmounts, and ſtrikes a ſtrong ſharp pointed knife ſo dexterouſly into the pole of the beaſt, a little behind the horns, as to cut the ſtring of the neck, and diſpatch the creature at one

blow. The hockſer immediately mounts again, and rides after more game; leaving the ſkinners, that follow him, to take off the hide; which is all they regard in *Peru*, where the wild beef is ſo plentiful. The *Spaniards* hunt only the bulls and old cows; leaving the young cattle to breed; whereby they always preſerve their ſtock entire: but the *Engliſh* and *French* formerly purſued the contrary method, in their iſland ſettlements, and particularly at *Jamaica*, where the former killed all the cattle, without any diſtinction.

A JACK-ASS was at firſt in great eſtimation, by the *Spaniards* of *Peru*, for getting a fine breed of mules out of their mares: nor were goats and ſwine unprofitable animals: but all theſe are now very cheap, common, and plentiful. *European* ſheep were firſt brought here in 1556; when they were valued at forty or fifty crowns a piece: but they increaſed ſo much, in a ſhort time, that a ſheep might be had for a trifle. As there are a great number of ſheep; ſo there is a proportionable quantity of wool; which is not fine: becauſe all the wool between the tropics is generally coarſe, and like hair. Some camels have been alſo carried over; but their increaſe has been inconſiderable.

THE *Peruvians*, as well as the *Chileſians*, had but one ſort of tame fowl, call nuuma, or the ſucker; which was between the ſize of a gooſe and a duck: but the *Spaniards* have introduced all kinds of poultry which are common in *Europe*, and have found them multiply in a ſurprizing manner. However, the *Indians* had a great variety of wild-fowl, and birds, both on the land, and on the

the water; particularly eagles, hawks, cauders, auras, huacamayas, parrots, herons, wild-ducks, wild-geeſe, ſwans, partridges, wood-pidgeons, and turtle-doves: beſides ſome common in *Chili*; and others never ſeen in *Europe*.

THE *South-Sea*, along the coaſt of *Peru*, is well repleniſhed with all manner of fiſh; and particularly a kind of pilchards; which are principally the ſubſiſtence of thoſe people who inhabit the places near the ſea. But their rivers afford ſcarce any kind of fiſh; which is attributed to the rapidity of their courſe from the *Andes*, and the ſhallowneſs of their channels. Nor are the lakes plentiful of any kind of fiſh but one, which has no ſcales, and is ſomewhat like a ſprat in ſhape; though of no delicate flavour.

SECTION II.

An account of the cuſtoms of the ancient Peruvian Indians: *the riſe and power of the incas; their religion; and reigns, from* Mangocapa *to* Atabalippa: *with a repreſentation of their form of government.*

THE *Peruvians*, like other *Indians*, were generally of a middle ſtature, and an olive complexion; but of a perfect copper colour, near the equator: their hair, like that of all the other people between the tropics, was black; moſt of them had their heads ſhaved; and, like the *Chileſians*, their beards were pulled off, with tweezers,

from time to time; as alſo the hair off the other parts of their body, whenever any appeared; except their eye-brows, and eye-lids.

BEFORE the incas, or yncas, ſubdued all the country, there was no kingdom of any conſequence, among the *Peruvians*; who lived either abſolutely free, or under petty princes or lords, like the caziques of moſt part of *America*. The ſeveral nations were chiefly diſtinguiſhed by their head-dreſſes: for ſome wore whole pieces of cotton linnen, wrapped about their heads, like turbans; others had only a ſingle piece of linnen tied about their heads: ſome wore a kind of hats; others caps, in the form of a ſugar-loaf; with ſeveral other different faſhions, which never altered, continuing the ſame in their reſpective nations and tribes, from generation to generation. But this is to be underſtood of the better ſort of people; for thoſe of an inferior rank went bare-headed; at leaſt, the *Spaniards* have repreſented them ſo, in the pictures they have given of the *Peruvians*, at the time of their conqueſt. The head-dreſs, cap, or turban, ſeems to have been granted to their chiefs, as a mark of diſtinction. Their heads, and bodies, were alſo anointed with oil, or greaſe; and ſome of them uſed paint, like the reſt of the *Americans*.

THEIR holiday-dreſs was a ſort of ſhirt, a veſt without ſleeves, and a mantle: they had alſo ſhoes, or rather ſandals, on their feet, made of the ſkins of beaſts untanned: but the common people, both women as well as men, uſually went naked, except a ſmall piece of linnen about their waiſts. *Garcillaſſa de la Vega*, who was deſcended from the

the blood royal of the incas, repreſents the *Peruvians* as a very rude and uncivilized people, before they were conquered and reformed by their emperors: and though *Herrera* commends their laws and cuſtoms, he would have it believed, that the *Peruvians* were guilty of ſome ſavage and barbarous acts among themſelves, when they were invaded by the *Spaniards*. But *Vega* endeavours to pay all honourable reſpect to his royal anceſtors, by making them the reformers, and legiſlators of their countrymen: and *Herrera* only palliates the cruelty of the *Spaniards*, by reproaching the character of the *Indians*.

BLAS VALERA, who gave the *Peruvians* a more genuine character, ſays, that they exceeded moſt nations in the world, for vivacity of wit, and ſolidity of judgment: which was ſufficiently apparent, becauſe, without the aſſiſtance of letters, they attained the knowledge of ſeveral things, that the learning of the *Egyptians*, *Chaldeans*, and *Greeks*, could never accompliſh. If they had any thing that ſeemed ſhocking to the *Europeans*, it proceeded not from the want of natural parts, or endowments of mind; but from their being unpractiſed in the politer cuſtoms of *Europe*; and from their want of maſters to inſtruct them in the liberal ſciences: for thoſe *Indians* who had the advantage of ſuch inſtruction, after the arrival of the *Spaniards*, became greater proficients than the *Spaniards* themſelves, and would imitate any thing they ſaw ſo exactly, without being taught, that it ſurprized the *European* artiſts.

THOUGH the *Peruvians* had no knowledge of letters, characters, or other ſort of writing, any

more than the reſt of the *Indians*; yet they had methods to preſerve their ancient hiſtories, and the maxims and rules relating to their government. For this purpoſe, they were very exact in their traditions, which the youth received from their elders, and delivered to their children, as a thing ſacred, and religiouſly to be obſerved: beſides, they had a ſort of pictures to ſupply the want of writing: but the moſt wonderful, and unintelligible things to the *Spaniards*, were what the *Indians* called quipos; which conſiſted of abundance of twiſts, or threads put together, full of variety of knots, and diverſity of colours; every one of them ſignifying ſomething; ſo that a bunch of theſe threads ſerved them inſtead of a book, whereby they told all things in their hiſtory, knew their laws and ceremonies, and kept accompts to admiration. For the preſerving of theſe quipos, there were officers called quipocamayos, who were obliged to give an exact account of what all thoſe things ſignified; having ſeveral quipos for different uſes: which is continued to the preſent time, in ſuch a manner, that an *Indian*, by this cluſter of threads, will tell exactly what an officer has done for ſeveral years, and in what parts. Others have little ſtones, whereby they remember any thing they are to learn; for, when their memory fails them, by looking upon theſe ſtones, they ſet themſelves right again, as *Europeans* might by looking in a book. With regard to any intricate accompt in arithmetick, they will caſt it up in a moment, with only a few grains of their corn, better than an able accomptant can do with his pen; which muſt be ſimilar to what is ſtill practiſed in

ſome

ſome parts of *Europe* with counters. Theſe were the means whereby the *Indians* preſerved the knowledge of their antiquities: which were very ingeniouſly, and wittily contrived; yet it cannot be ſuppoſed, that, by ſuch means, any thing like an accurate and compleat hiſtory could be handed down to poſterity. Beſides, if it is conſidered, how much the *Spaniards* are naturally inclined to romancing, it muſt be inferred, that very little ſtreſs can be laid upon the accounts they have given of the ancient hiſtory of this country. However, it will be neceſſary to give a ſhort extract of what *Acoſta*, and ſome other of the beſt *Spaniſh* authors have wrote upon this ſubject.

THE incas began to reign between three and four hundred years before the arrival of the *Spaniards*: but, for a long time, their dominion never extended above ſixteen or ſeventeen miles round the city of *Cuſco*, where they had their original, and gradually ſtretched farther over all the country of *Peru*, from above *Quito* in the north, beyond the equinoctial line, to the ſouthermoſt boundaries of *Chili*; being a tract of ground almoſt three thouſand miles long. In breadth, their kingdom extended from the *South-Sea* on the weſt, to the great plains beyond the long ridge of the mountains of *Andes* in the eaſt, where ſtood the inca's pacara; being a fortreſs erected to ſecure the frontiers on that ſide: but they went no farther there, becauſe of the great waters, moraſſes, lakes, and rivers, that were in the way to obſtruct their paſſage; ſo that their dominion extended only three hundred miles from weſt to eaſt.

THESE

THESE incas ſurpaſſed all the other nations of *America* in the art of government, and politicks; but much more in courage, and martial diſcipline. The pretence they had for conquering that country, was the fable, that, after the univerſal deluge, of which they had ſome imperfect knowledge, the incas had been the reſtorers of mankind, as ſeven of them came out of the cave of *Pacaritambo*; and, therefore, all other men owed them tribute and ſubjection, as to their progenitors. But, according to *De la Vega*, the incas aſſerted, that they were the offſpring of the ſun, who was touched with compaſſion to behold the depravity of human nature; and therefore ſent a ſon and daughter of his own from heaven to earth, to inſtruct them to worſhip and adore him as their God; to give them laws and precepts, for their government; to form them into ſocieties; and inſtruct them in building, planting, and huſbandry, that they might live like rational beings, and enjoy the productions of the earth. It was repreſented, that, with ſuch inſtructions, the ſun placed his two children in the lake of *Titicaca*; from whence they were to begin their labours, for the reformation of mankind. That he gave them a wedge of gold, which they were to ſtrike into the ground, at every place they ſlept, or reſted: but wherever this wedge was to ſink into the earth, and vaniſh out of their ſight, there they were to make their reſidence, where the people ſhould reſort to them for inſtruction; becauſe, their father, the ſun, had conſtituted them lords and ſovereigns over all men, that ſhould be reduced by them from an uncivilized life, to the happineſs of ſociety.

That,

That, as they travelled northward, and ſtruck the golden wedge into the earth, in the valley of *Cuſco*, it diſappeared, as had been predicted: whereupon the incas aſſembled great multitudes of people there, who adored them as children of the ſun, and obeyed them as their princes. The city of *Cuſco* was erected: the inca ſhewed the men how to cultivate their lands; and his queen equally inſtructed the women in their domeſtic occupations. Beſides, they affirmed, that they only had the true religion, and knew how God ought to be ſerved and honoured; for which reaſon they were to inſtruct all others: and, accordingly, they inſiſted ſo much on their rites and ceremonies, that they had above four hundred places of worſhip in *Cuſco*, as a holy land, with ſymbolical figures in moſt of the adjacent places; and, as they extended their conqueſts, they introduced their religion. The principal object of their adoration, was *Viracocha Pachayachachic*, that is, the creator of the world; and next to him the ſun, who, as well as all their other guaras, or idols, they ſaid had their virtue and being from the creator; with whom they interceded. Next to the ſun, they worſhipped the thunder; pretending that it was a man in heaven, with a ſling and a club; who had power over the rain, hail, thunder, and every thing in the region of the air; upon which account, they offered him ſeveral ſorts of ſacrifices. But *Viracocha*, the ſun, and the thunder, were worſhipped in a different manner from the other deities; which were the moon, the morning ſtar, the pleiades, the rain-bow, the earth, and the ſea. The ſhepherds alſo worſhiped the ſtar, called lyra;

which

which they ſaid was a ſheep of ſeveral colours, that preſerved their cattle: and others adored a ſtar, which they imagined had charge over ſnakes: for they believed, there was the likeneſs in heaven of all the creatures upon earth; and accordingly paid their devotion to ſome particular deity, both animate and inanimate. *Garcillaſſa de la Vega* ſays, that they gave, or offered, nothing to God; becauſe he is lord of all: but they offered ſacrifices of ſheep, corn, garments, and other things, to the ſun; for which purpoſe they had many prieſts, one of whom was the chief of the reſt. They conſecrated virgins to the ſun at eight years of age, like the *Roman* veſtals; of which there were about a thouſand in the city of *Cuſco*, who never went abroad, but were employed in ſpinning for the king and queen. They alſo made the bread uſed at ſacrifices; with the liquor called aca, for the inca and his family to drink on feſtivals; all the veſſels they uſed, being either of ſilver or gold. *Coreal* relates, that theſe virgins were to make a vow of chaſtity for life, and were kept in a convent, from whence they were not to ſtir upon pain of death. They were guarded by prieſts appointed for that purpoſe only; and if any of theſe virgins proved pregnant, ſhe was puniſhed with death, unleſs ſhe would ſwear that ſhe owed her pregnancy to the ſacred influences of the ſun: which was an infallible device to ſave the mother, the child, and the prieſt, by whoſe miniſtry the ſun had vouchſafed to operate on the veſtal. This divine pregnancy, ſays *La Martiniere*, which was aſcribed to the pretended intercourſe of the ſun with a virgin, was no doubt the ſource of many irregularities;

irregularities; "and, I imagine, adds he, that "the ſun had a multitude of children." However there aroſe a double advantage from this device; for, on the one hand, the prieſts and veſtals indulged their pleaſures without danger; and, on the other, the people took no offence at the irregularities of their prieſts.

THE firſt inca, the people of *Peru* mention, *Acoſta* ſays, was *Mangocapa*, or *Manco Capac*; and that his queen was *Coya Mama*; from whom the chief families of the incas deſcended. The firſt of theſe families was called *Hanancuſco*, and the other *Urincuſco*; from the former of which deſcended the ſovereigns, who conquered the country. *Chinchiaroca*, or *Inca Roca*, is the next they mention, as head of the family called *Vizaquirao*; who was firſt ſerved in gold and ſilver; ordering that all his treaſure ſhould be dedicated to the worſhip of his body, and the maintenance of his family. His ſucceſſors followed his example; from whence it became a cuſtom, that no inca ſhould inherit the wealth, or goods of his predeceſſors; but furniſh every thing for himſelf. It is here to be obſerved, that inca, among the *Peruvians*, ſignifies king or emperor; and capac inca the only king, which was the title they gave their ſovereigns: all the male iſſue being called only incas; and the queen coya. The third inca was *Lloqui Ypangui*, otherwiſe called *Yacarquague*, who was founder of the family called *Aocaylli Panaca*. His ſon *Matacapac*, ſucceeded him, and aſſumed the name of *Viracocha*, or *God*; pretending that he was commanded from heaven to do it: he founded the race of *Cocopanacac*; and amaſſed immenſe

menſe treaſures, which were buried with him, at *Xaquixaguana*; where they were afterwards found by *Pizarro*; who ordered his body to be burnt, becauſe the *Indians* worſhiped it; yet they gathered the aſhes, and offered ſacrifice to them, till afterwards thoſe, and all the bodies of the incas kept embalmed, were taken away, to deſtroy that idolatry.

CAPAC YUPANGUI, or *Pachuti Yupangui*, reigned next for ſixty years; and was a great conqueror. During the life of his father, it happened that his elder brother, who governed for the old inca, was routed by the *Changas*, a nation about ninety miles from *Cuſco*: but *Yupangui* gave out, that *Viracocha*, or *God*, had appeared to him, ordering that he ſhould raiſe forces, and cauſe him to be worſhiped, as he ought; for men paid equal adoration to the ſun and other creatures, though he was their creator; and would aſſiſt him, ſo as to make him victorious. Accordingly, he expelled both his father and brother from the throne, overthrew the *Changas*, and then ordered that *Viracocha* ſhould be held the univerſal lord, from which time his idol was ſet above that of the ſun, and their other gauchas, or deities. After the victory, he acquainted his ſoldiers, that it was not they who gained it; but certain bearded men, ſent him by *Viracocha*, whom he ſaw, though they could not; and that they had been converted into ſtones, which were to be found, for he ſhould know them again. Accordingly, he gathered abundance of ſtones near the mountains, which he appointed for gauchas, or idols; calling them pururaucas; to whom his ſubjects offered ſacrifices, and

carried

carried them to their wars, with assurance of success from their assistance; through which conceit they gained many victories. He founded the family, called *Inacapanacac*; and made a large statue of gold, which he named *Indilapa*, and placed it on a bier of the same metal: but a great part of it was carried to *Caxamalca*, to ransom *Atabalippa*, when *Pizarro* made him prisoner. His body was afterwards found at *Cusco*, as entire as if it had been alive, and was sent to *Lima*, where it was kept a long time to be seen by the *Spaniards*.

TOPAY YUPANGUI, or *Ingareque*, was his successor: and, upon his death, his son *Inca Yupangui*, or *Yahncor Huacac*, ascended the throne; who was massacred by some of his general officers, as he was marching upon an expedition against the province of *Collasuyo*. This last inca left no issue; upon which, some of the principal men were for casting off the monarchical government, and erecting an oligarchy: but this was rejected, and *Viracocha Inca* was appointed emperor by election; who, in his old age, resigned the crown to his son *Pachacutec*, or *Urco*. The young prince was of so dissolute a disposition, that he was dethroned by the people; who elected his brother *Yupangui* in his stead. He was succeeded by his son *Tupac Yupangui*; who, after many victories obtained against several nations, resigned his authority to his son *Topa Inca*. The young prince was equally victorious with his father; and was succeeded by his son *Guainacapac*, or *Huana Capac*, who conquered the king of *Quito*, and married his daughter *Totopalla*; by whom he had a son, named *Atabalippa*, or *Atahnalpa*. The emperor *Guainacapac*

was

was ſo exceſſive fond of his ſon *Atabalippa*, that he prevailed upon his eldeſt ſon *Guaſcar*, to conſent that he ſhould have the government of *Quito*, during the life time of their father, and to be continued in it after his death. It was in the reign of this emperor *Guainacapac*, in the year 1515, that the *Spaniards* firſt appeared with their ſhips in the *South-Sea*, commanded by *Vaſco Nunez de Bilboa*; who proceeded as far as the coaſt of *Paſſao*, in *Peru*, which is ſituated under the equator, and would probably have ſettled a colony there, if he had not been recalled by the vice-roy of *Terra Firma*, who envied this commander, and put him to death, on pretence that he was aſſuming an independant authority, and intended to renounce his allegiance to his Catholic majeſty. The *Spaniſh* hiſtorians take notice of ſeveral ridiculous omens, which they ſay happened about this time, and portended the deſtruction of the *Peruvian* empire: however, the emperor was alarmed at the appearance of the *Spaniards* on the coaſt; but died of the ſmall-pox about eight years afterwards; without having the mortification to ſee the diſſentions of his ſons, which paved the way for *Pizarro*, with a ſmall force, to conquer ſo populous a nation.

GUASCAR, or *Tito Cuſtigualpa*, ſuceeded to the imperial dignity, when he was about twenty-five years of age, and reigned in peace, four or five years, without giving his brother *Atabalippa* any moleſtation in his government of *Quito*: but then, conſidering the loſs he had ſuſtained by diſmembering, and yielding up one of the richeſt provinces of the empire, which prevented him from extending

extending his dominions farther northward; and alſo reflecting that his brother was ſo remarkable for his ambitious ſpirit, that he might probably rival him in the reſt of his territories; he determined to reſume what he had too eaſily conceded to *Atabalippa*; to whom he ſent a herald, or ambaſſador, to inform him, that, by the laws of the empire, the territories of the incas could not be divided; and to require him to ſurrender *Quito* to the emperor. *Atabalippa* pretended to comply with this demand: but levied an army of 30,000 veterans, marched towards *Cuſco*, and defeated his brother, whom he took priſoner; deſtroyed his guards, murdered his principal officers, and put many of the royal family to death, by various tortures: though he was ſoon afterwards taken priſoner by the *Spaniards*; who not only ſtript him of his crown, but deprived him of his life.

THIS is the ſhort account, given by *Acoſta*, of the reigns of the incas: and it is now neceſſary to add a few words from *Garcillaſſo de la Vega*, concerning the ancient government of *Peru*.

THE incas had divided their dominions into four parts, anſwering to the quarters of the world; and all the people were ſo diſtributed, that there were officers to every ten, every fifty, every hundred, and every thouſand; who were to ſee that they wanted for nothing, and committed no offence; ſo that the inca knew exactly the number of his ſubjects. In every village, there were judges, who decided all controverſies without appeal; but the inca himſelf determined all diſputes between provinces. The people paid the greateſt honour imaginable to their ſovereigns;

who had ſecret emiſſaries in all parts, to give them intelligence of any miſdemeanor, which they cauſed to be ſeverely puniſhed. The incas were abſolute over the eſtates and perſons of their ſubjects; ſo that they took ſuch of their daughters as they pleaſed, either for their concubines or ſervants; and it was a general rule among them, to marry their own eldeſt ſiſters; but, if they died, or proved barren, they married the next in degree; and for want of them, the next of kin, or diſtinguiſhed birth, who alone was reputed and honoured as the lawful wife; though perhaps there were ſeven hundred others.

THE orejones were the nobility, out of whom were choſen ambaſſadors, governors, commanders, and other principal officers. When they conquered any province, the chief of the natives were generally tranſplanted to another; which were their mitimaes, or ſtanding forces, that ſerved for garriſons, and compoſing the army when called upon.

THE *Indian* houſes were very mean; built of mud, in the form of an arbour; covered with ſtraw on the mountains, and in the plains with ſedge. The uſual ſuſtenance of the people was herbs boiled with axi; and *Indian* wheat, toaſted or boiled, inſtead of bread; which they eat on the ground, out of gourds.

THEIR year was divided into twelve months, diſtinguiſhed by their ſeveral names, and they had particular feſtivals appointed in each of them: but, to keep an exactitude in their calculation of time, they had twelve little pillars or columns, placed on the hills about *Cuſco*, at ſuch diſtances, that each of them ſhewed where the ſun roſe and

ſet

ſet every month; from whence they gave out their feſtivals; and the ſeaſons for ſowing, or reaping. Extraordinary care was taken that the fields ſhould be tilled and ſowed: beſides, as there was want of water, there were magnificent conduits in all parts, and trenches drawn from rivers. The land which was ſowed, they divided into three parts; the firſt belonged to the ſun, the next to the inca, and the third to the tiller. The inca exacted no other duty from his ſubjects, than the ſowing, reaping, and carrying in of his corn to the granaries; with the cloaths and armour for his ſoldiers; for the emperor received gold and ſilver from his ſubjects as a preſent, not as a duty; becauſe they had no other uſe of thoſe metals, than to adorn their temples, and palaces.

THERE were neither taylors, ſhoe-makers, or weavers, among the *Peruvians*; who all knew how to make every thing they wanted: but there were muſicians, goldſmiths, painters, potters, watermen, and other artiſts, for ſerving the nobility.

THEIR public ſtructures were extraordinary great; where they very artificially laid ſtones of a ſurprizing magnitude; which was done by perſeverance of labour, and multitude of people: for there was one principal guaca, or temple, in every province: beſides ſome that were univerſal for all the dominions of the incas, particularly two which were much more magnificent than the reſt; the one being at *Pachacama*, about 12 miles from *Lima*; and the other at *Cuſco*, called the temple of *Pachiamac*, where was the idol of the ſun all of pure gold, richly ornamented with jewels.

SECTION III.

The invaſion of Peru *by the* Spaniards, *under the command of* Pizarro *and* Almagro. *The ſeizure and death of the inca* Atabalippa; *with the reduction of his empire. The civil diſſentions between* Pizarro *and* Almagro; *the deſtruction of both; and the other civil commotions between the* Spaniards. *An account of the preſent ſituation of the* Peruvian Indians, *and of the* Spaniards *eſtabliſhed among them: with a conciſe view of their trade and navigation.*

VASCO NUNEZ DE BILBOA was the firſt *European*, who diſcovered the northern limits of *Peru*; for which, his Catholic majeſty conſtituted him adelantado of the lands and iſlands he ſhould diſcover in thoſe ſeas: though he was prevented from compleating his expedition by the envy and ambition of *Peter Arias*, then governor of *Terra Firma* *; who, intending to reap the benefit of the diſcovery made by *Nunez*, employed ſeveral pilots, and adventurers, to purſue the ſame track, and plant colonies in *Peru*: but the coaſting voyage from the bay of *Panama*, to this country, was ſo extremely difficult and hazardous, before they were acquainted with the winds and currents, that all his people were diſcouraged from proſecuting the diſcovery of that country; and reported that the voyage was impracticable, or rather impoſſible; becauſe the winds and currents ſet directly oppoſite to

* See this Volume p. 133.

to thoſe that ſailed from north to ſouth *America*. Whereupon, *Arias* deſpaired of ſurmounting the difficulties that had been repreſented to him, and deſiſted from the enterprize: he alſo abandoned the town of old *St. Mary*'s, on the gulph of *Darien*, and built another town on the bay of *Panama*, which bears the ſame name; from whence he purſued his conqueſts to the north and weſt, in the provinces of *Veragua* and *Coſta Rica*.

When *Arias* had entirely relinquiſhed the expedition to *Peru*, it was undertaken by *Francis Pizarro*, *Diego de Almagro*, and *Ferdinand de Lugne*, or *Luque*; who then reſided in the new town of *Panama*, and obtained permiſſion from *Arias* to attempt the farther diſcovery and conqueſt of *Peru*, at their own expence; which, in a great meaſure, they accompliſhed; but never enjoyed the fruits of their labours, on account of their inteſtine diſſentions; each of them being inſpired with an ambition of acquiring the ſole dominion of thoſe countries, to the excluſion of their fellow adventurers.

FRANCIS PIZARRO was a native of *Truxillo*, in the province of *Eſtramadura*, in *Spain*; and of a mean extraction. He firſt ſerved in the wars in the iſlands of *Hiſpaniola* and *Cuba*; after which he accompanied *Alonſo de Ojeda*, to the gulph of *Darien*; where a colony was ſettled, and left under the care of *Pizarro*, who obtained great reputation by his prudence in preſerving the coloniſts from deſtruction. He afterwards attended *Nunez* in his expedition to the *South-Sea*, and was employed by that general in ſubduing the province of *Veragua*: in which expeditions he acquired the

reputation of an excellent commander, and amaſſed a very competent fortune; but, as he wanted to accumulate an addition of wealth, and notwithſtanding he was upwards of fifty years of age, he chearfully entered upon the further diſcovery of theſe unknown regions. *Almagro* and *Lugne*, were alſo natives of *Spain*: but the former was of an obſcure original, and the latter was an eccleſiaſtic: though both of them had obtained ſuch plentiful fortunes, as to enable them to aſſociate themſelves with *Pizarro* in the expedition: for which purpoſe, they entered into articles never to abandon each other, till they had made a conqueſt of *Peru*; and ſolemnly took their oath, in public, for the confirmation of their agreement.

PIZARRO was to command the firſt party that went upon the diſcovery; and *Almagro* was to carry him the neceſſary reinforcements; while *Lugne* was to remain at *Panama*, for laying in ammunition and proviſions to ſupport the enterprize: but whatever gold, ſilver, precious ſtones, or other effects, ſhould be acquired, after payment of the charges, and the fifths to his Catholic majeſty, were to be equally divided among the adventurers.

PIZARRO ſet ſail from *Panama*, about the middle of *November*, 1525; having only one ſhip, with eighty men, and four horſes: but, while he was ſuffering great hardſhips on the coaſt of *Popayan*, he was joined by *Almagro*, with two ſhips, and upwards of ſixty men; when they landed, and had ſome ſkirmiſhes with the natives, wherein *Almagro* loſt an eye. The *Spaniards* were in ſo miſerable a condition, that they privately ſent a complaint to the governor of *Panama*, and deſired him

to

to recal *Pizarro* from the expedition: upon which, a commiſſary was ſent to make an enquiry into the nature of this complaint, and *Pizarro* was deſerted by all his men, except thirteen, and a mulatto, who removed to the iſland of *Gorgona*, for the benefit of freſh water, till *Almagro* brought them a few volunteers; after which, they proceeded to the ſouthward, paſſed the equator, and came to an anchor in the bay of *Guiaquil*. But it was with infinite labour and difficulty, that theſe adventurers proceeded ſo far to the ſouthward; being obliged to bear up both againſt winds and currents, that ſet almoſt continually againſt them on theſe ſhores; ſo as to make them ſpend two years in this voyage from the iſland of *Gorgona*, in three degrees of north latitude, to the bay of *Guiaquil*, in three degrees of ſouth latitude: though the ſame voyage may be performed in leſs than a month, now the *Spaniards* are acquainted with the winds, currents, and ſeaſons, upon the coaſts of *Peru* and *Popayan*.

While *Pizarro* and *Almagro* lay in the bay of *Guiaquil*, they took ſeveral great floats, or barklogs, with armed *Indians* on board; who acquainted them with the riches and fertility of *Peru*. *Pizarro* was ſoon convinced of the truth of this relation, by ſending ſome of his men aſhore, who were civilly received by the *Indians*: after which, he ran farther down the coaſt, to the latitude of ſeven degrees ſouth, where *Truxillo* was afterwards founded, and diſcovered a very fruitful country: but his men grew uneaſy, and prevailed upon him to return to *Panama*, about the latter end of the year 1527, to make preparations for the entire

reduction of *Peru*; carrying with him ſpecimens of the wealth that abounded there, with ſome of the natives, and *Peruvian* cattle. However, though *Pizarro* had ſo happily ſucceeded in this diſcovery, and though many volunteers offered him their ſervice, the governor of *Panama* oppoſed their going out upon another expedition: upon which, the three principal adventurers came to a reſolution, that *Pizarro* ſhould go over to *Spain*, to procure an authority and recruits equal to ſo great an undertaking; but, particularly, that he ſhould ſolicit for himſelf the title of governor; for *Almagro*, that of adelantado; and for *Lugne*, the protectorſhip of the *Peruvians*, as alſo the firſt biſhopric in that country.

PIZARRO accordingly ſet ſail, arrived in *Spain*, and immediately reſorted to the court of the emperor *Charles* V. which was then at *Toledo*; where he met with a very gracious reception, on preſenting his imperial majeſty with ſome *Peruvians*, in their proper habits, a few *Peruvian* ſheep, with ſeveral gold and ſilver veſſels, and utenſils of the faſhion of that country. His overtures were recommended by the emperor to the council of the *Indies*; upon whoſe report, *Pizarro* was authorized to proceed in the conqueſt of *Peru*, for two hundred leagues to the ſouthward of *Tumbez*, which lies at the bottom of the bay of *Guiaquil*, in three degrees of ſouth latitude. He alſo procured the title of governor and captain-general, to be conferred on him during life; with the offices of adelantado, or lord-lieutenant; and of alguazil major, or chief juſtice: being empowered to erect four caſtles in *Peru*, where he thought proper; the government

and

and inheritance of which he was to retain, to him, and his poſterity. He got *Lugne* recommended to the pope, to be made biſhop of *Tumbez*, and conſtituted protector-general of the *Peruvians*. *Almagro* was appointed governor of *Tumbez*; and a twentieth part of all the revenues of the country, when conquered, was to go to *Pizarro* and *Almagro*; two thirds being for the former, and one for the latter.

THESE commiſſions and powers were executed at *Toledo*, on the 26th of *July*, 1528; and ſix dominican friars were ordered to accompany *Pizarro*, as miſſionaries, to aſſiſt in the converſion of the *Peruvians*. After ſpending ſome months at his native town of *Truxillo*, in raiſing men, and making proviſions for his voyage, *Francis Pizarro* embarked at *Seville*, in *January* 1530, with his brothers *Ferdinand*, *John*, and *Gonzalo*; as alſo with *Francis Martin de Alcantara*, his brother by the mother's ſide. They arrived ſafe at *Nombre de Dios*, on the coaſt of *Terra Firma*, with one hundred and twenty-five *Spaniſh* ſoldiers; where *Francis Pizarro* was met by his co-adventurers *Lugne*, and *Almagro*; the latter of whom complained, that *Pizarro* had ſollicited all the power for himſelf, and was ſo much diſguſted, that he refuſed to aſſiſt in the intended expedition, till *Pizarro* promiſed to relinquiſh the title of adelantado, and to give him an equal ſhare in whatever they ſhould acquire: upon which conceſſions, *Almagro* promiſed to aſſiſt him as formerly; but there was little ſincerity in this reconciliation.

THEY proceeded to *Panama*, where *Pizarro* embarked in three ſhips, with one hundred and eighty

five

five ſoldiers, and thirty-ſeven horſes; taking with them a conſiderable number of targets, made of pike-ſtaves, which were found to be very ſerviceable in thoſe wars. After five days, they arrived at the bay of *St. Matthew*, where a council was held; wherein it was agreed, that the horſes ſhould be landed, and move along the ſhore; while the ſhips kept near the coaſt. Thoſe that landed had a very difficult march, as they were ſtopt by many rivers and moraſſes; but they met with a large town, called *Quaque*, ſituated in the mountains, which they plundered, and made a conſiderable booty, particularly of emeralds. Upon this unexpected act of hoſtility, the *Indians* fled from the ſea-coaſt up into the country; and *Pizarro* was afterwards ſo much diſtreſſed for want of proviſions, as to loſe ſeveral of his men: which obliged him to ſend away two ſhips to *Panama*, and one to *Nicaragua*, with the treaſure that had been taken from the *Indians*, to bring a reinforcement of men and horſes; giving his friends an account of the wealth of the country; and that, as it was ſubject to one ſovereign, it would be eaſily conquered.

In the mean time, the *Indians* ſent advice of the invaſion and behaviour of the *Spaniards*, to the governors appointed by the inca; who diſpatched the intelligence to *Cuſco*, where it was received with aſtoniſhment: while the *Spaniards*, with infinite labour, marched as far as *Tumbez*, in the bay of *Guiaquil*; where they were informed, that the *Peruvians* were engaged in a civil war, on account of the diſſentions between the inca *Guaſcar*, and his brother *Atabalippa*. In this war, the inhabitants of the vale of *Tumbez* adhered to the inca; and

thoſe

thoſe of the iſle of *Puna* aſſiſted *Atabalippa*: but, as *Pizarro* found himſelf unable, at this time, to attempt the reduction of the whole empire; and, as he conceived *Tumbez* to be the gate of *Peru*, where a ſettlement was to be made for facilitating his enterprize, he took part with the *Tumbezenes*, by joining his forces with theirs, and invading the iſland of *Puna*, which became an eaſy conqueſt; though it was defended by twelve thouſand of the inhabitants; whoſe caziques were made priſoners, and delivered into the hands of the *Tumbezenes*, who immediately cut off their heads.

ATABALIPPA had aſſumed the tuft, or taſſel, which was the badge of royal dignity; and had information of all the proceedings of the *Spaniards*, whoſe number he thought inconſiderable, and bent all his forces againſt the inca *Guaſcar*, before he would undertake the expulſion of the new invaders: but *Pizarro* had received a reinforcement from *Panama*; and was joined by *Ferdinand de Soto*, with ſome adventurers from *Nicaragua*; which encouraged him to think of invading the continent. Accordingly, *Pizarro* tranſported his troops to *Tumbez*, where his landing was unexpectedly oppoſed by the natives, whom he had ſo lately aſſiſted in the reduction of *Puna*: but theſe were a part of the forces of *Atabalippa*, who had defeated the emperor, and ſent a detachment to oppoſe the invaſion of the *Spaniards*. However, *Pizarro* landed his forces, and made ſo great a ſlaughter among the *Indians*, that he obliged them to abandon the whole valley of *Tumbez*; leaving behind them all the gold and ſilver plates, emeralds, pearls, and other

other rich ſpoils, which lay heaped up in the temple of the ſun, and the palace of the emperor.

THE *Spaniards* were now informed by ſome *Indians* of the prodigious wealth of *Cuſco*, *Bilcas*, and *Pachacama*: as alſo that *Atabalippa*, and his whole court, were in the greateſt conſternation at what the fugitives had related of the *Spaniſh* artillery and horſes; to which animals their fears had added wings; and they concluded, that the invaders were either gods or devils, againſt whom it was impoſſible for any human force to make reſiſtance. *Pizarro* reſolved to take advantage of the terror he had ſpread among the *Indians*, and proceed immediately againſt *Atabalippa*, while he continued under that deluſion: but he firſt found it neceſſary to erect the fortreſs, and build the city of *St. Michael*, on the ſea-coaſt, in the vale of *Tangarala*, to ſecure footing in the country, and for the eſtabliſhment of a colony; which was the firſt *Spaniſh* ſettlement in *Peru*, where *Pizarro* continued till his people had made ſome farther diſcoveries. He acquainted the *Indians*, that he was come in the name of the great king of *Spain*, to relieve the oppreſſed, and protect the injured; which had the intended effect: for the emperor *Guaſcar* was depoſed, and impriſoned, by *Atabalippa*; who ſo cruelly treated the adherents of his brother, that they immediately ſent an embaſſy to *Pizarro*, to deſire his aſſiſtance in delivering their prince from his captivity, and reſtoring him to the throne of his anceſtors: to whom the *Spaniſh* general returned a favourable anſwer. But *Atabalippa* apprehended he ſhould ſoon be expelled from the throne he had uſurped, if the *Spaniards* aſſiſted his brother; and therefore,

therefore, endeavoured to gain the favour of *Pizarro*, by ſending a meſſenger to excuſe the hoſtilities his forces had committed at *Tumbez*: promiſing to make any ſatisfaction he ſhould demand, and aſſuring him he was ready to ſubmit to the commands of that great prince who ſent him upon this expedition.

PIZARRO was well acquainted with the diſpoſition of the *Indians*, and knew that this embaſſador was ſent only as a ſpy: which made him determine to loſe no time in meeting *Atabalippa*, who was encamped at *Caxamalca*, about twelve long days journey from *St. Michael de Puira*. The *Spaniards* left this town on the 4th of *September*, 1532; and advanced by ſlow marches, with a train of artillery drawn by the *Indians* preſſed into their ſervice: but, as *Pizarro* perceived ſome of his men were intimidated at the accounts they had received of the numerous army commanded by *Atabalippa*, he publiſhed a proclamation that any man, who was unwilling to proceed upon the expedition, was at liberty to return to *St. Michael*, and continue there with the garriſon; which offer was embraced by nine perſons: ſo that thoſe left to carry on the enterprize amounted to ſixty-two horſe, and one hundred and ſix foot, among whom were twenty croſs-bow men, who had a particular captain aſſigned them.

THIS reſolution gained *Pizarro* a great reputation, as he repoſed more confidence in the bravery of a few, than in the appearance of a greater number; which is of the utmoſt conſequence for entering upon difficult enterprizes. He continued his march, with all imaginable circumſpection, through

through a populous and well inhabited country, without receiving any interruption from the *Indians*: but he had intelligence that *Atabalippa* had 50,000 men at *Caxamalca*, where he was determined to oppoſe the march of the *Spaniards*: though he was ſo far from ſuch a deſign, that he ſent a ſolemn embaſſy to *Pizarro*, by his brother *Autachy*; together with rich preſents of gold, ſilver, emeralds, *Peruvian* ſheep and goats, and whatever the country afforded.

WHEN *Autachy* was admitted to the preſence of *Pizarro*, he acquainted him, that he was ſent by the inca *Atabalippa* to welcome him, and the reſt of the ſons of their common god and father, the ſun, into that empire: aſſuring him that the emperor was impatient to ſee his kindred, whom he underſtood were of heavenly extraction, and to whom he promiſed all obedience. *Pizarro* anſwered, that the *Spaniards* were authorized by their high prieſt, the pope, to convert the *Peruvians* from their idolatry, to the chriſtian religion: as alſo, that the great emperor of the chriſtians, *Charles* V. had empowered them to enter into a league of perpetual peace and amity with the inca; and that they were ordered to offer no manner of violence to him, or his ſubjects, if theſe overtures were accepted. The whole of this conference was interpreted by *Philip*, a young *Peruvian*, in the ſervice of *Pizarro*, who had inſtructed him in the *Spaniſh* language: after which, the embaſſador returned to *Atabalippa*; and *Pizarro* entered the town of *Caxamalca*, without any oppoſition: from whence he ſent *Ferdinand de Soto*, to return the compliment, as his embaſſador

to

to the inca, attended by thirty horſe, and *Philip* the interpreter. *Atabalippa* was then at one of his palaces in the neighbourhood of *Caxamalca*; where the *Spaniards* were conducted to him by a detachment of his army, and found him ſeated on a chair of gold, ſurrounded by his courtiers, and principal officers. The *Spaniards* had a very favourable reception, and informed the inca that their general had entered *Caxamalca*, where he was deſirous of an interview with his highneſs, and to conclude a treaty of amity: to which the inca conſented; and diſmiſſed the *Spaniards* with large preſents of gold and ſilver.

HERRERA ſays, that *Atabalippa* informed the embaſſador, that he would viſit *Pizarro*, at the head of his army: but deſired that the *Spaniards* would not be concerned, or uneaſy at it; as it was cuſtomary in this country. The ſame author relates, that *Soto* told his general, the army commanded by the inca, conſiſted of about fifty thouſand men; which relation intimidated the *Spaniards*; as each man had above two hundred and fifty enemies to encounter, if hoſtilities were committed: but that *Pizarro*, with his uſual intrepidity, aſſembled his ſoldiers, and expreſſed himſelf in ſuch a manner, with ſo much aſſurance of ſucceſs, and dependence on the divine protection, that they were all encouraged, and put on freſh reſolution; being commanded to be always in a readineſs to receive ſo great a prince, either as a friend, or as an enemy. *Herrera* would have it believed, that *Atabalippa* intended to deſtroy the *Spaniards*; and that he ordered *Yrruminavi*, one of his generals, to have five thouſand men in readineſs

readineſs with cords, to ſeize both men and horſes; that the *Indians* were directed how to behave themſelves; and had a ſort of armour made of palm-tree leaves, under their tunics, not eaſy to be cut with ſwords, or pierced with ſpears: that ſome had ſlings, and pouches full of ſtones; while others carried copper-clubs, with ſharp points concealed: ſo that nothing was to be ſeen among the troops that formed the van, which were about twelve thouſand; but the reſt that followed had their long ſpears, like *Spaniſh* pikes: the main body of the army conſiſted of about ſeventy thouſand men, excluſive of the five thouſand which were provided with cords; and the rear was cloſed by about thirty thouſand ſervants, with an infinite multitude of women; who marched very ſlowly, with their inca at their head, carried on his richeſt bier by his principal officers. But there is no certainty that *Atabalippa* intended this treachery to the *Spaniards*: though it is evident that *Pizarro* received him in a very different manner from what the inca expected: for the *Spaniſh* general choſe out a large ſquare in *Caxamalca*, for this interview, ſurrounded by a wall, in which there were only two gates; and ordered his horſe to draw up in three diviſions, behind ſome ruinous buildings, out of view. He then planted his artillery, ſo as to make the greateſt execution; and he poſted himſelf, at the head of his infantry, on an eminence, in the middle of the ſquare, where he propoſed to meet *Atabalippa*; commanding his men, to ſhut the gates as ſoon as ſeven or eight thouſand of the *Indians* were entered the ſquare, and to ſuffer no more to come in;

in; but to be ready to fall on, when he gave the ſignal.

ATABALIPPA ſeemed to entertain ſome ſuſpicion of the treachery that was intended him by *Pizarro*, and halted about three miles from *Caxamalca*, where he ordered his generals to encamp: but *Pizarro* ſent ſeveral meſſengers, with preſſing invitations for him to haſten his march, and enter the town; with which the inca complied, and put himſelf into the power of his enemies. As ſoon as *Atabalippa* was advanced to the eminence where the *Spaniſh* infantry was drawn up, *Pizarro* ſent father *Vincent Valverde* to meet him, and ſummon him to ſubmit himſelf, with his dominions, to the pope and the emperor: though he was determined to plunder and maſſacre the *Peruvians*, before he knew what anſwer would be given the miſſionary; on whoſe return from the conference, *Pizarro* lifted up a white cloth, which was the appointed ſignal for executing the orders he had given. The great guns were inſtantly fired among the thickeſt of the *Indians*, and the muſketeers made a terrible diſcharge; the drums beat, the trumpets ſounded, and the horſe fell in three ſeveral ways among an unſuſpecting, unreſiſting people, unwarily drawn into an ambuſcade, and devoted to deſtruction. About five thouſand *Indians* were maſſacred, without making the leaſt oppoſition; and *Pizarro*, with fifteen choſen men, marched up to the chair on which *Atabalippa* was carried; where he ſlew thoſe that ſupported it, ſeized the inca, and took him priſoner: after this, the *Peruvians* fled, and, in their flight, broke down

part of the wall in the ſquare, whereby ſome of them eſcaped from the fury of their enemies.

ACCORDING to *De la Vega*, the inoffenſive *Peruvians*, were commanded by their inca to make no reſiſtance againſt the *Spaniards*; otherwiſe they would not have permitted a hundred and ſixty men, whom they were able to have ſubdued with ſtones, to commit ſuch unparallelled acts of inhumanity: for there was not one *Spaniard* either killed or wounded, except *Francis Pizarro* the general, who received a ſlight wound, by one of his own men, as he went to ſeize on *Atabalippa*. But *Lopez de Gomara* obſerves, that, probably, the ſurprize was ſo ſudden, and the terror ſo great, occaſioned by the ſound of the trumpets, the diſploſion of the artillery, the firing of the ſmall arms, the ruſhing of the horſe upon them, and the clattering of the *Spaniſh* armour, that the *Indians* were in ſuch confuſion, as to be incapable of making any oppoſition.

PIZARRO conveyed *Atabalippa* to his own quarters, where he directed the plunder to be brought, which was immenſely rich; conſiſting of large gold and ſilver veſſels and utenſils, fine garments of various colours, with jewels and ornaments belonging to the inca, the royal family, and the principal officers, ſeveral of whoſe ladies were taken priſoners; as alſo ſome of the mamaconas, or conſecrated virgins. This maſſacre of the *Indians* was made on the 3d of *May* 1533; though *Pizarro* celebrated it with a feſtival, as if it had been a glorious victory. The next day, he ſent out a detachment to plunder the incas camp, where he met with another rich booty; notwithſtanding

ſtanding the *Peruvian* generals had conveyed away as much gold and ſilver, as three thouſand men could carry, before the *Spaniards* arrived there: but, as an inducement for the *Indians* to conceal none of their treaſures, *Pizarro* publiſhed a proclamation that *Atabalippa* was alive, and that they were at liberty to give him their attendance. This occaſioned ſeveral of the *Indian* generals, and principal officers, to return to *Caxamalca*, and wait upon their captive ſovereign; who was kept in fetters, though attended by his women in the ſame manner he uſed to be before this misfortune; and, ſoon after it happened, advice was brought him of the taking of his brother *Guaſcar* priſoner; at which *Atabalippa* ſmiled, ſaying, he laughed at the viciſſitude of fortune, ſince he was the ſame day victorious, and vanquiſhed.

ATABALIPPA was very deſirous of obtaining his liberty; and, having obſerved the inſatiable avarice of the *Spaniards* for gold and ſilver, he promiſed to give them ten thouſand bars of gold for his ranſom; with as much ſilver, in ſeveral ſorts of veſſels, as would fill a great room in the caſtle of *Caxamalca*; beſides many valuable jewels, and his friendſhip upon all occaſions. *Pizarro* promiſed the inca his liberty, upon delivering of the treaſure: in conſequence of which, *Atabalippa* ſent orders to the governors of *Cuſco*, and his other principal cities, to bring a ſufficient quantity of gold and ſilver for his ranſom. But, at this time, *Almagro* arrived in *Peru*, from *Panama*, with about 200 men, and proceeded to join *Pizarro* at *Caxamalca*: while ſome *Spaniards* wen to *Cuſco*, to expedite the meſſengers which *Atabalippa*

ſent for his ranſom, and in their way paſſed through the town where *Guaſcar* was priſoner, who informed them that he could provide them more treaſure than *Atabalippa*, which coſt him his life; for the latter imagined the avarice of the *Spaniards* would make them accept of any propoſals from *Guaſcar*, and got him privately aſſaſſinated.

THE treaſure for the ranſom of *Atabalippa* was brought to *Caxamalca*; when he demanded to be ſet at liberty; which he was unable to procure, through a controverſy that aroſe between the *Spaniards* lately arrived under *Almagro*, and thoſe who were there before under *Pizarro*, about the diſtribution of the plunder and ſpoils: but the *Spaniſh* generals appeaſed this mutiny by diſtributing one hundred thouſand ducats among the men under *Almagro*: a fifth was then deducted for his Catholic majeſty; and the remainder divided by *Pizarro*, among the officers and ſoldiers, in ſuch proportion as he thought due to their merit, whoſe ſhares amounted in the whole to upwards of one million, five hundred thouſand pieces of eight, or about 338,000*l.* ſterling; which, conſidering the value of gold and ſilver at that time, was more than equivalent to twelve times the ſame ſum at preſent.

THOUGH *Atabalippa* had paid a prodigious treaſure for his liberty, *Pizarro* was determined to put him to death: however, to juſtify his conduct in this proceeding, he cauſed a formal proceſs to be drawn up againſt him, conſiſting of eight articles; alledging that he had uſurped the throne from his brother *Guaſcar*, whom he had cauſed to be murdered; that he was an idolater, and offered human ſacrifices to his deities; that he

he kept many concubines, raiſed unjuſt wars, and exacted heavy taxes; but, above all, that he incited the *Indians* to rebel, and oppoſe the *Spaniards*, ſince he had been their priſoner. The inca was arraigned before *Pizarro* and *Almagro*, who ſat as his judges; *Philip* the *Peruvian*, being interpreter, whom the *Spaniards* admit was an enemy to *Atabalippa*. The laſt charge was principally inſiſted upon, which the unfortunate inca abſolutely denied; complaining of the treachery of *Pizarro*, who, after he had extorted ſuch a ranſom from him, had broke his faith, and was ungenerouſly proceeding to take away his life: but, as he had never offended the *Spaniards*, and as they could not put him to death without the greateſt injuſtice, he deſired to be ſent over to *Spain*, and tried before the emperor. The remonſtrances of this unhappy monarch were vain and ineffectual; for he was devoted to deſtruction like a ſlave: his judges making no difficulty to condemn him to be burnt; and father *Vincent Valverde*, of approving the ſentence under his hand, that it might give the greater ſatisfaction to the court of *Spain*. When death was pronounced againſt the royal victim, he bitterly exclaimed againſt the injuſtice of the ſentence; demanding what he, his wives, or his children had done, to be ſo cruelly treated? The judges were inexorable; though ſeveral *Spaniards* proteſted againſt theſe proceedings, and were ready to mutiny to ſave the inca from being thus ignobly deſtroyed; who, notwithſtanding, was led to execution in the night; when the friar endeavoured to perſuade him to die a chriſtian, which the *Spaniards* aſſert the inca conſented to, upon condition

that he ſhould be ſtrangled, inſtead of being burnt: ſo that he was accordingly ſtrangled, after receiving abſolution from the friar. Thus *Pizarro*, who, it is ſaid, could neither write or read, erected a tribunal for the trial of a ſovereign prince, whom he had treacherouſly taken priſoner, and now barbarouſly put to death under colour of law, which was an aggravation of the offence; becauſe *Pizarro* had no better authority to judge and condemn this prince, or even his ſubjects, than pirates and banditti have to take away the lives of their unhappy captives: but the death of *Atabalippa* was afterwards revenged on his two judges, who both periſhed by their own diſſentions; *Almagro* being formally condemned to die by *Pizarro*, who was afterwards aſſaſſinated by the ſon of the former.

PIZARRO thought fit to treat the corps of *Atabalippa* with the reſpect due to a ſovereign prince; whoſe funeral he celebrated with great ſolemnity: but he ſoon diſcovered how deteſtable this murder rendered him to the *Peruvians*, who ſaid their former incas were happy to leave the world without the knowledge of ſuch cruel people; and, therefore, ſome of the *Indian* generals prepared to revenge the death of their emperor: while others conveyed his body away privately to *Cuſco*, where the *Spaniards* were never able to find it; though ſufficient endeavours were uſed, for the ſake of the treaſure which the lamenting *Indians* buried with their unhappy monarch. The *Peruvians* began to bear an implacable averſion to the *Spaniards*, who looked upon their naked enemies with contempt: however, *Pizarro* intended to ſhew that it was not his reſolution entirely to overturn

overturn the *Peruvian* empire; for which purpoſe, he enquired of the *Orejones*, who was the worthieſt perſon to be ſet upon the throne? and they propoſed the ſon of *Atabalippa*, called *Toparpa*, whom *Pizarro* cauſed to be proclaimed: upon which, the *Peruvians* ſacrificed a ſpotleſs lamb, and uſed the other ceremonies practiſed on the like occaſion; though not with ſuch ſolemnity as was uſed at *Cuſco*. But the two factions of the *Peruvian* generals immediately united againſt the *Spaniards*, and elected *Huana Capac*, the brother and heir of *Guaſcar*, for their emperor: which brought *Pizarro* to the reſolution of poſſeſſing himſelf of the capital city of *Cuſco*; where he began his march with all his forces, conſiſting of about four hundred *Spaniards*, beſides confederate *Indians*.

ATAUCHI, the brother of *Atabalippa*, ſurprized the *Spaniards* upon their march to *Cuſco*, killing ſome of them, and making ſeveral priſoners: however, *Pizarro* continued his march, being attacked by many parties of *Indians*, at ſome difficult paſſes in the mountains: but the new inca *Toparpa* died in the march, and his general *Chialiquichiama* was burnt, by order of *Pizarro*, in the vale of *Xaquixaguana*, on a charge of holding a treacherous correſpondence with *Quizquiz*, who commanded the army of the new inca elected by the *Peruvians*; for *Pizarro* was jealous of the popularity of *Chialiquichiama*, who had obtained five victories for *Atabalippa*; and the *Indians* ſaid, that if he had been at *Caxamalca*, when the inca was taken priſoner, the *Spaniards* would not have ſucceeded in their enterprize. Several thouſands of *Indians* were deſtroyed in theſe engagements, which convinced

them, that they were incapable of reſiſting the artillery and horſes of their enemies: therefore, they fled to their capital city, which was ſoon abandoned by its numerous inhabitants, who fled, in the utmoſt conſternation, to the woods and mountains; leaving the *Spaniards* to enter their metropolis, without any oppoſition, in the month of *October*, 1534; where they found a prodigious booty; notwithſtanding the citizens had ſufficient time to remove the greateſt part of their treaſure, and had put fire to ſome parts of the city, which was ſoon extinguiſhed by the *Spaniards*.

PIZARRO permitted his men to plunder; but with a reſtriction that all ſhould be divided in common, after a fifth was deducted for his Catholic majeſty. They found ſuch quantities of gold and ſilver, made into veſſels, bars, or other kinds of ornaments, that was aſtoniſhing; for, when the fifth was taken out for the king, the treaſure was divided into four hundred and eighty parts, each of which amounted to four thouſand pieces of eight, being 344,000 *l.* ſterling in the whole, excluſive of the fifth for the king: for the temples of the ſun and *Curacanche* were very magnificent; beſides which, there was about four hundred more, and ſeveral royal palaces full of treaſure.

PIZARRO took poſſeſſion of the magnificent city of *Cuſco*, with the greateſt ſolemnity, for his Catholic majeſty; eſtabliſhing a council, and forming a colony. *Quizquiz*, and ſome other *Peruvian* generals, were exaſperated to ſee the *Spaniards* in poſſeſſion of their imperial city, and aſſembled a numerous army, with which they agreed to attack their enemy; lamenting their deplorable fate, and com-

complaining of their gods, who had permitted their religion, temples, and all things ſacred to be overthrown; their eſtates ruined, themſelves baniſhed, their wives and children made captives, and ſuch multitudes of men to be ſlain: they ſighed for their incas; but upbraided the memories of *Guaſcar* and *Atabalippa*; by whoſe diſſentions a few invaders had an opportunity of poſſeſſing themſelves of ſo extenſive and populous an empire. The *Indians* made two attacks upon the *Spaniards*, who marched out of *Cuſco* to meet them, and both times defeated them; after which, the *Peruvian* generals retreated into the province of *Quito*; and *Pizarro* publiſhed a proclamation to invite the inhabitants of *Cuſco* to return to their houſes. Many of the *Indians* accepted this invitation, and returned to the city, with the inca *Manco Capac*, the ſon of *Huana Capac*, whom *Pizarro* cauſed to be crowned, and inveſted with the imperial dignity, by binding the royal wreathe, or coronet, about his head, and proclaiming him inca in the ſame manner his predeceſſors were inaugurated.

QUIZQUIZ and *Yrruminavi*, took poſſeſſion of *Quito*; which obliged *Pizarro* to ſend a detachment there, under the command of *Sebaſtian Belalcazar*, who defeated the *Indians*, took their capital city, and would have brought the whole province into ſubjection, if he had not been interrupted by the arrival of a large body of *Spaniards* from *Mexico*, under the command of Don *Pedro de Alvarado*, who landed eight hundred men in *Peru*; which alarmed *Pizarro* and *Almagro*, who apprehended his intention was to diſpoſſeſs them both of their new acquiſitions.

AL-

ALVARADO was one of the principal officers that accompanied *Cortez* in the conqueſt of *Mexico*, and had obtained the government of the province of *Guatimala*, from whence he ſet ſail in 1535, with the hopes of acquiring great quantities of gold and ſilver in *Peru*: he landed at cape *St. Francis*, one degree north of the equator; and loſt ſeveral of his men in marching over bogs and mountains which were almoſt impaſſable. *Almagro* was ſent by *Pizarro* to reinforce *Belalcazar*, and oppoſe *Alvarado*: but all hoſtilities were prevented by a conference between *Almagro* and *Alvarado*, wherein it was agreed, "That *Pizarro* "ſhould pay the latter a hundred thouſand pieces "of eight, or about 17,900 *l.* ſterling: that ſuch "of the officers and ſoldiers who came with *Al*"*varado*, as deſired it, ſhould ſerve under *Pi*"*zarro* in *Peru*; and that *Alvarado* ſhould return "to his government of *Guatimala*:" which was accordingly put into execution, after an interview between *Pizarro* and *Alvarado*.

THE troops left by *Alvarado* made the *Peruvians* deſpair of emancipating themſelves from the *Spaniards*, to whom they generally ſubmitted as their conquerors. *Pizarro* then employed himſelf in building towns, and eſtabliſhing colonies, on the coaſt; particularly, he built the cities of *Lima*, and *Truxillo*; dividing the country about them among his officers and ſoldiers, together with the native *Indians* upon thoſe lands, who held what the *Spaniards* were pleaſed to allow them, by the baſeſt tenures of villenage; being obliged to manure and cultivate their lands, carry burthens like horſes, and perform ſuch other ſervile offices, in

their

their fields and houſes, as rendered their condition no better than an abſolute ſlavery; for they were transferred with the lands to any purchaſer, obliged to work in the mines, fiſh for pearls, and to undergo ſuch rigorous labour, that many thouſands of them periſhed, whereby the country in a few years was almoſt depopulated.

THE court of *Spain* received the treaſures ſent by *Pizarro* for his Catholic majeſty, who conferred the title of marquis upon that general; and honoured *Almagro* with the title of marſhal of *Peru*, as alſo with the government of that part of the country which extended ſix hundred miles to the ſouthward of the government aſſigned to the marquis *Pizarro*. Upon this intelligence, *Almagro* aſſumed the title of governor of *Cuſco*, and acted no more in ſubordination to the marquis; whoſe brothers entered into a formal war againſt *Almagro*, which was ſoon terminated by the preſence of the marquis *, who afterwards ſent the marſhal on an expedition to *Chili*; wherein he was very ſucceſsful: but returned to claim his right to the government of *Cuſco*, which the marquis *Pizarro* had conferred upon his brother *Ferdinand*.

THE inca *Manca Capac* was confined like a priſoner by the *Spaniards*, in the caſtle of *Cuſco*, from whence he eſcaped, and raiſed up a general inſurrection among the *Indians*, who aſſembled in three armies, to cut off *Almagro* in *Chili*, inveſt *Lima*, and beſiege *Cuſco*; the latter of which was undertaken by the inca in perſon, at the head of two hundred thouſand men: but, though the inca took the caſtle of *Cuſco*, he was obliged to abandon it.

* See this Volume p. 172.

it by the fury of the *Spaniſh* artillery, which deſtroyed ſeveral thouſands of *Indians*, and deterred them from re-attempting the ſiege. Another party undertook the ſiege of *Lima*; but were equally unſucceſsful: however, they deſtroyed ſeveral detachments of *Spaniards*, and continued in arms for ſeveral years, before they were entirely ſuppreſſed, which happened on the death of their inca, who had his brains daſhed out with a bowl by a *Spaniard*.

ALMAGRO took poſſeſſion of *Cuſco*, and defeated *Alvarado* who was ſent to diſpoſſeſs him by *Pizarro*: but *Pizarro* afterwards defeated *Almagro*, took him priſoner, and ordered him to be ſtrangled privately in priſon: though the ſon of *Almagro* ſoon afterwards aſſaſſinated the marquis in his palace, where he killed him, and his brother-in-law Don *Francis de Alcantara*.

THUS fell theſe two conquerors of *Peru*; who, with four hundred *Spaniards*, conquered four millions of *Indians*; whereby they obtained the poſſeſſion of the richeſt country in the world, lived in the ſtate of ſovereign princes, and were ſuperior in wealth to the richeſt monarchs of *Europe*: though it is obſerved, that both of them were of mean extraction, and had received no advantage of education; as alſo that they died, and were buried, with the ſame obſcurity in which they were born.

THE young *Almagro* was immediately proclaimed governor of *Peru*: but *Vaca de Caſtro*, arrived from *Spain*, with that title, defeated *Almagro*, and beheaded him; whereby his party became totally extirpated. The new governor endeavoured

voured to check the licentiouſneſs of the *Spaniards*, and to grant many indulgencies to the *Indians*; which offended his ſoldiers, ſo as to give *Gonzalo Pizarro* an opportunity of raiſing a mutiny, and of aſpiring to become the ſole ſovereign of the empire of *Peru*, without any dependence on the crown of *Spain*; in which he ſucceeded ſo far, as to make the *Spaniſh* miniſtry imagine, that he had uſurped the ſovereign authority over *Peru*, and would extend it all over *America*. Upon this occaſion, his Catholic majeſty ſent Don *Gaſca* over, with the title of preſident of the royal court; who arrived at *Panama*, on the 13th of *Auguſt* 1546, when he prevailed on *Hinojoſo*, who commanded the fleet kept there by *Pizarro*, to revolt, and declare for his majeſty; which was followed by the defection of ſeveral of the land forces. However, *Pizarro* was determined to defend his uſurpation, and muſtered nine hundred well armed veterans in *Lima* only; beſides the forces he had at *Cuſco*, *La Plata*, and other places; which he collected together, and in *October* 1547 defeated eight hundred men, commanded by Don *Centeno*, one of the royal generals: but, in *April* 1548, the preſident *Gaſca* began his march towards *Cuſco*, at the head of ſixteen hundred veteran *Spaniards*, with ten thouſand *Indians*, attended by a fine train of artillery; whom *Pizarro* marched againſt, and met near *Cuſco*; when his troops deſerted to the royaliſts, and *Pizarro* was obliged to ſurrender himſelf a priſoner; after which he was carried to *Cuſco*, and formally beheaded as a traitor: though all his treaſon, and other faults, were buried in his grave; for the

next

next generation remembered only his conqueſts, heroic actions, and noble behaviour at the place of execution.

THE death of *Gonzalo Pizarro* was far from terminating the diſſentions among the *Spaniards* of *Peru*; which obliged *Gaſca* to divide his forces, and ſend ſome of them upon other expeditions; as, particularly Don *Pedro Baldivia*, to finiſh the conqueſt * of *Chili*: his Catholic majeſty publiſhed an order, that the *Indians* ſhould be treated as freemen, and paid for their labour in the mines; which occaſioned ſeveral inſurrections, wherein ſome of the vice-roys, who ſucceeded *Gaſca*, were murdered. The principal revolt was conducted by *Hernandez Giron*, who had a conſiderable army; with which he at firſt defeated the royaliſts; but was afterwards taken priſoner, and beheaded at *Lima*, as a traitor; which put an end to the rebellion; and from this time, being the month of *November* 1554, the *Spaniards* may be properly ſaid to have been in the peaceable poſſeſſion of *Peru*: though the ſubduing the firſt turbulent adventurers, who endeavoured to render themſelves independant of the crown of *Spain*, proved a much more difficult taſk, than the conqueſt of the defenceleſs *Indians*.

FREZIER reports, that, notwithſtanding the wars, and the deſtruction of the *Indians*, by the *Spaniards*, there is ſtill a family of the race of the incas living at *Lima*, whoſe chief is acknowledged by the king of *Spain*, as a deſcendant of the emperors of *Peru*; and, as ſuch, his Catholic majeſty gives him the title of couſin; ordering the vice-roy, at his entering into *Lima*, to pay him

* See this Volume p. 176.

him a ſort of publick homage: thus, at every change of a vice-roy, they ſtill externally honour the memory of the ſovereignty of that emperor, whom they have unjuſtly deprived of his dominions. The love which the *Indians* retain for their native monarchs, makes them ſtill ſigh for thoſe times, of which they know nothing but what they have been told by their anceſtors. The chriſtian religion, which they have been obliged to embrace, has not yet taken deep root in their hearts, moſt of them having a great inclination towards their antient idolatry: however, they are naturally docible, and capable of receiving good impreſſions, as to manners and religion, if they had good examples before their eyes; but they are treated with as much ſeverity by the clergy, as by the government.

THERE is no doubt but theſe people, being drove to deſpair by the ſeverity of the *Spaniſh* domination, only wiſh for an opportunity to ſhake it off: becauſe, from time to time, they make ſome attempts at *Cuſco*, where they are the principal part of the inhabitants: but, as it is expreſsly forbidden them to carry arms, without a particular licence; and, as they have no courage like the *Chileſians*, the *Spaniards* know how to appeaſe them with threats, and to amuſe them with fair promiſes.

THE number of inhabitants in this great empire, which hiſtorians repreſent by millions, is conſiderably diminiſhed ſince the conqueſt by the *Spaniards*; whoſe works at the mines have principally contributed towards this depopulation: beſides, the cruelties of the corregidores, and curates, have

alſo

alſo obliged many to go and join the neighbouring *Indian* nations, that are unconquered; not being able any longer to endure the tyrannical dominion of the *Spaniards*.

As to the manners and cuſtoms of the creolians of *Peru*, or the *Spaniards* born in that country, *Frezier* obſerves, that, like the *Spaniards* of *Europe*, they value themſelves upon being the beſt chriſtians of all nations: they even pretend to diſtinguiſh betwixt themſelves and the *French* by that qualification; ſo that, among them, it is a very uſual way of ſpeaking, to ſay a chriſtian and a *Frenchman*, to ſignify a *Spaniard* and a *Frenchman*. But the *Spaniards* here have nothing of the exterior practice of the church diſcipline, by which they may merit that pre-eminence; and they are ſuperſtitious, even to a higher degree than the *Spaniards* of *Europe*; of which *Frezier* gives ſeveral inſtances. Beſides, they all live in a ſtate of preſumption as to their ſalvation, grounded on the protection of the virgin and the ſaints, which they imagine they merit by ſome brotherhood exerciſes, wherein the friars have aſſociated them; without making them ſenſible, that the prime devotion conſiſts in the reformation of the heart, and the practice of good manners.

BUT though the clergy ſhould with their mouths preach up chriſtian virtues, what fruit could they produce, whilſt they themſelves give ſuch ill examples? If their ſubject is upon modeſty and meekneſs? they are impudent in the higheſt degree, and moſt of them are generally armed with a dagger. Should the ſubject be poverty, and the contempt of riches? the moſt regular of them trade, and have

have their ſlaves of both ſexes; ſeveral church-men appearing in coloured cloaths, adorned with gold, under their uſual habit. Should it be humility? they are inſufferably proud: and ſhall they preach up the duty of continence, when the want of it is a general vice among them? However, *Frezier* ſays, that though the clergy, in general, have many vices; there are, nevertheleſs, ſome worthy and learned men in *Peru*: but, he adds, that virtue ſeems to be more common among the laity, than among the friars and clergy.

The creolians are generally timerous, and eaſy to be governed: though diſperſed and remote from their ſuperiors; they have a vivacity and diſpoſition for the ſciences; and imagine they muſt exceed the *European Spaniards*, whom, among themſelves, they call cavallos, that is, horſes, or brutes. In relation to commerce, they are as ſharp and underſtanding as the *Europeans*: but, being luxurious and indolent, the *Biſcayners*, and other *European Spaniards*, who are more laborious, grow rich ſooner.

It is true, the common people of *Peru* were vaſſals and ſlaves to their ſuperior lords, before the *Spaniards* conquered the country: but their princes treated them with the lenity of parents; and the *Spaniards* have exerciſed upon them all the ſeverity of tyrants. However, ſome of the poor *Indians* were benefited by this alteration of government; or, at leaſt, imagined themſelves to be ſo at firſt: for the *Spaniards* gave many of them their freedom, and made uſe of them in reducing the reſt of their countrymen to ſlavery: but, when the conqueſt was compleated, theſe *Indians* were not much bet-

ter reſpected than the others, till the kings of *Spain*, by their repeated edicts, compelled the adventurers and planters to treat the *Indians* as ſubjects, and not as ſlaves; ſince which time, the *Spaniards* have introduced great numbers of negroes to work in the mines, and perform other laborious ſervices: beſides, the horſes, oxen, and mules, that have been carried to *Peru*, have made it leſs neceſſary to exact the ſame ſevere and laborious ſervices from the *Indians*, as formerly; ſuch as carrying the baggage, and drawing the carriages of the *Spaniards*, which occaſioned the deſtruction of multitudes of *Indians*.

PERU is now in the poſſeſſion of a very different ſett of people, than it was at the time of the *Spaniſh* conqueſt: for, beſides the native *Indians*, there are the deſcendants of many *Europeans*, as alſo of many *African* negroes, of both ſexes, who have been tranſported there in great numbers; and whoſe mixed embraces have given riſe to another race, which is a compound of all three; having different features, and different complexions, from the people of any of the three parts of the world, from whence they are derived; only thoſe that were born in *Spain*, are called *Spaniards*. If any perſon is born of a *Spaniſh* father and mother, in *America*, he is called a criolli, or creole; as are alſo the children of the *Peruvian* negroes; and, it is ſaid, that this term of criolli came firſt from the negroes, who gave this denomination to their children that were born there, as a diſtinction from the native *Africans*. The children born between a *Spaniard* and an *Indian*, are called meſtizoes; as are alſo the children of a *Spaniard* and a negro.

negro. Thoſe born of a negro and an *Indian*, are called mulattoes, or molatas; and the children of theſe mulattoes are called cholo by the *Spaniards*, which ſignifies a dog of a mongrel breed; nor are they held in much better eſtimation. The children of a *Spaniard*, and a meſtizo, they call quartralvos; whereby they would ſignify they are three parts *Spaniſh* and one *Indian*: but they call thoſe treaſalas, or three parts *Indian*, who are the children of a meſtizo with an *Indian* woman. The deſcendants of all theſe have diſtinct names, and different privileges: but, if any of them come to reſemble the *Spaniards*, ſo much in their features and complexion, that it is difficult to make the diſtinction, they generally remove to ſome diſtant town, where their pedigree is unknown; becauſe there they can enjoy the honours and privileges of the native *Spaniards*; eſpecially if they are people of ſubſtance or property.

THERE are always great diviſions and ſuſpicions between the *Spaniards* born in *Spain*, and the criolli born in *Peru*: but the latter are much more numerous, and poſſeſſed of the greateſt part of the lands; though the power is always inveſted in the hands of the native *Spaniards*, who look down with great contempt on the criolli.

THE religion of all *Peru* appears to be the ſame; from what nation, or mixture of nations, ſoever the preſent inhabitants are deſcended; which is owing to the inquiſition, that reigns here with greater terror, than in any other part of the world; whereby both *Indians* and negroes have been compelled to profeſs themſelves Catholics.

THE *Peruvian*, or *Spaniſh*, inhabitants have no foreign commerce, but with the other *Spaniſh* colonies, either in *Chili* to the ſouthward, or in *Mexico* to the northward. They ſail every year, at the proper ſeaſons, from *Peru* to the fairs of *Acapulco* and *Panama*; where they carry the product and manufactures of *Peru*, but chiefly gold and ſilver, to a very great value: at which fairs they furniſh themſelves with the product and manufactures of *China* and the *Eaſt-Indies* from the weſt, and thoſe of *Europe* from the eaſt: however, there are not above ſeven or eight ſhips annually employed in this rich branch of trade; though they export and import the value of many millions of piaſtres. Bark-logs, or a kind of floating veſſels made of rafts of trees, and heightened by poles, are alſo uſed for carrying goods from *Lima* to *Truxillo*, *Guiaquil*, or *Panama*; which carry about ſeventy ton, and are fit only for theſe ſeas, where the wind has little variation: but the float is unable to return againſt the trade-winds, and is always diſpoſed of, together with the goods, at *Panama*.

SECTION IV.

An account of the three grand diviſions of PERU, *with a deſcription of their cities, and principal towns; their ſituation, trade, and number of inhabitants.*

THIS country is divided into three audiences, or juriſdictions; which are *LOS CHARCAS*, or *LA PLATA*; *LIMA*, or *LOS REYES*; and *QUITO*.

I. THE-

I. The audience of *LOS CHARCAS*, or *LA PLATA*, ſometimes alſo called *Chuquiſaca*, from a city of the ſame name, is bounded by the audience of *Lima* on the north; by *Paraguay* on the eaſt; by *Chili*, and *Tucuman*, on the ſouth; and by the *Pacific Ocean* on the weſt. It extends along the ſea-coaſt from the 25th degree of ſouth latitude, to *Rio Tamma* in latitude 17° 10′; ſo that its length is 570 miles in a ſtrait line: but, conſidering the windings of the coaſt, it may be reckoned above 600 miles: and its greateſt extent, from weſt to eaſt, is about 400 miles; though much leſs in ſome places. The climate is indifferent, for it is exceſſive hot on the coaſt; and the inland parts of the country partake much of the other extreme: however, the ſoil is generally fruitful; being rendered ſo by art in the vallies, and made ſo by nature among the mountains; for the interior parts are ſufficiently watered, though there are few rivers upon the coaſt. The commodities of the country are ſilver and gold; as alſo pimento, which grows upon the coaſt, and is a kind of *Jamaica pepper*, producing to the inhabitants about ſix hundred thouſand pieces of eight, or 107,500 *l.* ſterling, annually.

The principal cities, and places, in this province, are 1. *La Plata.* 2. *Potoſi.* 3. *Santa Cruz de la Sierra.* 4. *Miſque.* 5. *Porco.* 6. *Oropeſa.* 7. *La Paz.* 8. *Atacama.* 9. *Arica.* 10. *Ylo.* and 11. *Chule*, or *Xuli.*

1. *LA PLATA*, called alſo *Chaqui*, and *Chaquiſaca*, is the capital of the province, and received its name from the ſilver mines in its neighbourhood, which were the firſt that were wrought by

the *Spaniards*. It is ſituated in a fine plain, on one of the ſources of the great river *La Plata*, in 65° 30′ of weſt longitude, and 19° 33′ of ſouth latitude; being about 250 miles diſtant from the ſea, and about 780 ſouth-eaſt of *Lima*. This city is the reſidence of the governor of the province; and an archiepiſcopal ſee, erected by pope *Paul* Vth. in 1605, to which the biſhops of *La Paz*, *St. Miguel de Eſtero*, *St. Cruz de la Sierra*, *Aſſumption* in *Paraguay*, and *La Trinidad de Buenos Aires*, are ſuffragans. The houſes are well built, and the cathedral is very magnificent; beſides which, there are fourteen churches, and ſeveral convents: for the town is ſo large, that it formerly contained eight hundred natural *Spaniards*, with ſixty thouſand tributary natives under its juriſdiction: but it has been greatly diminiſhed in ſplendor, ſince ſeveral of its mines have been abandoned, upon the diſcovery of thoſe of *Potoſi*.

2. *POTOSI* takes its name from the mountain at the bottom of which it ſtands; being ſituated in 66° 16′ of weſt longitude, and in 20° 26′ of ſouth latitude, about ſixty miles diſtant from *La Plata*, in one of the moſt barren countries of *America*; where there are neither trees or graſs to be found, but the richeſt ſilver mines that ever were diſcovered; which has brought ſuch multitudes of people there, that it is become one of the largeſt and moſt populous towns of *Peru*: nor is it ill ſupplied with proviſions from all the countries within 100 miles of the place, where they bring all kinds of commodities and proviſions, which meet with a very beneficial market.

THE

THE town is about ſix miles in circumference: the buildings are beautiful, and the churches magnificent. The *Spaniſh* inhabitants may amount to above ten thouſand; and *Frezier* ſays, there are above ſixty thouſand *Indians*; for the king of *Spain* obliges the neighbouring pariſhes, to ſend a certain number of *Indians* yearly to *Potoſi*, to work in the mines, where 1500, or 2000 of them, are conſtantly employed, at the price of two rials, or 10$d\frac{3}{4}$ ſterling a day: but, though the generality of them go to this ſervitude with the utmoſt reluctancy, they ſoon forget their former habitations, and continue ſettled at *Potoſi*, which makes it ſo populous. The *Spaniards* and creolians, are poſſeſſed of immenſe riches: their churches beam a refulgence from the great quantities of gold and ſilver with which they are adorned: the cloaths of the citizens are of gold and ſilver ſtuffs; their kitchen furniture all of ſilver; and the houſhold furniture of the meaneſt inhabitants ſumptuous to an exceſs: but proviſions are very ſcarce and dear, eſpecially firing, which is entirely of charcoal, brought from 100 or 150 miles diſtance.

THE incas wrought at the mines of *Porco*, but never knew thoſe of *Potoſi*; which were accidentally diſcovered by an *Indian* in 1545, and afterwards worked by the *Spaniards*. The earth is of a dark red colour, and the mountain of the form of a ſugar-loaf; being three miles in circumference at the bottom, and about three quarters of a mile towards the top, as alſo about three quarters of a mile in aſcent, but naturally dry, cold, and barren: for, it is obſerved, that, where the earth is enriched with this kind of treaſure, there are no

fruitful fields, or verdant paſtures. The mines of *Potoſi* were rendered the more valuable, becauſe the miners were never prevented by water from carrying on their work, as they are in other mines, though they had ſunk them 200 fathoms deep. *Acoſta* ſays, that, in his time, the mountain contained four principal veins; all lying on the eaſt ſide, towards the riſing ſun: that the veins ran from north to ſouth; the largeſt of which were ſix feet over, and the narroweſt about a ſpan broad; though there were other ramifications branching out like the boughs of trees: and that, in the richeſt of theſe veins, there were ſeventy-eight mines, eighty or a hundred fathoms deep, and ſome two hundred. But ſuch great quantities of ſilver have been drawn from the mountain, that it is now entirely undermined: for, inſtead of digging downwards, they opened the rock at the bottom, and ſo proceeded horizontally, till they met with the ſilver veins; though the vein is always richer, in proportion as it lies nearer to the ſurface of the earth. Theſe vaults, by which they pierced into the mountain, were called ſoccabous, or ſacabouas, being eight feet broad, and ſix feet high; whereby the metal was eaſily drawn out, as it was diſcovered: but the rock was ſo hard, that the miners worked between twenty and thirty years, in a ſoccabous, before they came at the ore, which is commonly ſo hard, that they are obliged to break it with hammers, and it ſplits like flint. They labour in theſe ſubterraneous paſſages, without receiving either light or heat from the ſun; which makes the air ſo cold and unwholſome, that a perſon, at his firſt entrance in-

to

to them, is ſeized with a diſorder ſomewhat like the ſea-ſickneſs: and the labourers work alternately, night and day; which are equally the ſame to them, as they are employed continually by candle-light, and entirely naked, to prevent them from concealing or embezzling any of the treaſure.

ACOSTA ſays, that, during the firſt forty years in which theſe mines of *Potoſi* were wrought, there were regiſtered one hundred and two thouſand millions of pieces of eight; beſides what had been carried off clandeſtinely: but this account muſt be very erroneous, as it amounts to the immenſe ſum of ſeventeen thouſand eight hundred and ſeventy-one millions ſterling. However, it appears from the regiſter, that the king's fifth, from the year 1545, to the year 1595, amounted to one hundred and eleven millions of peſos, or 27,980,000 *l.* ſterling; and it has been ſaid, that the fifth produced in that term of forty years, was as much as amounted to 880,000 *l.* ſterling annually to the king; which was forty-four millions in the whole: though more probably this was the whole value of the ſilver out of which that fifth was received.

But theſe mines are ſo much exhauſted, that there are now only forty mills employed, and, for the moſt part of the year, there is not ſufficient employment for them; though there were once one hundred and forty mills: ſo that there is not now a quarter of the money coined at the mint as there was formerly.

3. *SANTA CRUZ de la SIERRA*, or the *Holy Croſs of the Mountain*, called alſo *Baranea*, is the capital of a little province of the ſame name, to the eaſt, and under the juriſdiction of *Los Charcas*; ſituated at the foot of a mountain, on the banks of

of a rivulet called *Guapay*, in 65 degrees of weſt longitude, and 18 degrees of ſouth latitude. The river flows from a rock, and runs through the town into a lake full of delicious fiſh. The houſes are of ſtone, covered with palm-trees; and there is a church, which is a cathedral; the town being the ſee of a biſhop, who reſides generally at *Miſque*. The *Indians*, in the neighbourhood of this place, are ſo poor and mean ſpirited, that they uſed to cloathe themſelves with oſtrich feathers: but the *Spaniards* have taught them the uſe of cotton, with which they carry on a conſiderable trade. Their ſummer is exceſſive hot, and their winter very cold: beſides, during the latter ſeaſon, the ways are rendered impaſſable by tigers, bears, and ſerpents.

4. *MISQUE* is about 25 miles ſouth of *Santa Cruz de la Sierra*; being a ſmall town, but abounding in vineyards, whoſe wine is ſent to *Potoſi*.

5. *PORCO* is ſituated twenty miles weſt of *Potoſi*, and was remarkable for its ſilver mines, before thoſe of *Potoſi* were diſcovered; for the latter being richer, and not incommoded by water, drew all the undertakers, and workmen, from the former: but, as the mines of *Potoſi* are decayed, it is probable that thoſe of *Porco* will be reſorted to again.

6. *OROPESA* is ſituated in the valley of *Cochabamba*, in 66° 10′ of weſt longitude, and 19 degrees of ſouth latitude, about ſixty miles north-weſt from *La Plata*: being built by Don *Franciſco de Toledo*, who gave it that name in honour of the count of *Oropeſa*, in new *Caſtile* in *Spain*. It is not very populous; but the inhabitants have a profitable trade with *Potoſi*, where they carry their ſheep, corn, and vegetables.

7. *LA*

7. *LA PAZ*, or the *City of Peace*, is ſeated in a fruitful plain, near the ſpring-head of a river, called *Cajana*, or *Choqueaſſo*; being about 210 miles north-weſt of *La Plata*, and 125 eaſt from the ſea. The adjacent country is full of ſprings, fruit-trees, and fields of maize; with rich gold mines, and good ſalt pits; having alſo a temperate air, except from the beginning of *December* till *March*, when the continual rains occaſion fevers.

THERE are ſeveral other inland towns in the province of *Los Charcas*, and many villages on the banks of the lake of *Titicaca*; but they are not conſiderable enough to deſerve a particular deſcription: therefore, it is neceſſary to proceed to thoſe places that are ſituated on the ſea-coaſt, going from north to ſouth.

8. *ATACAMA* is ſituated in 69°30′ of weſt longitude, and 22° 30′ of ſouth latitude; about 120 miles up the country: but it has a communication with the ſea by the port of *Cobija*, which is a village conſiſting of between forty and fifty houſes of *Indians*, who are ſupplied from *Atacama* with wheat and papas, in exchange for fiſh. This port is one of the neareſt to *Lipes*, where there are ſilver mines; as alſo to *Potoſi*, which is above 300 miles diſtant, through a deſart country: but the port is deſtitute of all neceſſaries, which has occaſioned it to be frequented only by the *French*, who have ſought the neareſt place to the mines, and the moſt remote from the cuſtom-houſe officers, to invite the merchants to them, and facilitate the trade, for the more convenient tranſporting of plate and commodities. The port is only a little creek, the

third

third part of a league deep, where there is little ſhelter againſt the ſouth and ſouth-weſt winds, which are moſt uſual on the coaſt; but it is to be known by this land-mark; that from *Morro Moreno*, or the *Brown-head-Land*, which is ſome leagues to the weſtward, the mountain goes on riſing, till it comes directly over the creek, where the port lies, from whence it begins to lower a little; ſo that it is ſomewhat the higheſt part of the coaſt.

9. *ARICA* is ſituated in 70° 20′ of weſt longitude, and 18° 27′ of ſouth latitude; being a port to *Potoſi*, though it is above 245 miles from it to the north-weſt. The ſhore is full of great ſtones, has little water, and always rough; ſo that boats cannot ſet any thing aſhore, except in three little creeks, or guts, the beſt of which is at the foot of the head-land. It was a ſtrong and populous place in 1680, when *Dampier* and his companions, commanded by captain *Watling*, were repulſed with great loſs by the inhabitants: but *Frezier*, who was there in 1712, ſays, it has fallen to decay, and deſerves only the name of a village: for the earthquakes have depopulated the town, which now conſiſts of only about 150 families of blacks, mulattoes, and *Indians*, with a few whites. Moſt of the houſes are built with faſcines of a ſort of flags or ſedge, called totora, bound together, ſtanding end-ways, with leather-thongs, and canes croſſing them; or elſe they are made of canes ſet upright, and the intervals filled up with earth: they are covered with nothing but mats; becauſe no rain ever falls there; which make the houſes look as if they were ruins from without. The uſe

of

of unburnt bricks is reſerved for ſtately houſes and churches. The pariſh church of *Saint Mark* is tolerably handſome: there are two monaſteries, the one of the order of *Mercy*, and the other of *Franciſcans*; beſides which, there is an hoſpital of the brethern of *St. John of God.*

FATHER *Feuillee* obſerves, that formerly the ſilver was brought by land from *Potoſi* to *Arica*, where it was ſhipped off for *Lima*; which greatly contributed to the enrichment of *Arica*: but, ſince Sir *Francis Drake* took three barks in this port, in one of which there was eleven hundred and forty pounds weight of ſilver, the *Spaniards* for ſome time would not expoſe ſuch treaſures to be plundered; and therefore came to the reſolution of ſending all their ſilver to *Lima* by land, though it is a very tedious and expenſive journey. However, they now continue to bring the ſilver by ſea; for which purpoſe, it is brought to *Arica* in *March*; and the flota from *Lima*, comes to fetch it in *June*.

THE vale of *Arica* is about three miles wide next the ſea; but it is all a barren country, except the place where the old town ſtood, which is divided into little meadows of clover-graſs, ſome ſpots of ſugar-canes, with olive and cotton trees intermixed, and marſhes full of the ſedge for building houſes. About three miles up the vale, is the village of *Saint Michael de Sapa*, where they begin to cultivate the agi, or *Guinea* pepper, which is ſown throughout all the higher part of the vale; and there are ſeveral ſcattered farms, that have no other produce but this pepper; of which the *Spaniards* are ſo fond, that abundance of merchants come down every year, and carry all away that

grows

grows in the vales of *Arica*, *Sama*, *Taena*, *Locumba*, and others about thirty miles diſtant; from whence it is reckoned, there are annually exported to the value of ſix hundred thouſand pieces of eight, or 107,500 *l.* ſterling.

10. *YLO*, or *Hillo*, is a ſmall port, ſituated in 71 degrees of weſt longitude, and 18 degrees of ſouth latitude; near which is a river of freſh water, called the river of *Ylo*. The town lies about a quarter of a league to the windward of the river, and is inhabited by *Indians*: for it was ſo frequently plundered by the *Buccaneers*, particularly in 1680, by captain *Sharp*, that it has been deſerted by the *Spaniards*. The point of *Ylo* is low land, and runs out into the ſea; being dangerous to come near, on account of an iſland which lies off it, and ſeveral rocks: but it is a good port for loading and unloading a cargo, which occaſioned the *French* to make a ſettlement there in the reign of *Lewis* XIV. where they carried on a great contraband trade.

11. *CHULE*, or *Xuli*, is about 55 miles north-weſt of *Ylo*, and is a good harbour for ſhips: but there is a rock, a little to the ſouth-eaſt of it, which has a ſhoal about half a league round it.

THERE are ſeveral other places on the coaſt of *Los Charcas*; but not of ſuch importance as to deſerve a particular deſcription. Though it is neceſſary to mention, that there is a conſtant intercourſe between the mines and the port of *Arica*; for the conveniency of which, there are inns at every twelve miles; and it is computed that there are two thouſand perſons employed as carriers, or in the management of the inns: yet this is nothing

in

in compariſon of the numbers employed in the ſame way, with reſpect to the inland commerce of the mines; for, as this extends through all *South America*, there are not leſs than ten thouſand people concerned therein, who are continually in motion: and, beſides all this, there is a communication, both by land and water, between *Potoſi* and *Buenos Ayres*; by which, if the crown of *Spain* thought fit, the ſilver might, with great eaſe, be brought into *Europe*.

II. The audience of *LIMA*, *Los Reyes*, or the *Royal Audience*, is bounded on the north by the audience of *Quito*; on the eaſt by the *Cordillera* mountains; on the ſouth by the audience of *Los Charcas*; and on the weſt by the *Pacific Ocean*: being about 750 miles in length from north to ſouth: but its breadth is very unequal, on account of the bending of the coaſt, and becauſe it is pent in by the mountains in ſeveral places. The country abounds with mines of gold, ſilver, quick-ſilver, vermillion, and ſalt. There is plenty of cattle, fowl, and fiſh; with all proviſions common to *Europe*, except butter, inſtead of which they always uſe lard. They have great quantities of oil, wine, and brandy; though not ſo good as in *Europe*. It never rains here, but the want of this is ſupplied by great dews; ſo that they have as good corn and fruits, as any in *Europe*. In the vallies near the ſea, the climate is hot; but tempered with breezes from the ſea and mountains: though, in the mountainous part, far up the country, it is very rainy, and like winter; when it is very dry weather, and like ſummer in the plains.

The moſt remarkable cities, and other places in this province, are 1. *Lima*. 2. *Callao*. 3. *Cuſco*. 4. *Arequipa*. 5. *Piſco*. 6. *Yca*, or *Valverde*. 7. *Guamanca*.

7. *Guamanca.* 8. *Guanca Velica.* 9. *Santa*, or *La Parilla.* 10. *Truxillo.* and 11. *Caxamalca.*

1. *LIMA*, the capital of the audience, and the metropolis of all *Peru*, is ſituated in a fine plain, on the banks of a river of the ſame name, in 77° 15′ of weſt longitude, and in 12° 6′ of ſouth latitude; five miles eaſt from the port of *Callao*, which is its harbour. It was founded by *Francis Pizarro*, the conqueror of *Peru*, on the 18th of *January* 1535, who called it *Cividad de los Reyes*, or the *City of the Kings*; the plan of which is extremely well contrived, the ſtreets perfectly ſtrait, and of a convenient breadth. It is four miles long, and two broad; ſurrounded with walls twenty foot high, which are ornamented with baſtions; but they cannot ſupport the weight of a cannon, and could be of no defence againſt any *European* enemies. In the midſt of the city is a grand ſquare, which may be juſtly accounted the fineſt in the world: on the eaſt-ſide of it ſtands the cathedral; on the north the palace of the vice-roy; on the weſt ſeveral pleaſant edifices; and on the ſouth there are piazzas, with handſome ſhops of all ſorts. There are eight parochial and conventual churches, twenty-eight monaſteries of friars, and thirteen nunneries of different orders, ſix large hoſpitals, and an univerſity containing two thouſand ſtudents.

THE number of inhabitants may amount to eight or nine thouſand *Spaniards*; with about twenty thouſand *Indians*, negroes, mulattoes, and meſtizoes; though *Betagh* ſays, there are 60 or 70,000, including all ſorts and colours. The city may be called the repoſitory of all the treaſures of *Peru*; and, ſome years ago, it was computed,

puted, that the citizens annually expended about 1,200,000 *l.* ſterling, in rich ſilks, laces, pearls, jewels, and other ornaments; of which both men and women are exceſſive fond: but this expence muſt be much abated at preſent, becauſe the *French* trade has carried the commodities of *Europe* there, at an eaſy rate; and becauſe the trade they have drove at *Arica*, *Ylo*, and *Piſco*, has diverted the people that came to *Lima*; on which account the city is now poor, in compariſon to what it was formerly.

THIS city is the uſual reſidence of the vice-roy of *Peru*, who is as abſolute as the king, in the courts of *Lima*, *Los Charcas*, *Quito*, *Chili*, *Panama*, and *Terra Firma*; being governor, and captain-general of all the kingdoms and provinces in that part of the new world, as it is expreſſed in his title; and his annual allowance is forty thouſand pieces of eight, or 7166 *l.* ſterling, excluſive of his extraordinary perquiſites. It is reported that he can raiſe a hundred thouſand foot, and twenty thouſand horſe, throughout the whole extent of the kingdom; but it is certain, that he cannot arm the fifth of them. The garriſon of *Lima* conſiſts of the militia of the city; being fourteen companies of *Spaniſh* infantry, ſeven companies of the corporation of commerce, eight companies of *Indians*, and ſix companies of mulattoes, of one hundred men each; with ten troops of *Spaniſh* horſe of fifty men each, being 4000 in all.

THE royal audience is the ſupreme court of judicature, where the governor preſides, with the aſſiſtance of ſixteen oidors, that is judges, or aſſeſſors; who have ſeveral inferior officers dependent

on them. There is a conſulſhip for the regulation of trade, where a prior, or chief, and two conſuls preſide, who are elected by the principal merchants. And there are ſeveral courts of eccleſiaſtical juriſdiction; particularly that of the inquiſition, whoſe name alone is ſufficient to ſtrike a terror, and make it held in abhorrence.

IT is impoſſible to conceive a more pleaſant and delightful climate, than that where *Lima* is ſituated; though it is in the middle of the torrid zone. It never rains, yet the ſky is generally overcaſt; which defends the inhabitants from the heat of the ſun, and renders the weather cool and pleaſant. The inhabitants enjoy all the advantages of the ſeaſons at once: for the products of all parts are brought here: ſo that the markets of *Lima* have all kinds of fruit the whole year round, in full perfection. There are variety of pleaſant vallies in its neighbourhood, watered either naturally, or artificially, by living ſtreams, adorned with orange-groves, and whatever elſe can render them pleaſing or elegant. But, with all theſe bleſſings, the citizens are under continual apprehenſions, that muſt ſufficiently qualify their enjoyments, ſince there is no place in the world more ſubject to earthquakes. On the 17th of *June*, 1678, a great part of the city, and ſeveral of its churches, were thrown down in a quarter of an hour: but this was a ſlight misfortune to what happened on the 19th of *October*, 1682, when the city ſuffered two hundred ſhocks, in the ſpace of twenty-four hours, whereby it was wholly overturned; after which, the inhabitants deliberated for ſome time, whether they ſhould rebuild their city on the ſame ſpot where it ſtood before,

or

or endeavour to find out ſome other, where they might have a probability of being more ſecure from ſuch calamities. However, the city was rebuilt in the ſame ſituation, and continued free from earthquakes till the 27th of *October*, 1746, when one happened which deſtroyed many buildings, and 5000 perſons. The ſame day the port of *Callao* ſunk, or rather was overwhelmed by the ſea; and, out of 7000 inhabitants, there was not above 100 that eſcaped from this dreadful accident. The ſhocks continued in *Lima* every day, from that time to the 14th of *November*; whereby moſt of the buildings were deſtroyed; and the number of perſons that periſhed, from firſt to laſt, were about eighteen thouſand.

2. *CALLAO*, the harbour of *Lima*, extends along the ſea-coaſt, on a low flat point of land; being the largeſt, faireſt, and moſt ſecure road in the *South-Sea*: for ſhips anchor in what depth of water they will, and without any apprehenſion of danger. The iſland of *Saint Lawrence* breaks the ſurges that come from the ſouth-weſt to the ſouth-eaſt; being ſituated to the north-weſt of the little iſland of *Callao*, which lies before the town: but, in the opening between theſe iſlands, there are ſome other ſmall iſles, or rocks. The town contains about five hundred families; and it was fortified, in the reign of *Philip* IV. with an incloſure flanked by ten baſtions on the land-ſide, as alſo by ſome redans and plain baſtions on the edge of the ſea, where there were four batteries to command the port and road: but, at preſent, the garriſon, and fortifications, are no ways conſiderable.

ALL the conveniencies and neceſſaries for navigation are to be found in the port of *Callao*; particularly wooding and watering. It has an extenſive trade; as it brings from *Chili*, cordage, leather, tallow, dried fiſh, and corn: from *Chiloe*, cedar planks, woollen manufactures, and particularly carpets: ſugars, cocoa, and naval ſtores from *Guiaquil*, and other places of *Peru*; as alſo wines and brandy from *Lanaſco* and *Piſco*: with pitch, and tar, woods for dying, ſulphur, balſam, and commodities of *China*, by way of *Acapulco*, from *Mexico*.

THERE are two flotas which annually ſail from *Callao*; the one for *Arica*, and the other for *Panama*. The former ſails about the end of *February*; receives at *Arica* the ſilver ſent from *Potoſi*, and returns towards the end of *March*. The latter ſails for *Panama* in the beginning of *May*, with the wealth brought from *Potoſi* and *Chili*; as alſo with the king's revenue, and merchandizes from all parts of *Peru*: and, on the return of this fleet, laden with *European* commodities, they are diſpoſed of from hence, partly by ſea, and partly by land, to all the different places to which they are deſtined.

3. *CUSCO*, formerly the capitol of *Peru*, and the ſeat of the incas, is ſituated in 71° 30′ of weſt longitude, and in 13° 15′ of ſouth latitude; about 360 miles to the eaſtward of *Lima*. It ſtands in an uneven country, ſurrounded with mountains on every ſide, near the rivers *Yucay* and *Apurina*; ſtill retaining ſome marks of its former magnificence; being ſuch as will always ſtrike intelligent ſtrangers with a juſt idea of the wiſdom, opulence, and

and potency of the ancient monarchs of the country; notwithſtanding all the pains which the *Spaniards* have taken to pull down and deſtroy the royal palaces, and the reſt of the public edifices, out of whoſe ruins they have built their own houſes.

DE la VEGA compares the ancient *Cuſco* to ancient *Rome*: for, 1*ſt*. like *Rome*, he obſerves, it was founded by its own kings; and, 2*d*. was the metropolis of many nations ſubjected to its empire: 3*d*. it might be compared to *Rome* for the excellency of its laws; and, 4*th*. for the admirable virtues and endowments of its citizens, who were remarkable for their political virtues, as well as military diſcipline; civilized, and freed from all barbarous cuſtoms. However, he ſays, it muſt be confeſſed, that *Rome* had one great advantage in her knowledge of letters, which rendered her fame immortal: whereas poor *Cuſco* had only memory and tradition, to deliver its great actions to poſterity.

The city is now entirely built in the *Spaniſh* manner; being thrown into large ſquares, with piazzas; from whence the principal ſtreets, which are very long and broad, run in direct lines, and theſe again are croſſed by other ſtreets at right angles. Beſides the cathedral, there are ſeveral churches, monaſteries, and nunneries; as alſo ſome hoſpitals. It contains about 16,000 *Spaniards*, creolians, and *Indians*; beſides the ſtrangers who come there to trade; for there are manufactures of bays and cotton-cloth carried on in this city, which are of ſome prejudice to the trade of *Europe*; and they alſo make ſome ſorts of work in leather, as well

for the uſes of men, as for the furniture of horſes and mules.

THE air of *Cuſco* is very freſh and healthy: the vallies about the city abound with corn and fruit; where the *Spaniards* have their gardens and country-ſeats, in which they have done every thing that could agreeably gratify the paſſions: whereby nothing is wanting at *Cuſco* that can contribute to health or pleaſure.

THE mines of *Lampa*, and *Cordillera de Cuſco*, are very conſiderable; though there are others much richer towards the *Moxos*, where the *Indians* have plenty of gold; but they are fierce and uncivilized: however, the *Spaniards* have ſome little trade with the nations that dwell beyond the mountains of *Cuſco*.

4. *AREQUIPA*, or *Ariquipa*, is ſituated in the valley of *Quilca*, in 72° 30′ of weſt longitude, and 16° 40′ of ſouth latitude, about 380 miles ſouth-eaſt of *Lima*, and 240 ſouth-weſt of *Cuſco*. The air is very temperate, and the town exceeding pleaſant, containing four or five hundred houſes: but it is very ill fortified, conſidering its importance; for the greateſt part of the ſilver from *Los Charcas*, *Potoſi*, and *Porco*, is brought here, to be ſent to *Callao*, and from thence to *Panama*. The adjacent country abounds in corn and wine: but there is a dreadful vulcano near the town, which frequently cauſes very terrible earthquakes, and one of them deſtroyed the whole town, about forty years after it was built by *Pizarro*. *Frezier* ſays, the town is 72 miles from the ſea; and that the port is called *Quilca*; which is little reſorted, becauſe there is no ſecure anchorage.

5. *PISCO*,

5. *PISCO*, or *Piſca*, is a port town, ſituated about a quarter of a league from the ſea, in 75° 15′ of weſt longitude, and 13° 50′ of ſouth latitude; about 123 miles ſouth of *Lima*. The whole town conſiſts of 300 families, among which are ſome whites; but the moſt of them are meſtizoes, mulattoes, and negroes, who are governed by a corrigidore, and a cabildo, or council, for the adminiſtration of juſtice. The road of *Piſco* is large enough to contain a royal navy; being open to the northward, from whence no dangerous winds blow in that latitude; and ſhips are ſheltered from the uſual winds, which blow from the ſouth ſouth-weſt, to ſouth-eaſt. The neighbouring country is almoſt entirely planted with vines, of which excellent wine is made, to be ſent to *Lima*, and other places. All the ſhips that ſail from *Callao*, for the northern or ſouthern coaſts, take their proviſions of wine and brandy at *Piſco:* but ſome veſſels take their lading of them here for *Panama*, which is afterwards ſent by land to *Porto Bello*, and from thence to *Carthagena*.

6. *YCA*, *Valverde*, or the *Green Vale*, is about 41 miles ſouth-weſt of *Piſco*; being a beautiful and opulent town, inhabited by about 500 *Spaniards*; who are governed by a lieutenant appointed by his Catholic majeſty. The town has a port, about 18 miles from it, called *Porto Quemado*; where the *Spaniards* carry the wine which is made in the adjacent valley; from whence it is tranſported to *Lima*, and other places.

7. *GUAMANCA*, or *St. Juan de la Vittoria*, is an inland city, ſituated in 73° 40′ of weſt longitude, and 13° of ſouth latitude; about 150 miles

north-eaſt of *Piſco*, and 180 eaſt of *Lima*; being ſeated at the foot of a high mountain, in a very healthful country, fruitful in all ſorts of proviſions. It is large, and populous; containing about ten thouſand communicants; and the number of *Indians*, who pay tribute in the diſtrict of this city, are reckoned to amount to 30,000. There are three churches, ſeveral convents, and a fine hoſpital; the houſes being built with ſtone, and covered with pantiles. The principal trade of the inhabitants conſiſts in leather, and pavillions, which ſerve inſtead of bed curtains; there are alſo ſeveral ſorts of printed or gilt leather; and they make great quantities of boxes, of confectionary paſtes, marmelades, jellies, preſerved quinces, and other ſweetmeats, of which there is a conſiderable conſumption. The fields produce excellent corn, and the paſtures keep large flocks of cattle; being watered by ſeveral brooks and rivulets.

8. *GUANCA VELICA*, is about 130 miles north-eaſt of *Piſco*, 90 ſouth-eaſt of *Lima*, and 27 weſt of *Guamanca*. It is a ſmall town, conſiſting of about 100 families; but rich, and famous for the quickſilver mines in its neighbourhood, called *El Aſſiento de Oropeſa*; from which, according to *De Laet*, the *Spaniards* get as much quickſilver as amounts annually to about 50,000 *l.* ſterling. The principal mine is 40 yards in front, where private perſons work at their own expence; but are obliged to deliver up all they get to the royal officers, upon pain of forfeiture of their effects, baniſhment, and perpetual ſervitude at *Baldivia*: his majeſty then pays an eſtabliſhed price for the ſame, which is 68 pieces of eight, or 12*l.* 3 *s.* 8 *d.* ſterling, the quintal,

quintal, or hundred weight, upon the ſpot; which is ſold for 80 pieces of eight, or 14*l.* 6*s.* 8*d.* ſterling, at the remoter mines: and, when a ſufficient quantity has been taken out, the royal officers order the mouth of the mine to be ſtopped up; when it is impoſſible to get any other than what comes from the royal ſtores.

9. *SANTA*, or *La Parilla*, is ſituated in a valley of the ſame name near the ſea, on the banks of the river *Santa*, in 77° 50′ of weſt longtude, and 8° 25′ of ſouth latitude; being about 200 miles north from *Lima*. It contains a hundred and fifty *Spaniſh* families, with ſeveral *Indians* and negroes; who croſs the river on fruits, like gourds, flat on both ſides, and almoſt round like ſhields, which the *Indians* ſtring together, and faſten them one to another like rafts, or floats of timber, where they put the merchandizes, the paſſengers, and their own cloaths; then ſwim before, and draw the rafts after them over the river. The port lies between the town and the river, in a bay ſheltered from the winds; on which account the ſhips, that ſail along the coaſt, generally take in here wood, water, and other neceſſaries. The valley of *Santa* is long and broad; abounding with all ſorts of fruit-trees, both *Peruvian* and *European*: but the woods and thickets, with which it is covered, breed a prodigious quantity of muſketoes, that are very troubleſome to travellers.

10. *TRUXILLO* is ſituated about ſix miles from the ſea, on the banks of a little river, near ſome rocky hillocks, in 78° 10′ of weſt longitude, and 8° 16′ of ſouth latitude; about 250 miles north-weſt of *Lima*. It is juſtly reputed one of the

the principal cities of *Peru*; being not only, at preſent, the reſidence of the royal officers of this diſtrict, within which there are 50,000 tributary *Indians*, but alſo having formerly 500 houſes, and four monaſteries, which have lately been upon the decline; though the town was ſo ſtrong, when *Dampier* was there, in 1684, that it deterred his companions from attacking it, after they had made the neceſſary preparations. The inhabitants have a great trade for flax, brandy, ſugar, wine, and marmelade; of which they export three or four ſhip-loads annually, to ſupply the city of *Panama*. *Guanchaco* ſerves *Truxillo* for a port; being a ſmall fiſhing town, ſix miles weſt of the other: but it is bad for ſhips, as it is expoſed to all winds, and without any defence; the ſea running frequently ſo great upon the ſhore, as to prevent any boats from putting in, or coming out, and even the fiſhermen not excepted: however, it is frequented as a place of conſiderable trade.

11. *CAXAMALCA*, or *Caxamarca*, is an interior town, about 340 miles north of *Lima*, and 115 from the ſea-coaſt to the eaſt; being ſeated at the foot of the mountains, in an open plain, in 77° 25′ of weſt longitude, and 6° 15′ of ſouth latitude. It was a magnificent city during the reigns of the incas, and is remarkable for being the place where *Atabalippa* was put to death by *Pizarro*. The ſoil of this plain is prodigiouſly fruitful in corn; with fine paſtures, well ſtocked with cattle; producing alſo maize, and roots, which ſerve the *Indians* inſtead of bread: beſides, there is plenty of fruit and mines of ſeveral metals.

THERE

THERE are other towns in this province; as *Camana*, *Pauca Parinacocha*, *Chumbibilcas*, *Atum Lucanas*, *Cotambas*, *Naſca*, *Otoca*, *Angaraes*, *Tanuo*, *Campas*, *Comabos*, *Guaruchiri*, *Canta*, *Chancay*, *Caxatombo*, *Llata*, *Guancuo*, and many others of leſs importance, which deſerve no particular deſcription.

III. *QUITO* is the moſt northerly province of *Peru*; being bounded on the eaſt by part of the country of the *Amazons*; on the ſouth by the audience of *Lima*; by the *South-Sea* on the weſt; and by *Popayan* on the north. It is about 420 miles in length from ſouth to north; and 360 miles broad in ſome places to the eaſt, in others more, but generally leſs: which the *Spaniards* have ſubdivided into the three diſtricts of *Quito proper*, *Los Quixos*, and *Los Pacamores*. The climate is immoderately hot, and very unwholſome in many places; being ſubject to heavy rains, and thick fogs, eſpecially in the vallies, and near the ſea ſhore, which makes theſe parts extremely intemperate: though, *De Laet* ſays, the climate is rather cold than hot, in general. The ſoil is commonly ſandy and barren; but there are ſome ſpots of tolerable ground, which are well cultivated. They have abundance of kine and ſheep, which multiply here abundantly: though there are few of the llamas, or *Peruvian* ſheep; becauſe the inhabitants make them carry too heavy loads, and ſuffer them to periſh with too much labour. There is a great deal of ſalt-petre, in ſeveral parts of this province, where the ſoil is marſhy, which makes very good gunpowder: there is alſo excellent ſulphur, or brimſtone, which is of a gold colour, and as clear

as

as the ſalt-petre; being gathered out of the veins that are near the gold mines, of which there are ſeveral in the country, as well as of ſilver, quick-ſilver, and copper; beſides emeralds, and many kinds of medicinal drugs.

THE principal cities and remarkable places, are 1. *Quito*. 2. *Tacunga*. 3. *Baeza*. 4. *Cuenca*. 5. *Zamora*. 6. *Loxa*. 7. *Paita*. 8. *Colan*. and 9. *Guiaquil*.

1. *QUITO*, or *St. Franciſco del Quito*, which gives name to, and is the metropolis of the whole province, is ſituated in a valley, at the foot of very high mountains, in 77° of weſt longitude, and 20 minutes of ſouth latitude; about 720 miles north of *Lima*, and 120 eaſt of the ſea. It is a populous and opulent city, built after the *Spaniſh* model; with four ſquares, a cathedral, two other churches, and ſeveral monaſteries; being the ſee of a biſhop, who is ſuffragan to the metropolitan of *Lima*, and has above 50,000 tributary *Indians* in his dioceſe, divided into 87 diſtricts. There are about 3000 *Spaniards* in the city, and 30,000 *Indians*. The preſident, and all the other officers of the audience, have their reſidence in this city; where wine, oil, ſpices, and *European* merchandizes, are firſt brought from the *South-Sea*, by the river of *Guiaquil*, and then by land in carts. There is a grand manufacture here of cloth and ſerges; which make the cloathing of the common people all over *Peru*. The inhabitants alſo draw immenſe riches from the adjacent mountains, where there are many lavaderoes of gold. Beſides, the *Indians* have their fairs and markets, where they bring their fruit, cattle, cheeſe; cloaths and cloths of cotton, wool,

and

and flax; cables, and leather; which they ſell by way of exchange, and not by any certain weight or meaſure: though thoſe *Indians*, who live near this city, are more civilized, ingenious, and induſtrious, than all the other nations of *Peru*. Notwithſtanding all theſe advantages, the inhabitants uſually quit the province, when they have accumulated ſufficient fortunes, and ſettle either at *Maracaibo*, or *Venezuela*; becauſe of the inclemency of this climate: beſides, there is a vulcano in one of the mountains near this city, whoſe eruptions have threatened its deſtruction.

2. *TACUNGA* is about 20 miles ſouth of *Quito*, and is a populous town; whoſe inhabitants weave woollen cloth, in which they carry on a conſiderable trade.

3. *BAEZA*, or *Baeca*, is about 50 miles ſouth-eaſt of *Quito*; being the principal town of the province, called *Quixos*, and the reſidence of its governor.

4. *CUENCA*, or *Bamba*, is about 170 miles ſouth of *Quito*, and ſtands at the foot of the *Cordillera*, on the river *Cururay*; being inhabited by *Spaniards*, who are governed by a corregidore.

5. *ZAMORA* is 210 miles ſouth of *Quito*, and 120 eaſt of the *South-Sea*. It is a fine city, elegantly built with ſtone and timber; having gold mines in its neighbourhood; with plenty of cattle, freſh water fiſh, corn, herbs, ſalt, and honey.

6. *LOXA*, *Loja*, or *Lo Zarga*, is 50 miles weſt of *Zamora*, in 78 degrees of weſt longitude, and 4° 15′ of ſouth latitude; being ſeated on the banks of the river *Catumayo*, in the pleaſant valley of *Caxibamba*: but it is of no conſequence as a place of trade.

VALADODID

VALADODID is the capitol of *Los Pacamoros*: but this, as well as *St. Jago de Montanas*, *St. Francis de Borgia*, and ſome other inland towns, are not conſiderable enough for any particular deſcription; being of no farther ſervice to the *Spaniards*, than as a bridle to the bordering *Indians*, who are a ſtrong and robuſt people, brave and generous in their diſpoſitions, eaſily wrought upon by kind and gentle uſage; but fierce and intractable if any attempts are made upon their liberty.

7. *PAITA*, or *Payta*, is a ſea-port town, built on the ſand, cloſe by the ſea, in a ſmall bay, under a hill; having its ſituation in 80 degrees of weſt longitude, and 5° 12′ of ſouth latitude; about 325 miles ſouth-weſt of *Quito*. It contains about 200 families, whoſe houſes are only ground-floors; the walls built of ſplit cane and mud, and the roofs thatched with leaves: but theſe ſlight buildings are ſufficient for a climate where rain is not ſeen in many years, and is always conſidered as a prodigy. The inhabitants are principally *Indians*, and black ſlaves, or at leaſt a mixed breed; the whites being very few. In the middle of the town is a ſquare, on one ſide of which is the fort, mounted with eight cannon; and, on the other ſide is the houſe where the governor reſides: but, in the laſt war, the fort had neither ditch nor outwork, being ſurrounded by a plain brick wall; and the garriſon conſiſted only of one weak company; though the town might have armed 300 men more; which made it fall an eaſy conqueſt to commodore *Anſon*, on the 11th of *November*, 1741, who loſt only one man in the attack, obtained a booty

booty, which the *Spaniards* eſtimated at a million and a half of dollars, or 268,750 *l.* ſterling, and burnt the whole town to aſhes, except the two churches, which were at a diſtance, and where he had confined his priſoners.

THE country about *Paita* is mountainous and barren, having neither wood nor water; but the port, though in reality little more than a bay, is eſteemed the beſt on that part of the coaſt; and is indeed a very ſecure and commodious harbour, where there is room enough for a fleet of ſhips, and good anchoring in any depth, from ſix fathom water to twenty, oppoſite the town; upon which account, it is greatly frequented by all veſſels coming from the north; becauſe the ſhips from *Acapulco*, *Sanſonnate*, *Realeijo*, and *Panama*, can touch no where elſe for refreſhments in their paſſage to *Callao*; and the length of theſe voyages renders it impoſſible to perform them without calling upon the coaſt for a ſupply of freſh water. Beſides, the port of *Paita*, is the uſual place for diſembarking thoſe paſſengers as are bound to *Lima*, from *Acapulco* or *Panama*: for, as it is 200 leagues from *Paita* to *Callao*, and, as the wind is generally contrary, the paſſage by ſea is very tedious and fatiguing; but by land there is a tolerable good road parallel to the coaſt, with many ſtations and villages for the accommodation of travellers.

8. *COLAN* is a ſmall town, about 2 leagues north north-eaſt from *Paita*, and inhabited by *Indian* fiſhermen, who go out to ſea, and fiſh in bark-logs.

9. *GUIAQUIL*, or *Guayaquil*, is ſituated in 78° 45′ of weſt longitude, and 2° 30′ of ſouth latitude;

tude; about 185 miles ſouth-weſt of *Quito*, and 565 north of *Lima*. It is built on both ſides of a navigable river of the ſame name, about 20 miles from the mouth of it; part of it lying on the aſcent of a ſteep hill, and the other part in a bottom on a bog; but it is divided into the old and new town by the river, and conſiſts chiefly of one ſtreet, about a mile and half in length. There are five churches, ſeveral convents, and 500 houſes; beſides, many huts built of bamboe-canes for the common people: the whole being defended by three forts, two of which are upon the river, and the other upon the hill. The town is governed by a corregidore, appointed by the king: though there is alſo a council for managing the affairs of the government, and determining cauſes of conſequence.

THE mouth of the river of *Guiaquil*, is about 2 miles over: it is navigable 14 leagues above the town for large veſſels; and the tide flows 20 leagues beyond: but the country, on both ſides of it, is low marſhy ground, encumbered with ſhrubs and mangroves: however, there are ſeveral villages and farm-houſes on its banks, which ſupply the town with plenty of all kinds of proviſions. There is a low iſland in the river, about a mile long, and 4 miles below the town, which divides the ſtream into two very fair channels for ſhips to paſs up and down. The river is almoſt a league over about this iſland; in which ſpacious place, ſhips of the greateſt burthen may ride afloat: but the beſt place for ſhips is neareſt to that part of the land where the town ſtands, which is ſeldom without ſhipping.

THERE

THERE is plenty of timber brought from the iſland of *Gallo*, and other places, to *Guiaquil*; on which account a great number of ſhips are built there for his Catholic majeſty. The inhabitants carry on a conſiderable trade; eſpecially in exporting timber, cocoa, cotton, rice, ſalt, ſalt-fiſh, dried beef, hides, tallow, ſarſaparilla, and other drugs: but there are no gold or ſilver mines near it; nor have they any corn, but *Indian* wheat. They are ſupplied with flour from *Truxillo*, and other ſouthern parts; with woollen cloth, and ſtrong bays, from *Quito*, where they are manufactured; they receive wine, brandy, oil, olives, and ſugar, from *Piſco*, and other towns to the ſouthward: beſides, a market is daily held in boats and bark-logs on the river, where all ſorts of proviſions are ſold very cheap.

THE *Spaniards* have a conſiderable garriſon in *Guiaquil*; yet no town has ſuffered more from the depredations of the buccaneers: for *Dampier* and his companions had like to have ſurprized it in 1685: but it was actually taken and plundered, in 1687, by the *French*, who took the governor, and 700 priſoners, from whom they exacted a ranſom of 260,000 pieces of eight, or 46,958 *l.* ſterling: and captain *Rogers* took it by ſtorm, in 1709, when he plundered it, and obliged the *Spaniards* to pay 30,000 pieces of eight, or 11,125 *l.* ſterling, to ranſom the town, and ſhips in the harbour.

PORTO VIEJO, or *St. Jago*, lies in 1° 15′ of ſouth latitude; and was formerly remarkable for having a quarry of emeralds in its neighbourhood, which is now exhauſted: but the town was ſo fre-

quently plundered by the buccaneers, that it ſunk at laſt into a village.

TUMBEZ is ſituated at the foot of the mountains, upon a good freſh-water river, about 60 miles ſouth of *Guiaquil*: and *Thomebamba* is 160 miles ſouth of *Quito*, being remarkable for ſome rich gold mines, which were diſcovered there by the *Spaniards*, in 1554.

THE province of *LOS QUIXOS*, is very far from being thoroughly ſettled; though the *Spaniards* eſteem it of great conſequence, as ſome advantages are drawn from the commerce carried on with the numerous nations of *Indians* to the eaſt: but the inhabitants of the *Pacamores* are induſtrious and rich; having ſeveral woollen and cotton manufactories; beſides which, they make no inconſiderable profit of their lavaderoes.

SECTION II.

A deſcription of the principal iſlands upon the coaſt of PERU; *as alſo of the* Gallapagos, *and the iſlands of* Solomon.

THERE are ſeveral iſlands upon the coaſt of *Peru*; but the moſt remarkable are thoſe of *LOBOS*, *PUNA*, *COCOS*, and *PLATA*.

1. The iſles of *LOBOS*, or *Seals*, according to *Dampier*, are two little iſlands, each of them about a mile round, and of an indifferent height, ſituated in about 79° 30′ of weſt longitude, and 6° 20′ of ſouth latitude; being 135 miles north weſt of *Truxillo*. The ſame author diſtinguiſhes them by the

the names of *Lobos de la Mar*, and *Lobos de la Terra*; between which, he ſays, there is a ſmall channel fit for boats only; and that there are ſeveral rocks lying on the north ſide of the iſlands, a little way from ſhore. There is a ſmall cove, or ſandy bay, ſheltered from the winds, at the weſt end of the eaſtermoſt iſland, where ſhips may careen: but the reſt of the ſhore is a rocky coaſt, conſiſting of ſmall cliffs. Within land, they are both of them rocky, and partly ſandy; being barren, without any freſh water, tree, ſhrubs, graſs, herbs, or any land animals, except fowls, of which there are great multitudes, particularly of boobies, and penguins; beſides, great numbers of ſeals and ſea lions come aſhore upon both iſlands: he adds, that there is good riding between the eaſtermoſt iſland and the rocks, in ten, twelve, or fourteen fathom: for the wind is commonly at ſouth, or ſouth ſouth-eaſt, and the eaſtermoſt iſland, lying eaſt and weſt, ſhelters that road.

DAMPIER, and his companions, were cruizing about theſe iſlands in *May*, 1684, and took three *Spaniſh* ſhips, laden with flour, from *Guanchaco* for *Panama*: but the account given of theſe iſlands, by captain *Rogers*, is different from what has been delivered by captain *Dampier*: for the former ſays, there are ſeveral iſlands called *Lobos de la Mar*, and that the two largeſt iſlands of that name, are about ſixteen leagues from the main, and ſix miles in length: being ſo called, to diſtinguiſh them from thoſe named *Lobos de la Terra*, which are only two leagues off the continent. There is another ſmall iſland, cloſe by the eaſtermoſt to the windward, not half a mile long; with

ſome rocks and breakers near the ſhore, all round, and off of each ſide of the entrance to the road, which is bold, and has no viſible danger. He ſays, there is a paſſage for boats to windward, to come into the road, which is to the leeward of theſe iſlands, in a ſound between them: it is not half a mile broad, but above a mile deep; having from ten to twenty fathom water, with good anchorage: though there is no coming in for ſhips, except to leeward of the iſlands. Captain *Rogers* alſo ſays, that there is a round hammock on the eaſtermoſt iſland, behind which is a ſmall cove, very ſmooth, deep, and convenient enough for a ſhip to careen in. He adds, that the higheſt part of the iſland, appears, in the road, not much higher than the top-maſt-head of a large ſhip: as alſo that the ſoil is a hungry, white, clayiſh earth, mixed with ſand and rocks.

2. The iſland of *PUNA*, is ſituated in the bay of *Guiaquil*, in 79 deg. of weſt longitude, and 3 deg. of ſouth latitude. It is flat and low, ſtretching eaſt and weſt about 12 or 14 leagues; and was formerly very populous: but now there is only one town on the iſland, which is alſo called *Puna*, lying on the ſouth-ſide, cloſe by the ſea, about 7 leagues from *Guiaquil*, and the ſame diſtance from *Punta Arena*, or *Sandy Point*, which is the weſtermoſt part of the iſland. The town of *Puna* is inhabited by *Indians*, who are all ſeamen, and are the only pilots in theſe ſeas, particularly for the river of *Guiaquil*. They have a ſmall church, and about twenty houſes in the town: but the houſes ſtand all on poſts, ten or twelve feet high, with ladders on the outſide to go up into them; being thatched

thatched with palmetto leaves, and the chambers well boarded. The ſhips bound to the river of *Guiaquil*, anchor at *Punta Arena*, and wait for a pilot; becauſe the entrance is very dangerous for ſtrangers. The tide runs very ſtrong all about the iſland; but ſo many different ways, on account of the branches, creeks, and rivers, which run into the ſea near it, that it caſts up many dangerous ſhoals on all ſides of it. The beſt place for ſhips to lie at anchor before the town, is againſt the middle of it; where there is five fathom water within a cable's length of the ſhore, and good ſoft deep ooze, where ſhips may careen, or hale aſhore; and it flows 15 or 16 foot water up and down.

3. The iſland of *PLATA*, or *Plate*, lies in 79° 40′ of weſt longitude, and 1° 10′ of ſouth latitude; about eight or ten miles from the continent, and twenty from *Porto Viejo*; being four or five leagues W. S. W. and half a point weſterly from *Cape St. Laurent*, or *Lorenzo*. The iſland received its name from the *Spaniards*, after Sir *Francis Drake* took the *Cacafogo*, a ſhip chiefly laden with plate, which he brought here, and divided with his men: it is about four miles long, and a mile and half broad; being ſurrounded with high ſteep clifts, except at one place on the eaſt-ſide. The top of it is flat and even; but the ſoil is ſo ſandy and dry, that the trees it produces, which are of three or four ſorts, unknown to the *Europeans*, are ſmall bodied, low, and overgrown with long moſs: however, there is good graſs, eſpecially in the beginning of the year. There is no water on the iſland, except at one place, on the eaſt-ſide, cloſe by the ſea, where it drills ſlowly

down from the rocks, and may be received into veſſels.

THE iſland formerly abounded with goats, which are now all deſtroyed; and *Dampier* ſays, he never ſaw any other quadrupeds here: but there are plenty of boobies and men of war birds, as alſo of ſmall ſea-turtle.

THE anchoring place is on the eaſt-ſide, near the middle of the iſland, cloſe by the ſhore, within two cables length of the ſandy bay; having 18 or 20 fathom good faſt oozy ground, and ſmooth water; becauſe the S. E. point of the iſland ſhelters from the ſouth winds, which blow here continually. From the S. E. point, a ſmall ſhoal ſtrikes out a quarter of a mile into the ſea, where there is commonly a great riplin, or working of ſhort waves, during the flood, which runs to the ſouth, and the ebb to the north, with a pretty ſtrong tide. There is good landing on the ſandy bay, oppoſite the anchoring place; from whence there is a paſſage into the iſland, and at no place beſides: but there are two or three high, ſteep, ſmall rocks at the S. E. point, not a cable's length from the iſland, and another much larger at the N. E. end; though it is deep water all round, except at the anchoring place, and at the ſhoal at the S. E. point.

THERE are alſo the iſlands of *Salango*, and *St. Claro*, a few leagues to the ſouth of *Plata*: the iſland of *St. Roch*, in 7° 20′ of ſouth latitude; the iſle *St. Gallant*, near *Piſco*; *Gouanne*, in 20° 40′ of ſouth latitude; and ſome others upon the coaſt of *Peru*, which require no particular deſcription: but there are the *Gallapagos*, and the iſlands of

Solomon,

Solomon, in the *Pacific Ocean*, weſtward of *Peru*, that are worthy of obſervation.

1. THE *GALLAPAGOS*, or *Gallipago* iſlands, that is of tortoiſes, are a great number of uninhabited iſlands, in about 90 degrees of weſt longitude; lying under, and on both ſides of, the equator; being 110 leagues from the northern part of the continent of *Peru*, almoſt oppoſite to *Cape Paſſaa*, and the town of *Quito*. The *Spaniards*, who firſt diſcovered them, and in whoſe draughts alone they are laid down, report them to be a great number, ſtretching north weſt from the line, as far as five degrees north: but *Dampier* ſays, he ſaw only about 14 or 15; ſome of which were 7 or 8 leagues long, and 3 or 4 broad; being tolerably high, and flat on the top. Four or five of the eaſtermoſt iſlands are rocky, hilly, and barren; producing neither tree, herb, or graſs, except by the ſea-ſide, and a few dildoe trees within land, which are green prickly ſhrubs, that grow about 8 or 10 feet high, without leaf or fruit, and not ſo much as fit to burn: but cloſe by the ſea there are buſhes of burton wood, in ſome places, which are good for firing: however, there is water upon theſe barren iſlands, in ponds and holes, among the rocks. Some other of theſe iſlands are moſtly plain, and low; the land more fertile, and producing trees of ſeveral ſorts, unknown to *Europeans*; particularly ſome of the weſtermoſt iſlands, which are 9 or 10 leagues long, and 6 or 7 broad: having a deep and black mould, that produces trees of great and tall bodies, eſpecially mammee-trees, which grow here in extenſive groves. In ſome of theſe larger iſlands, there are pleaſant rivers; and

there are brooks of good water on ſeveral of the leſſer iſlands: but they all abound with guanoes, and land turtle, or tortoiſe; the former being fat, large, and tame; and the latter are ſo numerous that 5 or 600 men may ſubſiſt on them alone for ſeveral months. Some of theſe land-turtle are 150 or 200 *lb.* weight; and ſo ſweet, that no pullet eats more pleaſantly, if *Dampier* is to be credited. There are ſome green ſnakes on theſe iſlands; and great plenty of turtle-doves, which are tame, and ſomewhat leſs than a pidgeon; but good meat, and commonly fat.

THERE are good wide channels between theſe iſlands, fit for ſhips to paſs; and ſhoal water, in ſome places, where there grows plenty of turtle-graſs; therefore, theſe iſlands are alſo plentifully ſtored with ſea-turtle, of that ſort which is called the green-turtle: for there are theſe four kinds of ſea-turtle; the trunk-turtle, the loggerhead, the hawkſbill, and the green turtle; the latter of which is ſo called becauſe its ſhell is greener than any other, but extraordinary thin, and uſed only for inlays. One of theſe green turtle will generally weigh from 2 to 300 *lb.* their backs are flat; their heads round and ſmall; being the ſweeteſt of all the kinds: but there are degrees of them, both in reſpect to their ſize and their fleſh. Green turtle live on graſs, which grows in the ſea, from 3 to 6 fathom water, about a quarter of an inch broad, and 6 inches long: but the turtle of theſe *Gallapago* iſlands, according to *Dampier*, are a ſort of baſtard green turtle; for their ſhell is thicker than thoſe in the *Eaſt* or *Weſt Indies*; nor is their fleſh ſo ſweet and wholſome. Both males and females come

come aſhore in the day time, and lie in the ſun, upon theſe iſlands: but, in other places, only the females go aſhore, and in the night, to lay their eggs. There is plenty of ſalt in theſe iſlands; and the ſea about them is well ſtored with excellent fiſh: but there are alſo abundance of ſharks.

These iſlands were diſcovered, and deſcribed, by captain *Cowley*, in 1684; who calls them by the names of, *King Charles*'s iſland, *Croſſman*'s iſland, *Bruttle*'s iſland, the *Duke of Albemarle*'s iſland, *Narborough*'s iſland, *Cowley*'s *Inchanted* iſland, *King James*'s iſland, *Dean*'s iſland, *Duke of Norfolk*'s iſland, *Daſſigney*'s iſland, *Albany* iſland, *Eureſs*'s iſland, *Bindos*'s iſland, *Earl of Abingdon*'s iſland, *Lord Wenman*'s iſland, and *Lord Culpeper*'s iſland.

The air of theſe iſlands is temperate enough, conſidering the climate; for there is conſtantly a freſh ſea-breeze all the day, and cooling refreſhing winds in the night: therefore, the heat is not ſo violent here, as in moſt other places under the equator. The rains fall in *November*, *December*, and *January*; when there is frequently exceſſive dark tempeſtuous weather, mixed with much thunder and lightening: ſometimes, before and after theſe months, there are moderate refreſhing ſhowers: but, in *May*, *June*, *July*, and *Auguſt*, the weather is always very fair.

2. The iſlands of *SOLOMON* are a cluſter of iſlands, ſituated in the *Pacific Ocean*, between 130 and 140 degrees of weſt longitude, and between 7 and 12 degrees of ſouth latitude. They were originally diſcovered by *Alvaro de Mendoza*, under the orders of the licentiate *Lopez Garcia de Caſtro*,

in

in 1567; which was then eſteemed a very important matter: but, as the *Spaniards* were always ſlow in their motions, and, beſides, were under a neceſſity of waiting for orders from *Europe*, it was ten years before they made any farther progreſs: though, when they were preparing to undertake ſuch an expedition, as they flattered themſelves would have put them in poſſeſſion of a new *Indies*, they received directions from *Spain* to lay aſide the deſign for a while; and to ſuppreſs all papers, charts, letters, and whatever elſe might give the leaſt light into the nature and ſituation of theſe iſlands; on account of the expedition made by Sir *Francis Drake*, who actually viſited the *South Seas* in 1578. As ſoon as the *Spaniards* were recovered from this fright, and were in a condition of thinking of ſuch matters again, the project of diſcovering the iſlands of *Solomon* was revived: but was again defeated, before it could be put into execution, by the arrival of admiral *Cavendiſh* in the *South Seas*, in 1586. However, in 1595, Don *Alvaro de Miranda* was ſent with four ſhips upon this diſcovery: but, though they could not find the iſlands of *Solomon*, they found other iſlands near them, of equal, or greater, value; where they behaved ſo ill, that they compelled the natives to have recourſe to arms, by whom they were driven out, and obliged to fly for ſhelter to the *Philippines*. *Ferdinand de Guiros* laboured hard to get this project reſumed in 1610; but the *Spaniards* have not applied themſelves to it: ſo that providence may have reſerved the diſcovery of theſe iſlands, and the ſouthern unknown continent, for ſome other nation.

THESE

THESE iſlands have received the particular names of, *James Iſland*, *St. Chriſtopher*, *Guadalcanal*, *Seſargo*, *Bonaviſta*, *Rame aux*, *Malaita*, *Iſabella*, and *Jeſus*; beſides ſeveral others, which have received no denomination. They are reported to be worth the ſeeking and poſſeſſing; as being large, and pleaſant; with excellent ports, and great quantities of ſilver: yet, in the ſpace of 188 years, theſe valuable countries have ſcarce been ſeen, and never ſettled or conquered. It is true, they lie at a great diſtance, between the continent of *Peru*, and the *Philippine Iſlands*; which has induced ſome perſons to think that the iſlands of *Solomon* are only imaginary: but, if this ſort of ſuſpicion had been prevalent, in *Portugal*, or *Spain*, when the firſt propoſals for diſcovery were made, the *Europeans* might have known as little of the *Eaſt* or *Weſt Indies*, as they now underſtand of theſe iſlands: ſince the reaſons, and rumours, upon which theſe diſcoveries were undertaken, were certainly leſs clear and cogent, than what has been, or may be, offered in reſpect to the iſlands of *Solomon*.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

The DESCRIPTION *of* TERRA FIRMA, *and* GUIANA.

SECTION I.

A particular repreſentation of the province of TERRA FIRMA: *its boundaries, extent, climate, and ſoil. The diſcovery of it, and the ſettlements made there, by the* Spaniards. *The eight ſub-diviſions, or diſtricts, of this country; with an account of their rivers, and principal places of trade; as alſo of the native* Indians, *the produce of the country, and the commerce of the* Spaniards.

THE province of *TERRA FIRMA* is a very extenſive country; being bounded by part of *Peru*, the country of the *Amazons*, and part of *Guiana*, on the ſouth; by the river *Oroonoko*, which ſeparates it from *Guiana*, on the ſouth-eaſt; by the *North Sea*, or part of the *Atlantic Ocean*, on the north and eaſt; and by the *South Sea* on the weſt, where the iſthmus of *Darien* alſo divides it from *Mexico*, or *New Spain*. It extends from about 61° 20′ to 83 degrees of weſt longitude, and from one degree to 12° 30′ of north latitude; being about 1300 miles long from eaſt to weſt, and about 750 broad from north to ſouth; but, in ſeveral places, it is ſo much pent in by the river *Oroonoko*, that it is not half that breadth, and not above

above 180 miles towards the mouth of the ſame river. The province of *Guiana* is ſometimes included in the *Terra Firma*, which would make it of a much greater extent: but it will be proper to give an account of that country by itſelf; becauſe it is not under the dominion of the *Spaniards*.

THIS country, like that of *Chili*, was divided into many governments, and the people into ſeveral tribes, governed by their reſpective caziques, or princes. It was firſt diſcovered by *Chriſtopher Columbus*, in his third * voyage to *America*, in 1498; whoſe ſailors called it *New Caſtile*; becauſe moſt of them were natives of *Old Caſtile* in *Spain*: it afterwards obtained the name of the *Caſtilla del Oro*, or the *Golden Caſtile*; on account of the large quantities of that metal, which were found there, and particularly in the diſtrict of *Uraba*: but at laſt it recovered the name firſt given it by *Columbus*, of *Terra Firma*, or *Firm Land*.

THE climate cannot be called either pleaſant or healthful; becauſe the inhabitants are ſcorched by the violent heat of the ſun in one part of the year, and flooded with continual rains in the other. The ſoil is very different: for there is a perfect verdure in ſome places, though the trees produce little or no fruit; but, in other parts, there is ſuch a great plenty of all things, that the inhabitants have two harveſts, and their meadows feed prodigious multitudes of cattle. The mountains abound with lions, tigers, and many other kinds of wild beaſts. There are abundance of rivers and rivulets; but ſome of them are ſo far from being wholſome, that their waters are dangerous,

* See this Volume, p. 104.

gerous, and not fit to be drank. There were formerly very rich mines of gold in this province, which are now almoſt exhauſted; though there are ſtill ſome remains of them, as well as ſome ſilver and iron mines, that have been ſince opened. There was once a very rich pearl fiſhery on the ſea coaſt, which is now greatly decayed. But, as the diſtricts of this country are ſo numerous, it will be proper to repreſent their different products, and rivers, under their reſpective diviſions, as alſo the particular nations of *Indians*, throughout the whole country.

COLUMBUS barely diſcovered this north coaſt of *South America*, from the mouth of the river *Oroonoko* in the eaſt, to *Porto Bello* in the weſt; and, though he went on ſhore in ſeveral parts, he eſtabliſhed no ſettlements upon the coaſt *. *Alonzo de Ojeda*, and *Americus Veſputius*, made a farther diſcovery of the northern part of this country, in 1499: they were immediately followed by *Peter Alonzo Nino*, *Vincent Yanez Pinſon*, *James de Lepe*, and *Roderic de Baſtidas*, who ſeverally undertook the ſame expedition, as is more particularly repreſented in the 4th chapter of the 1ſt. part of this work.

VASCO NUNEZ de BILBOA, who attended general *Enciſo* in an expedition from *Cuba*, firſt ſettled a colony, and erected a fort, on the weſt ſide of the gulph of *Darien*, in 1510. He afterwards took the command from *Enciſo*, who was very unfortunate in this expedition, and loſt ſeveral men in his engagements with the *Indians*. *Nunez* then cultivated a friendſhip with *Careta*, *Ponca*, and

* See this Volume, p. 120.

and *Comagre*; who were the caziques, or princes, that governed the country of *Darien*: after which, he took 200 *Spaniards*, and 1000 *Indians*, to penetrate through the mountains, and diſcover the *South-Sea*, wherein he happily ſucceeded, in the year 1513; when he made a ſettlement, near the place where *Panama* was afterwards ſituated.

In this expedition, the *Spaniards* killed a great number of defenceleſs *Indians*; who, at firſt, took theſe invaders for gods, but ſoon looked upon them as devils; being obliged to ſurrender themſelves to their mercy, or expoſe themſelves to their cruelty. *Nunez* went up to his knees in the *South-Sea*, and took a formal poſſeſſion of it for his Catholic majeſty: after which, he returned to *Darien*, and ſollicited a reinforcement from *Spain*, where he ſent a great part of the gold which he acquired from the *Indians*.

Accordingly, *Peter Arias*, or *Pedrarias*, was appointed governor of the province, and ſent over with 1500 men: being accompanied by father *John Quevedo*, a *Franciſcan* friar, as biſhop of the place, with ſeveral other monks of that order, to inſtruct the natives in the chriſtian religion. *Nunez* was alſo appointed adelantado, or lieutenant of the *South-Seas*: but received great indignity from the governor, who plundered the country, and maſſacred the *Indians* without mercy. However, *Quevedo* interpoſed his good offices, ſo as to procure a reconciliation between the two generals; and, to cement their friendſhip the ſtronger, *Nunez* married the daughter of *Arias*: but the latter, ſoon afterwards put his ſon-in-law to death, in a barbarous, unexpected, and unjuſtifiable manner,

at

at a time when he was undertaking the diſcovery of *Peru* *.

ARIAS, being without a rival, or any perſon to check his cruelty, ravaged the country, from ſea to ſea, in a terrible manner. He reduced the provinces of *Veragua*, and *Nicaragua*; built *Panama*, *Nombrede Dios*, and other towns: but committed ſuch horrid depredations on the *Indians*, that he thought proper to remove to his acquiſitions in *Veragua*, where he imagined himſelf to be out of the reach of juſtice, and was never mentioned afterwards: though *Bartholomew de Capas*, biſhop of *Chiapo*, ſays, that *Arias*, and his ſucceſſors, deſtroyed no leſs than eight hundred thouſand people, and plundered the country of ſeveral millions of gold; but ſent no more than three thouſand crowns to his Catholic majeſty.

THE reſt of *Terra Firma*, from *Darien* to the river *Oroonoko*, was ſubdued by private adventurers, at their own expences; who obtained a particular extent of country from the court of *Spain*, and uſed the natives at diſcretion; ravaging and plundering the ſeveral countries, for 1500 miles together; and murdering, or enſlaving, the miſerable inhabitants, who were incapable of making any conſiderable reſiſtance againſt their rapacious invaders, and gave them an opportunity of depopulating many countries, which were well inhabited.

IT was the office allotted for the biſhop of *Chiapa*, to make a ſtrict enquiry into the uſage of theſe oppreſſed *Indians*; and the reverend author aſſerts, *That* his countrymen were not contented with barely maſſacreing theſe miſerable people: but tortured

* See this Volume, p. 133.

tortured and oppreſſed the ſurvivors with ſo much inhumanity, that they thought death was more preferable than life, under ſuch an inſupportable tyranny. He obſerves, *That* the *Spaniards* carried two millions of *Indians* into ſlavery, from the coaſts of *Guiana*, and *New Andaluſia*; many of whom died at ſea, for want of proviſions, and the remainder periſhed in the mines: beſides, many thouſands more were deſtroyed in the pearl-fiſheries on this coaſt, by being compelled to dive for pearls beyond their ſtrength and abilities. *That* the *Dutch* and *German* adventurers, who were only 900 men, brought into the province of *Venezuela*, by *Ambroſe Alfringer*, deſtroyed upwards of four millions of ſouls, within that diſtrict; where they put the caziques to moſt cruel tortures, to make them diſcover the gold, which theſe barbarous invaders ſuſpected they had concealed. To all which he adds, *That* theſe adventurers kept packs of great maſtiff dogs, on purpoſe to hunt the *Indians*, and tear them to pieces: *That* it was a common thing to kill the *Indians* without offence, or to cut off their hands and noſes in ſport, and give them to the dogs for food: *That* the poor natives frequently fled to the woods and mountains, to ſhelter themſelves from the rage of the *Spaniards*, who called this a rebellion, and ſent their dogs out to hunt the *Indians*, by whom they were torn in pieces; or ſlaughtered by their maſters, and thrown by hundreds from the precipices of rocks. All which facts, how monſtrous ſoever, appeared to be true, by the teſtimony of witneſſes, on the trial of ſeveral cauſes in the courts of *Spain*, between the ſeveral adventurers, who had diſſentions concerning the limits of their reſpective provinces,

the diſtribution of the natives, and the reſt of the plunder: ſo that, by theſe conteſts, the truth of ſuch barbarities was occaſionally manifeſted.

HOWEVER, the natives of this part of *America* were never entirely conquered; and never will, in all human probability: becauſe, they are not only a brave people, but they alſo entertain the moſt inveterate hate, and hereditary averſion, to the *Spaniards*; which has ſeveral times induced them to aſſiſt the *Engliſh* buccaneers in their expeditions: though it is not to be expected, that theſe *Indians* would contribute a great deal towards the abſolute conqueſt of theſe parts from the *Spaniards*; becauſe they are not very potent, or numerous: beſides, they are of an inconſtant diſpoſition; and, in reality, not cordially affected to any *Europeans*.

THIS country, is ſubdivided into the following provinces, or diſtricts: 1. *POPAYAN*. 2. *TERRA FIRMA Proper*, or the *Iſthmus of Darien*. 3. *CARTHAGENA*. 4. *SANTA MARTHA*. 5. *RIO de la HACHA*. 6. *VENEZUELA*. 7. *NEW GRANADA*. And, 8. *NEW ANDALUSIA*.

I. THE province of *POPAYAN* is bounded by *Peru* on the ſouth; by part of the country of the *Amazons*, *Guiana*, and *New Granada*, on the eaſt; by *Carthagena*, on the north; with the *South-Sea*, and part of *Terra Firma*, on the weſt: being about 400 miles in length from north to ſouth, and about 300 in breadth from weſt to eaſt. It is ſeparated from *Peru*, and the country of the *Amazons*, by a part of the *Andes*, which ſend out ſeveral branches, or ridges; from whence many rivers deſcend, and ſeveral deep vallies are formed. The

country

country is partly mountainous, and partly plain; which occaſions a variety of weather; ſome places being very hot, and others cold; ſome healthy, and others unwholſome; ſome very wet, and others dry: however, the ſoil, wherever it is cultivated, appears to be rich and fruitful: but the country is far from being thoroughly ſettled.

The rivers of *Santa Martha*, and *Magdalena*, run through this province; the former of which riſes in a valley, near the mountains, about 25 miles ſouth-eaſt of the city of *Popayan*; and the latter has its ſource in the province of *Quito*, near the equator: they both receive ſeveral inferior rivers, which render them very broad; and they run parallel to each other for many leagues: but their ſtreams are united, near the town of *Tamalameque*, in nine degrees of north latitude; after which, the river runs directly northwards, and falls into the north ſea, between the towns of *Carthagena*, and *Santa Martha*. The chief rivers of this province, that fall into the *South-Sea*, are 1. *Bonaventura*, which riſes in the mountains, runs weſtward, and falls into a bay of the ſame name, in 4 degrees 15 minutes of north latitude. 2. The *Tomaco*, which riſes in the ſame mountains, and runs parallel to the former; falling into the *South-Sea* in 2 degrees of north latitude. And, 3. the river of *St. Jago*, which falls into the ſea, near the promontory of *Manglares*, about 20 leagues ſouth of the *Tomaco*. But, as it rains near three quarters of the year, in ſome parts of this province, there are alſo ſeveral other little ſtreams, which fall from the mountains into the *South-Sea*, whoſe ſands afford a great deal of gold duſt: and there

are mines of gold in the mountains; which induced the *Spaniards* to build towns, and reſide there; notwithſtanding, it is very uncomfortable to live ſo near the equator, where the heat and rains are extremely unhealthy and troubleſome.

MOST of the trees, herbs, and flowers, that grow in any part of *America*, are to be found in *Popayan*; particularly cotton trees, cedars, red wood, and trees that yield the balſam of *Tolu*. Beſides the mines of gold, there are alſo precious ſtones frequently found here, ſuch as jaſper, chalcedony, and various kinds of agates.

THE *Spaniards* have made ſome ſettlements in the low parts of this country: but the mountains are inhabited by the *Indians*, who are a brave people, and retain their freedom, like the *Chileſians*; though ſurrounded on every ſide by the *Spaniſh* dominions. However, the *Spaniards* carry on a trade with theſe *Indians*, by the intercourſe of thoſe whom they have converted: the principal merchandizes brought there by the *Spaniards*, being wine, cinnamon of *De los Quixos*, iron, copper; ſeveral ſorts of ſilk and woollen ſtuffs made in *Europe*; gold, ſilver, and thread lace; with great quantities of mercery goods; on which they gain five hundred per cent. though the natives never make exchanges according to the real value of things; but according to the pleaſure they take in the poſſeſſion of them, or the occaſion they have for ſuch commodities.

THE moſt conſiderable places in this province, are 1. *Popayan*; 2. *Paſto*; 3. *St. Sebaſtian de la Plata*; 4. *St. Vincent de la Pazes*; 5. *Agreda*; 6. *Santa Fè d' Antiochia*; and, 7. *Bonaventura*.

1. THE

1. The city of *POPAYAN* is the capital of this province, which gives name to it; being ſituated in 74° 35′ of weſt longitude, and 2° 40′ of north latitude, at the bottom of the mountains, on the banks of a river which falls into the *Magdalena*. It is the ſee of a biſhop, who is ſuffragan to the archbiſhop of *Santa Fè de Bogota* in *New Granda*, from which city it is about 115 miles diſtant to the ſouth-weſt: and it is the reſidence of the lieutenant-general for the province. The town is large, but has few *Spaniſh* inhabitants; ſo that it is filled with creolians and *Indians*, who live both plentifully and pleaſantly, except when they are in danger of an invaſion from the unconquered *Indians*.

2. *PASTO*, or *St. Juan de Paſto*, is ſeated in a beautiful valley, called *Atris*, watered by a fine river, and ſeveral brooks, about 117 miles ſouth-weſt of the city of *Popayan*. The *Spaniards* have ſome conſiderable farms in this valley, where they have many ſugar plantations; and feed abundance of cattle in the ſavannahs: they alſo ſow maize, and wheat, along the banks of the river: for the climate is very temperate, being even colder in ſummer, than in winter; ſo that they diſtinguiſh the ſeaſons here, by calling the dry ſeaſon ſummer, and the wet ſeaſon winter.

3. *St. SEBASTIAN de la PLATA* is about 60 miles north eaſt of the city of *Popayan*; being ſituated in a large plain on the banks of the river *Galli*, which falls into the *Magdalena*. It has ſeveral ſilver mines in its territory, on which account it is called *De la Plata*, or of *Silver*: but the town is ſubject to earthquakes.

4. *St. VINCENT de la PAZES* is 25 miles eaſt of *St. Sebaſtian*, and ſeems to be the ſame place which is called *Onda*, by *Martiniere*; who ſays, it is a ſmall port on the river *Magdelana*, where the canoes, that come from *Carthagena* and *Santa Martha*, unload their merchandizes.

5. *AGREDA*, called alſo *Malaga* by the *Spaniards*, is about 55 miles eaſt from the *South-Sea*, and 153 weſt of the city of *Popayan*; having ſome gold mines in its neighbourhood: but it is a ſmall town, and thinly inhabited.

6. *SANTA FE D'ANTIOCHIA* is the moſt northern town of all this province; being ſituated on the banks of the river *Santa Martha*, near the border of the province of *Carthagena*, 200 miles north of the city of *Popayan*; and is the capital of a government, called the audience of *Santa Fè*, to which the name of *Antiochia*, or *Antioquia*, was added, to diſtinguiſh it from *Santa Fè de Bogota*, in *New Granada*.

7. *BONAVENTURA* is a port town, and the general ſtaple for all the ſouthern part of *Terra Firma*; ſituated in the bottom of a deep bay, of the ſame name, in 3° 30′ of north latitude; being inhabited by a few *Spaniſh* families, who receive the merchandizes brought here from *Mexico*, and ſend them to the interior part of the country. The mouth of the harbour is difficult to find, and the town is very unwholſome; becauſe the adjacent country is ſurrounded with high mountains, where it rains almoſt inceſſantly. *Coreal* ſays, that the *Spaniards* have built a fort in this bay, for the ſecurity of the coaſt on that ſide, and to awe the neighbouring *Indians*: it is defended by four baſ-

tions,

tions, on which they have planted a few guns: but the garriſon is weak, and ill ſupplied with ammunition; though the bay might eaſily be rendered inacceſſible.

As the northern frontier of this province joins the iſthmus of *Darien*, which is alſo inhabited by free *Indians*, the *Spaniards* have been extremely apprehenſive that the *Engliſh* would make ſome attempt this way, and thereby ſecure to themſelves a ſettlement on both ſeas: but this could not be undertaken, without a large body of land forces, much hazard, great expences, and extraordinary difficulty.

II. *TERRA FIRMA proper*, is that country which lies between the gulph of *Darien*, and *Mexico*, or *New Spain*, along the coaſts of the north and *South-Seas*: being that narrow neck of land which joins *South* and *North-America* together: though it is called by ſome the iſthmus of *Darien*; and by others the iſthmus of *Panama*, or of *America*. The moſt exact boundary of this province, on the weſt, according to *Wafer*, is a line drawn from the fort at the mouth of the river *Chagre*, on the *North-Sea*, to the town of *Nata* on the *South-Sea*: and the trueſt eaſtern boundary is a line drawn from point *Garachina*, or the ſouth part of the gulph of *Saint Michael*, directly eaſt to the neareſt part of the great river of *Darien*. It extends, in the form of a bow or creſcent, about the noble bay of *Panama*; being about 300 miles long, and 60 broad from ſea to ſea. It is ſituated between 83° and 87° 20′ of weſt longitude, and beeween 8 and 10 degrees of north latitude: bounded by the *North-Sea* on the north; by the gulph, or river of *Da-*

rien, which ſeparates it from the province of *Carthagena*, on the eaſt; by *Popayan*, and the *South-Sea*, on the ſouth; and by the ſame ſea, and the province of *Veragua*, on the weſt. This ſituation, both on the *North* and *South-Seas*, as alſo on the confines of *North* and *South America*; together with the gold mines, gold ſands, and pearls, with which this province, and the adjacent ſeas are repleniſhed, render it invaluable, and make it the darling object of all enterprizing people; eſpecially, conſidering that this is the narroweſt land that disjoins the *South-Sea* and the *Atlantic Ocean*; as alſo how very great the compaſs is that muſt be fetched from one ſhore to the other by ſea.

THE land of this province is almoſt every where of an unequal ſurface, diſtinguiſhed with hills and vallies; of great variety, for height, depth, and extent. The vallies are generally watered with rivers, brooks, and perennial ſprings, ſome of which fall into the *North*, and others into the *South-Sea*: moſt of them taking their riſe from a ridge, or chain, of hills higher than the reſt, running the length of the iſthmus, and in a manner parallel to the ſhore, about 10 or 15 miles diſtant from the *North-Sea*, of which there is a fair and clear view from this main ridge; though the *South-Sea* cannot be diſcovered from any part of theſe mountains: becauſe, on the north ſide of the main ridge, there are either no hills at all, or ſuch as are rather gentle declivities, than diſtinct hills: but the country on the ſouth ſide of the ridge, is intermixed with conſiderable hills, cloathed with tall woods, that greatly incommode the proſpect which would otherwiſe be of the *South-Sea*. The country,

country, on the north-ſide of theſe mountains, is ſo much covered with woods, that it appears like one continued forreſt: nor is the main ridge every where carried on with a diſcontinued ſummit; but is rather a chain of ſeparate hills; and, accordingly, has ſeveral large vallies disjoining the particular eminences, that compoſe its length: and theſe vallies not only make the ridge more uſeful and habitable; but ſome of them are ſo deep in their deſcent, as to admit a paſſage for rivers.

THIS province, being very narrow, and lying between two great oceans, is obſerved to have more wet weather than any other place within the torrid zone. The rains uſually begin in *April* or *May*: they are very heavy in *June*, *July*, and *Auguſt*; when it is alſo extremely hot, if the ſun happens to ſhine; becauſe, at this time, there are no breezes to cool the air. The rains begin to abate in *September*: but it is *November*, or *December*, and ſometimes *January*, before the fair ſeaſon returns: ſo that the country is very wet for two thirds, if not for three quarters, of the year: but, in the wetteſt ſeaſon, there are now and then ſome fair days, with only a tornado, or thunder-ſhower. The floods, and torrents, cauſed by theſe rains, frequently bear down trees, which dam up the rivers, and occaſion all the adjacent country to be overflowed: but the cooleſt time of the year is after the rains, about Chriſtmas, when the fair weather approaches.

THE principal rivers, that fall into the *North Sea*, are, 1. The river, or gulph, of *Darien*; which is the eaſtern boundary of this province: it riſes in the ſouth, and runs directly north, upwards of

100 miles; falling into the *North Sea*, near *Golden Island*: it is between 6 and 7 leagues wide at the mouth; but has not above 6 foot water in a ſpring-tide: however, it is navigable about 80 miles; though very little traffic is carried on there, becauſe no veſſels can get over the bar. 2. The river of *Conception* riſes about the middle of the great ridge of mountains, runs precipitately to the north-weſt, and falls into the *North-Sea*, oppoſite to *La Sound's Key*, which is one of the *Samballoe* iſlands: it is pretty broad, and makes a good appearance at the mouth; but has alſo a bar, that prevents any ſhips of burthen from getting in: though there is fine riding in the channel, at the mouth of this river, between the iſlands and continent, which form a tolerable harbour. 3. The *Chagre*, which is more frequented by navigators, than any other river of this province, and riſes not far from *Panama*: it takes a north weſt courſe, runs through very deep winding vallies, and falls into the *North-Sea*, about 10 leagues weſt of *Porto Bello*: ſo that all the merchandizes, ſent from *Panama* to *Porto Bello* for the galleons, are embarked upon this river; except the gold and ſilver, which are carried directly over land, upon the backs of mules, to *Porto Bello*.

AND the moſt conſiderable rivers that fall into the *South-Sea*, are, 1. The *Santa Maria*, or *St. Mary's*, which riſes in the mountains on the north-eaſt part of the province, runs to the eaſtward, and falls into the gulph of *St. Michael's*, on the ſouth ſide of the bay of *Panama*: it is tolerably large, and navigable: but is moſt conſiderable on account of its proximity to the gold mines; and for

the

the rivulets which fall into it, in whoſe ſands are found abundance of gold; particularly in one, called the *Golden River*, from whence the *Spaniards*, in ſome ſeaſons, have carried off 18 or 20 thouſand pounds weight of pure gold. 2. The *Congo*, riſes in the eaſt part of this province, and runs to the ſouth-weſt, almoſt parallel to the river of *Santa Maria*; falling to northward of it, into the ſame gulph of *Saint Michael*: there are ſeveral ſmall ſtreams that fall into this river, both on the eaſt and weſt; which render it navigable for great veſſels within the bar; but it is ſo ſhallow at the mouth, that the entrance is to be made with great difficulty. 3. The *Cheapo*, which riſes in the mountains near the *North-Sea*, bends its courſe weſtwards, and then turns to the ſouth; falling into the bay of *Panama*, ſeven leagues to the weſtward of that city: it runs a long courſe, and is navigable a great way; but has the ſame misfortune as the others, to have a bar at the mouth, which hinders the entrance of large ſhips.

Both the northern and ſouthern coaſts are well watered with other inferior rivers: beſides, neither of the oceans fall in at once upon the ſhore; but are intercepted by a great many valuable iſlands, that lie ſcattered along each coaſt.

The principal towns in this province, are, 1. *Panama*; 2. *Lavelia*; 3. *Nata*; 4. *Cheapo*; 5. *Schucadero*; and 6. *Santa Maria*, on the *South-Sea*: 7. *Porto Bello*; 8. *Venta de Cruz*; and, 9. *Conception*, on the *North-Sea*.

1. The city of *PANAMA*, or *New Panama*, is ſituated upon the fineſt and moſt capacious bay of the *South-Sea*, in 80 deg. of weſt longitude, and 9° of north

north latitude. It is well built, with brick and ſtone, in the form of a half moon; being ſurrounded by a ſtone wall, fortified with baſtions, and other works, planted with great guns, both towards the ſea and land. It is the ſee of a biſhop, ſuffragan to the archbiſhop of *Lima*; and contains upwards of ſix thouſand houſes, eight pariſh churches, beſides the cathedral, thirty chapels, and ſeveral monaſteries and nunneries: ſo that it is a flouriſhing city, and the reſidence of the preſident: but it is moſt conſiderable on account of the treaſures of gold and ſilver, and the rich merchandizes of *Peru*, which are lodged in the magazines of *Panama*, till they are ſent to *Europe*, as well as the merchandizes ſent over by the galleons from *Spain*, to be tranſported to the ſeveral cities and provinces of *Peru* and *Chili*.

THE chief advantage that the new town has above the old one, is an excellent road for ſmall ſhips, as good as a harbour; being ſheltered by the neighbouring iſlands of *Perica*, which are three ſmall rocky places, lying in a row, parallel to the ſhore, two leagues from the town, and where the fleet from *Lima* rides at anchor; for there is very good anchoring between thoſe iſlands, at a good diſtance from the town; but there is a ſhoal between the road and the town, which large ſhips cannot get over.

THE bay of *Panama* is remarkable for ſeveral navigable rivers that run into it, ſome of which are very rich in gold: and it is ſprinkled with ſeveral ſmall iſlands, which are as pleaſant to a ſpectator, as profitable to the proprietors. The country on the land-ſide is full of ſmall hills, verdant vallies,

vallies, and fine groves of trees, which appear like iſlands in the ſavannahs, where there is a fine dry champain country, little ſubject either to fogs or miſts. The rainy ſeaſon continues here from *May* to *November*: but the rains are not ſo heavy as on the other ſide of the iſthmus, though they are very unwholſome to ſtrangers.

THE merchants of *Panama* are generally very rich, and the port is never without a conſiderable number of ſhips in it; becauſe it is the grand center of commerce from *Peru* and *Chili*: beſides, there is an armadilla, or a ſquadron of ſmall men of war, commonly either before the town, or cruiſing in its neighbourhood.

OLD *Panama* ſtood about four miles to the eaſtward of this city, and was deſtroyed by the *Engliſh* buccaneers, commanded by captain *Morgan*, in 1670, who loaded two hundred beaſts with the treaſure he acquired in plundering the city, and returned with 400,000 pieces of eight, or 71,666 *l.* ſterling to *Jamaica*, where he received the honour of knighthood, from king *Charles* II. for his conduct and bravery; though, like the glorious Sir *Walter Raleigh*, he was afterwards impriſoned in the tower of *London*, as a ſacrifice to the reſentment of the *Spaniſh* miniſtry.

SIR *Henry Morgan*, when he undertook the expedition againſt *Panama*, began with the reduction of the caſtle of *Chagre*, which ſtood at the mouth of the river of the ſame name, upon the *North-Sea*. He left 500 men to garriſon the caſtle, 500 more to take care of the fleet, and then embarked 1200 ſelected fellows on board ſuch boats and canoes as he had in the river, which he ſoon found

found impaſſable for large veſſels, and therefore was obliged to leave his great boats and artillery behind him, under a guard, advancing only with the canoes and ſmall boats; ſome of his people going by land, and others by water, who ſuffered intolerable hardſhips for want of proviſions. However, after a laborious march of ſix days, they arrived at *Venta de Cruz*, where the *Spaniards* of *Panama* embark their goods on the river *Chagre*, for *Porto Bello*, and continued their march over land; being incommoded by ſeveral parties of *Spaniſh Indians*, as alſo by ſeveral intermediate moraſſes, and the heavy rains that fell at this ſeaſon. The buccaneers were met by the governor of *Panama*, with four regiments of foot, and two ſquadrons of horſe: but the *Spaniards* were defeated, with the loſs of 600 men; after which, the buccaneers preſſed towards the city, ſcaled the walls, and became maſters of the place, without making the leaſt breach, and without any artillery. The town was ſet on fire, and plundered: after which, the buccaneers returned to *Venta de Cruz*, and conveyed their plunder down the river to the caſtle of *Chagre*, where they blew up the fortifications.

NOTWITHSTANDING the feeble condition to which commodore *Anſon* was reduced, on his arrival at *Juan Fernandes* *, he had firſt determined in himſelf to touch in the neighbourhood of *Panama*, and to get ſome correſpondence over land with the fleet commanded by admiral *Vernon*; for, when the commodore departed from *England*, he left a large force at *Portſmouth*, which was intended to be ſent to the *Weſt-Indies*, to be employed

* See this Volume, p. 256, and 266.

ployed on an expedition againſt ſome of the *Spaniſh* ſettlements. Commodore *Anſon* was therefore of opinion, that this expedition had ſucceeded, and that *Porto Bello* might be then garriſoned by *Britiſh* troops; in which conjecture the commodore was right: for admiral *Vernon* took *Porto Bello*, on the 22d of *November* 1739; and Mr. *Anſon* continued at *Juan Fernandes* till the 19th of *September* 1741: on which ſurmiſe, the commodore hoped, that, on his arrival at the iſthmus, he ſhould procure an intercourſe with his countrymen on the other ſide, either by the *Indians* who were greatly diſpoſed in favour of the *Engliſh*, or even by the *Spaniards* themſelves, ſome of whom might be induced to carry on this intelligence for proper rewards; which, after it was once begun, might be continued with very little difficulty: ſo that Mr. *Anſon* flattered himſelf, that he might, by this means, have received a reinforcement of men from the other ſide; and that, by ſettling a prudent plan of operations with the *Engliſh* commanders in the *Weſt-Indies*, he might have even taken *Panama* itſelf; which would have given the poſſeſſion of that iſthmus to the *Britiſh* nation; whereby the *Britiſh* government would, in effect, have been maſters of all the treaſures of *Peru*; and would have had in their hands an equivalent for any demands which they might have been induced to make to either of the branches of the houſe of *Bourbon*. Indeed, had the ſucceſs of the *Britiſh* force in the *Weſt-Indies*, been anſwerable to the general expectation, theſe views would have been extremely prudent and reaſonable: but the commodore, on examining the papers which were found on board the *Carmelo*

prize,

prize, learnt that the attempt againſt *Carthagena* had failed; and that there was no probability of the *Britiſh* fleet, in that part of the world, engaging in any new enterprize, that would at all facilitate this plan: therefore, Mr. *Anſon* gave over all hopes of being re-inforced acroſs the iſthmus, and conſequently had no inducement to proceed to *Panama*, as he was incapable of attacking the place; beſides, by this time, there was great reaſon to believe that there was a general embargo on all the coaſt.

AFTER the retreat of general *Wentworth* from the unſucceſsful expedition againſt *St. Jago*, in the iſland of *Cuba*, towards the latter end of the year 1741; it was propoſed to the council of war held at *Jamaica*, at which were preſent vice-admiral *Vernon*, general *Wentworth*, Sir *Chaloner Ogle*, brigadier-general *Guiſe*, and governor *Trelawney*, to make an attempt either upon *Guatimala*, or *Panama:* but the latter was agreed upon, and immediately put into execution; it being alſo agreed to convey the troops and artillery up the *Chagre* to *Cruzes*. The fleet conſiſted of eight ſail of the line; with three fire-ſhips, and two hoſpital-ſhips: the tranſports were about forty ſail, having on board 3000 land forces, and 500 negroes. Admiral *Vernon* ſailed directly into the harbour of *Porto Bello*, on the 28th of *March*, 1742, with an intention of ſending the troops up the river *Caſcabal:* he met with no oppoſition; though the governor of *Porto Bello* had three companies of *Spaniſh* ſoldiers, and two companies of mulattoes and negroes, who abandoned the town; and the magiſtracy ſent deputies to the admiral, to deſire protection

tection for their perſons and effects, which was formally and readily granted. But, on the 30th, it was determined, in a council of war, among the land officers, "that, at this conjuncture, an attempt "on *Panama* was not conſiſtent with his majeſty's "ſervice, and ſhould therefore be laid aſide:" upon which, the whole armament returned to *Jamaica*: though admiral *Vernon* was of opinion, that leſs than 1500 men would have been ſufficient for the enterprize againſt *Panama*, which had been formerly taken, by Sir *Henry Morgan*, with a leſs force, who marched over the iſthmus, and got poſſeſſion of the town with little difficulty: but the ſea officers concluded, that the land officers had no intention of going to *Panama*, even before they arrived at *Porto Bello*.

2. *LAVELIA*, is a pretty large town, on the banks of a river, on the north-ſide of the bay of *Panama*, about 18 miles from the ſea.

3. *NATA*, is a port town, ſituated in a plain, on the weſt-ſide of the bay of *Panama*, and about 70 miles ſouth-weſt of the city of the ſame name: but this town, and ſome others on the ſame coaſt, are only remarkable for their breed of cattle, hogs, and poultry, as alſo for their planting of maize, purpoſely for the ſupport of *Panama*, which is chiefly ſupplied with proviſions from other towns, and the iſlands in the gulph.

4. *CHEAPO*, is a ſmall town, ſituated on a river of the ſame name, about 18 miles from the ſea, and 25 north-eaſt of *Panama*.

5. *SCHUCADERO*, is alſo a ſmall town, on the north-ſide of the river *Santa Maria*, in a good

dry ſoil, and open to the gulph of *St. Michael*, from whence it is refreſhed by the ſea-breezes.

6. *SANTA MARIA*, is ſituated 18 miles from the ſea, on the ſouth bank of the river to which it communicates its name, about 90 miles ſouth-eaſt of *Panama*; being conſiderable on account of the gold mines in its neighbourhood: but it has been frequently plundered by privateers, and buccaneers.

7. *PORTO BELLO*, is ſituated in the cod of a bay of the *North Sea*, in 82 degrees of weſt longitude, and 9° 35′ of north latitude; about 70 miles north of *Panama*, and 300 weſt of *Carthagena*; having this name given to it by *Columbus*, on account of the ſecurity of its harbour. The town lies at the bottom of the harbour, bending with the ſhore like a half moon: it is long and narrow, containing about 500 houſes, two churches, a treaſury, cuſtom-houſe, and exchange: having two principal ſtreets, beſides thoſe that go acroſs; with a ſmall parade about the middle of it, ſurrounded with good buildings. The harbour is very fair, large, and commodious; affording good anchoring, and convenient ſhelter for ſhips; being about three miles long, and one broad, defended with high hills. There are about twenty fathoms water at the entrance of the port towards the north coaſt: fourteen on the ſouth; and about ten in the midſt of the harbour all the way. At its mouth, on the larboard ſide, was the *Iron-Caſtle*, on the ſide of a ſteep rock, with 100 guns, and 300 men; near the end of the harbour, about a mile farther up, on the ſtarboard ſide, was a ſtronger fort, called *Gloria*; having 120 guns, and 400 men: and at the upper end of it was fort *Jeronymo*, which

which commanded the mouth of the harbour: but they were all demoliſhed by admiral *Vernon*, when he took this ſtrong town with ONLY SIX SHIPS OF WAR.

THE town is ſituated in an unhealthful place: for the eaſt end is in a low ſwampy ground; and the ſea, at low water, leaves the ſhore bare, within the harbour, a great way from the houſes; which creates a black filthy mud or ooze, and occaſions very noiſome vapours in this hot climate. From the ſouth and eaſt part of the town, the country riſes gradually in hills, which are partly woodlands, and partly ſavannah or paſture: but there are few fruit-trees, or plantations, near the town.

THERE are between 2 and 3000 inhabitants: but the greateſt part of them are *Indians*, mulattoes, and negroes: for no *Spaniard*, of any ſubſtance, chooſes to reſide in ſo unhealthful a ſituation: though, at the time of the fair, it is very populous. This fair continues a month, or ſix weeks, while the galleons are here; and the concourſe of people is ſo great, from *Lima* and *Panama*, that the ſmalleſt ſhops are frequently lett for as much as 200 *l.* ſterling, during this term; a very indifferent chamber for 25 *l.* ſterling; and the price of proviſions is alſo augmented in proportion.

THE commodities, brought by the *Spaniards* to *Porto Bello*, conſiſt in all kinds of linnens and cottons, woollen and ſilk manufactures, hard and haberdaſhery wares; and, in general, all neceſſaries for the uſe of mankind; whereby a large profit is obtained, ſome of them producing 300 *per cent.* and others 100, or 150. Two thouſand mules are uſually employed in carrying the merchandizes

from *Panama* to *Porto Bello*: but their principal loading is gold and ſilver, which is ſet down in the midſt of the fair; where it is weighed, and marked, by the officers; remaining there, till the departure of the fleet, with as much negligence as a parcel of ſmall value in the corner of a warehouſe: but the other *American* commodities, as well as thoſe of *Europe*, are laid up in warehouſes, which make the greater part of the buildings in the town; for all the merchants of *Panama* have large houſes here, appropriated entirely for this uſe; as alſo ſeveral ſtables for the convenience of mules, and other beaſts of burden. However, this commerce is carried on in the winter by the river of *Chagre*, which is navigable from *Venta de Cruz*.

BEFORE the departure of the fleet from *Porto Bello*, the ſhips are viſited by the royal officers, who are to ſee that nothing goes on board, but what has paid the fifth to the king: though this is no more than a matter of form; becauſe there is always an underſtanding between them and the merchants: ſo that ſcarce more than the half of the gold, ſilver, and other rich merchandize, embarked for *Spain*, is declared: beſides, upon the arrival of the fleet in *Spain*, the *European* officers are as unfaithful as thoſe in *America*, and ſhut their eyes againſt the unloading of the ſhips.

WHEN the cargo of the galleons is adjuſted, the fleet ſails for *Carthagena*: but this paſſage, though inconſiderable for its diſtance, was very dangerous when the *Engliſh* were in poſſeſſion of the iſland of *Providence*, which they called *Saint Catherine*'s.

THE city of *NOMBRE de DIOS*, which is now entirely abandoned, was ſituated about 20 miles

miles eaſt of *Porto Bello*, on the ſea-ſhore, in the midſt of a great wood; which rendered it extremely inconvenient, and exceſſive unwholſome: neither was the road, or harbour, ſafe or commodious: beſides, it was frequently plundered by the buccaneers; which compelled its inhabitants to look out for ſome place with a better port, and more capable of being fortified than their ancient town; when they fixed upon the ſpot where *Porto Bello* now ſtands, and erected that town in its ſtead.

But, notwithſtanding all the pains which have been taken to fortify *Porto Bello*, there are few places that have more frequently fallen into the hands of an enemy. In 1595, before the town was half built, it was taken and ranſomed by the famous Sir *Francis Drake*, who died, and was thrown over-board, in the harbour. It was alſo taken, in 1601, by captain *Parker*: in 1669, by captain *Morgan*: in 1678, by captain *Croxon*: and, in 1739, when it was ſtrongly fortified, and well garriſoned, it fell an eaſy prey to the brave admiral *Vernon*.

The country, weſtward of *Porto Bello*, as far as the mouth of the river *Chagre*, is partly hilly; and near the ſea very much ſwampy. The river makes at its mouth a ſmall bay; at the bottom of which, on the eaſtern bank, ſtood *Fort Chagre*, or *San Lorenzo*. It was ſituated on the top of a high rock, and was ſtrongly fortified: but it was taken by Sir *Henry Morgan*; and alſo by admiral *Vernon*, ſoon after he had reduced *Porto Bello*, who took in the cuſtom-houſe 4300 ſerons and bags of goods for the lading of the galleons; ſuch as *Guiaquil* cocoa, jeſuit's bark, and *Spaniſh* wool; he alſo

brought off eleven braſs cannon, and eleven pattereroes; after which, he demoliſhed all the fortifications; but permitted the garriſon to retire into the village of *Chagre*, whoſe inhabitants were protected and preſerved in all their immunities.

8. *VENTA de CRUZ*, is ſituated on the banks of the river *Chagre*, where it begins to be navigable, about 30 miles north of *Panama*: but it is conſiderable only for being the place where the merchandize is embarked for *Porto Bello*, to be ſent to *Europe*.

9. *CONCEPTION*, is a town near the mouth of the river of the ſame name, which falls into the *North Sea*, oppoſite to *La Sounds Key*, one of the *Samballo* iſlands: but it is no ways remarkable.

NEAR the north-weſt point of the gulph of *Darien*, in 8° 32′ of north latitude, ſtood the fortreſs of *New Edinburgh*, built by a *Scotch* colony, in *November* 1699, when they attempted to make a ſettlement on the coaſt of *Darien*, and denominated the country about it *New Caledonia*. The occaſion of this ſettlement was as follows. The parliament of *Scotland*, in 1695, paſſed an act for erecting a company to trade to *Africa* and the *Indies*; whereby the company were authorized to plant colonies and ſettlements in the *Eaſt* and *Weſt Indies*, under his majeſty's letters patent, which they alſo obtained: in conſequence whereof, both the *Engliſh* and *Hamburgh* merchants contributed very largely to this enterprize, and equipped ſeveral ſhips, which ſailed with forces, and every thing requiſite to plant a colony, on or near the iſthmus of *Darien*, in the year 1698. They firſt landed

on

on *Golden Iſland*, at the mouth of the river *Darien*: but they diſliked that ſituation, and went over to the continent, where they built the fort of *Edinburgh*, with the permiſſion of the native *Indians*, who were free people, and in poſſeſſion of that part of the iſthmus which extends along the *North Sea* from the gulph of *Darien* to *Port Scrivan*, being about 140 miles; and from *Caret Bay*, in the ſouth-weſt part of the gulph of *Darien*, to the head of the river *Cheapo* on the *South Sea*, about 150 miles; the breadth in ſome places 60, and in others 100 miles, or upwards. This territory was governed by eight *Indian* princes, who were all at war with the *Spaniards*, and received the *Scotch* into their country with infinite ſatisfaction; in hopes of their aſſiſtance againſt their ancient enemies: ſo that the *Scotch* erected their fortreſs on a moſt excellent harbour, about a league in length from the north-weſt to the ſouth-eaſt, half a mile broad at the entrance, and upwards of a mile broad within; being large enough to contain 500 ſail of ſhips, untouched from any wind that can blow; and the acceſs to the fort was ſo well defended by rocks and precipices, that a very little art would have rendered it impregnable. The adjacent land abounded in veniſon and poultry: beſides, the fort ſtood in the neighbourhood of the richeſt gold mines in *America*; and a communication with the *South Sea* might eaſily have been opened from thence, by the way of the river *Darien* and the gulph of *St. Michael*'s. The *Scotch* thought themſelves extremely fortunate in the diſcovery of this important ſituation, which, they ſay, was unknown to the *Spaniards*; and their ſettlement, at firſt, went

on in a very proſperous manner: but this was ſoon impeded, by complaints from the court of *Madrid* to the court of *London*; declaring, that *Darien* had long been ſubject to the crown of *Spain*, and that his Catholic majeſty ſhould look upon this as an act of hoſtility: the *Engliſh Eaſt-India* company, at the ſame time, alſo complained againſt this ſettlement, as an infringement of their charter: upon which, the parliament of *England* thought fit to interpoſe, and addreſſed king *William* to vacate the patent granted to the *Scotch* company. Agents were alſo ſent by the company to the king, to repreſent that this was no invaſion of the *Spaniſh* dominions; becauſe they were either never poſſeſſed of that part of the iſthmus; or, if they were, they had been expelled from it by the natives, who were then actually in poſſeſſion of the country, and at war with the *Spaniards*: but the influence of the court of *Spain*, and the *Engliſh Eaſt-India* company, was too powerful for the ſollicitations of the *Scotch* company, and all meaſures were taken to ruin their ſettlement: the *Hamburghers* were prevailed on to withdraw their ſubſcriptions; the merchants of *London* were threatened with miniſterial diſpleaſure; and orders were ſent to the *Engliſh* plantations to furniſh the *Scotch* with no proviſions, and to give them no aſſiſtance: upon which, the company were unfortunately compelled to abandon the enterprize; though it is univerſally agreed, there is not a ſpot of ground, on the continent of *Spaniſh America*, that could be of equal ſervice to *Great-Britain*, with the ſituation of *New Edinburgh*, whenever a rupture happens with *Spain*: for the *Spaniſh* treaſures muſt be detained

tained in *America*, if the iſthmus of *Darien* ſhould be in the poſſeſſion of the *Britiſh* crown.

III. The province of *CARTHAGENA*, which received its name from the capital city, is bounded by the *North Sea*, on the north and north-weſt; by *Popayan*, and *New Granada*, on the ſouth; by the province of *Santa Martha* on the eaſt; and by the river and gulph of *Darien*, which ſeparate it from *Terra Firma Proper*, on the weſt: being about 300 miles long, from north to ſouth; and about 200 broad, from eaſt to weſt.

The country is diverſified with hills and vallies; covered with thick foreſts and groves; among which are many tygers, ſnakes, and other noxious animals: but the ſoil is generally wet and marſhy, which is occaſioned by the great rains; ſo that it is not proper for *European* ſeeds; nor will wheat ripen there: however, ſome of the vallies are tolerably fruitful. The balm, gums, and drugs, which this province produce, are in great eſtimation: ſome emeralds are alſo found here: but there are no mines of gold or ſilver.

The principal river of this province is that of *Rio Grande de Magdalena*; which divides it from the province of *Santa Martha*, and falls into the *North Sea*, in 11 degrees of north latitude, about 72 miles north-eaſt of the city of *Carthagena*. It is 2 leagues broad at the mouth: but the rocks and ſands, that lie before it, prevent the entrance of large ſhips: likewiſe the ſtream is ſo rapid, that boats are obliged to be dragged up by men or horſes; and there is an iſland at the entrance of the river, which divides it into two channels.

The

THE *Indians*, who inhabit the interior part of the country, are not very well converted to the chriſtian religion; for moſt of them ſtill worſhip the ſun as their principal deity: but there remain only a few of the ancient inhabitants; becauſe their courage has engaged them in ſeveral wars againſt the *Spaniards*, whereby the greateſt part of them have been cut off. Their chiefs have ſeveral wives: but the firſt is diſtinguiſhed above the reſt, and her children alone inherit the patrimonial eſtate. They tie the bones of their military men to reeds, and carry them before them in war, inſtead of banners or ſtandards, to animate their revenge, and to imitate the courage of thoſe bravoes: but their chiefs are buried in rich ſepulchres, with golden collars adorned with emeralds. That part of the country which is in the poſſeſſion of the *Spaniards*, was conquered by Don *Pedro de Heredia*; whoſe ſucceſſors made it their buſineſs to extirpate the inhabitants.

THE principal cities and towns, in this province, are 1. *Carthagena*; 2. *Madra de Popa*; 3. *Zenu*; and 4. *Tolu*.

1. THE city of *CARTHAGENA*, the capital of this province, is ſituated upon the ſea-coaſt, on a peninſula near a bay of the *North-Sea*, in 75° 25′ of weſt longitude, and 10° 30′ of north latitude; about 95 miles ſouth-weſt of *Santa Martha*, 300 eaſt of *Porto Bello*, and 400 ſouth of *Port Royal* in *Jamaica*; being one of the largeſt and beſt fortified towns of *South America*; with a very ſecure and capacious harbour, well defended by ſtrong fortifications. It was founded in the year 1532; and was ſo named by the *Spaniards*, either becauſe they

they were natives of *Carthagena* in *Old Spain*, or becauſe it reſembled that harbour in the *Mediterranean*. The city is well built with free ſtone, and very populous; conſiſting of five large ſtreets, each near half a mile in length: but one of them is larger and longer than the others, in the center of which there is a magnificent ſquare. There are five churches, beſides the cathedral, which is a noble ſtructure: there are alſo eleven convents, a fine palace for the governor, a ſumptuous town-houſe, and a grand cuſtom-houſe; the whole being walled round, and defended by forts. The inhabitants are about 20,000; of whom only about 4000 are *Spaniards*, the reſt being creoles, meztizoes, and negroes.

It is divided into the upper and lower town: but the upper is called *Carthagena*; for the lower is called *Hemenie*, or *Gaſimana*; which is a ſuburb ſituated to the ſouth-eaſt of the upper town, and ſeparated from it by a canal. The whole lies in a ſandy plain; that on the north-ſide reaches to the ſea, which is very ſhallow there, and the coaſt has an eaſy deſcent to the ſouthward: ſo that, though the town lies open to the ſea, it cannot be taken this way; becauſe large ſhips cannot approach near enough to batter it in breach. It is ſurrounded with a muddy ditch, or pond; which is the north-end of the lake of *Carthagena*, and where the tide comes up: but there is a cauſey which leads from the town to the main land, 300 paces long, and 12 broad; with two arches under it, to let the tide in and out.

The harbour may juſtly claim the firſt rank among the beſt in *America*. It is formed by an iſland,

iſland, called *Terra Bomba*; and a peninſula called *Nave*, about four miles in length. The coaſt of both runs ſouth by weſt, and north by eaſt: but to the ſouth of the peninſula lies the iſland, which, on the north-eaſt, is ſeparated from the land by a very narrow paſſage. The entrance of the harbour is called *Bocha Chica*, or *Little Mouth*; and the harbour lies behind the iſthmus, between it and the continent; being one of the fineſt and moſt commodious ports in the univerſe, capable of containing ſeveral large fleets, which might ride ſafely in many parts of it; and, therefore, the galleons winter here, whenever they are obliged to ſtay in *America*. This harbour is naturally ſtrong, and better fortified than any place in *America*, except the *Havannah*. The mouth of it was commanded by the caſtle of *Bocha Chica*, or fort *St. Louis*, mounted with 94 guns; as alſo by the forts of *St. Philip* and *James*, which ſtood on the ſhore three quarters of a mile from *Bocha Chica*, the one planted with 8, and the other with 12 guns. Within, on a ſmall iſland, ſtood the fort of *St. Joſeph*, mounted with 16 guns: and, at ſome diſtance, to the north-weſt of fort *St. James*, ſtood fort *Cambia*, mounted with ſeven guns. Towards the head of the harbour ſtood *Caſtle Grande*, mounted with 64 guns, on the eaſt part of the peninſula: and, directly oppoſite to it, on the other ſide of the harbour, ſtood fort *Manſenilla*, mounted with 7 guns. Farther up, nearer the town, ſtood fort *Paſarilla*, mounted with 7 guns: and, ſomewhat to the north of that, fort *St. Lazar*, mounted with 25 guns. Beſides, the town was defended by 160 guns; and the ſuburbs by 140; when the city was beſieged

by

by admiral *Vernon*; who glorioufly performed the part of a naval commander; and, in all probability, would have taken the place, if the commander of the land forces had acted with equal prudence.

THIS is one of the richeft and moft important towns of all *America* for trade: befides, all the revenue is brought here from the other provinces of *Terra Firma*: but the moft profitable trade conſiſts in pearls, brought from the iſland of *Margaretta*, on the coaſt of *New Andaluſia*, in ſuch quantities, that there is a whole quarter of the town where the inhabitants have no other employment than to chooſe the pearls, and bore them for making bracelets, or necklaces. *Carthagena* is not only enriched by being the retreat of the galleons, whereby a conſiderable commerce is promoted in the city; but it has alſo a fund of riches in itſelf: for there is ſcarce any of the provinces of *Mexico* and *Peru*, wherewith it does not drive on a trade, either by ſea or land; without mentioning what is carried on by the *Engliſh* of *Jamaica*, and the *Dutch* of *Curacao*, notwithſtanding all the vigilance of the *Spaniſh* guarda coſtas. Great quantities of gold and ſilver are ſent from *Lima*, and other parts of *Peru*, to *Carthagena*, in exchange for *European* commodities. The greater part of the indico, cochineal, ſugar, and cocoa, gathered in the province of *Guatimala* in *Mexico*, is alſo ſent to *Carthagena*, by the lake of *Nicaragua*. It is furniſhed with ſugar, tobacco, confects, and eſpecially marmalades, from *Cuba* and *Hiſpaniola*; as alſo with hogs, poultry, and other refreſhments. It has alſo, from the interior part of

the

the country, gold gathered in the rivers and torrents, aromatic gums, excellent balſams, long pepper, and fruits.

NOTWITHSTANDING *Carthagena* is well fortified by land, and ſecure by ſea, it was taken by Sir *Francis Drake*, in 1585, with a body of 2300 land forces; who kept poſſeſſion of it ſix weeks, burnt part of the city, and received to the value of 30,000 *l.* ſterling, for the ranſom of the remainder. In 1697, it was taken and plundered by Monſieur *De Pointis*, who commanded a ſquadron of *French* men of war, on board of which there were upwards of 4000 men; and it is computed that the plunder amounted to about two millions ſterling. But, on the 9th of *April* 1741, the *Britiſh* forces were defeated in an attack upon fort *St. Lazar*, and abandoned the ſiege; though the army then conſiſted of more than 5000 men: however, admiral *Vernon* bravely diſcharged his duty, by ſafely landing and reimbarking the forces; beſides, he burnt or deſtroyed ſix *Spaniſh* men of war, with ſix galleons, and all the ſhipping that were in the harbour of *Carthagena*; after which, he entirely demoliſhed all the forts and ſtrong caſtles, that had been erected for the ſecurity of the harbour. Sir *Charles Wager*, with four men of war, attacked and defeated the *Spaniſh* fleet off *Carthagena*, on the 28th of *May*, 1709; though the *Spaniards* had 17 ſail of men of war and galleons: the *Spaniſh* admiral blew up, and the rear admiral was taken: but, through the cowardice of two of the *Britiſh* captains, the vice admiral and the reſt of the *Spaniſh* ſhips made their eſcape. However, this was a fatal blow to the *Spaniards*: for the

ſhip

ſhip that blew up was worth 30 millions of pieces of eight, or 5,374,995 *l.* ſterling: and the ſhare of the *Britiſh* commodore, in the prize that was taken, was computed to amount to about 100,000 *l.*

2. *MADRA de POPA*, or *Madra de Dios de Popa*, is a town ſituated on a high mountain, on the weſtern bank of the river *Santa Martha*, about ſixty miles ſouth-eaſt of the city of *Carthagena*; being chiefly remarkable for a convent and chapel dedicated to the *Virgin Mary*; which is only exceeded in riches, by the chapel of *Loretto* in *Italy*; and is greatly frequented by pious pilgrims from all parts of *Spaniſh America*.

3. *ZENU*, or *Cenu*, is ſituated upon a river of the ſame name, about 20 miles from the *North-Sea*, and 75 ſouth of *Carthagena*: but it is only remarkable for its ſalt, and its fiſheries.

4. *TOLU* is ſituated upon the *North-Sea*, about 76 miles ſouth-weſt of *Carthagena*; being celebrated for the excellent balſam found in its neighbourhood.

SAINT SEBASTIAN is alſo a town on the ſea-coaſt: *St. Mary* is another, at the head of a brook that runs into the river near *Madra de Popa*: and *Mopox*, or *Santa Cruz de Mopox*, lies on the weſtern bank of the ſame river: but none of theſe places are conſiderable enough to deſerve a particular deſcription.

IV. The province of *SANTA MARTHA*, or *Saint Martha*, is about 140 miles in length, from eaſt to weſt; and above 200 in breadth, from north to ſouth: being bounded by *Rio de la Hacha*, on the eaſt; by *New Granada*, on the ſouth; by the province of *Carthagena*, on the weſt; and by the

the *North-Sea* on the north. This is a very mountainous country; and, according to *Dampier*, higher land than the peak of *Teneriff*, or any other land in the known world; being ſeen near 200 miles at ſea: beſides, a chain of hills runs almoſt directly ſouth, quite through *South America* to the ſtraights of *Magellan*; thoſe, which bound *Peru* on the eaſt, and are uſually called the *Andes*, being a part of them. The climate is ſultry hot towards the ſea-coaſt: but the high mountains are covered with ſnow, extending 60 miles round the capital city, which render the inland country much colder. It rains greatly in the months of *September* and *October*, in that part of the country which lies towards the ſea-coaſt: but there is little rains in the other months; becauſe the eaſt and north-eaſt winds blow there, which drive away the clouds, and are reckoned both dry and unhealthy. The ſoil not only produces *Indian* corn, and fruits; but almoſt all manner of *European* fruits and plants come to great perfection. The country alſo affords indico, cochineal, brazil, and logwood. There are likewiſe ſeveral mines of gold and copper in the mountains: with various kinds of precious ſtones, ſuch as emeralds, ſapphires, and jaſpers; beſides marble finely veined: and, on the ſea-coaſt, there is a very rich pearl fiſhery.

THE moſt conſiderable places, are 1. *Santa Martha*; 2. *Teneriffe*; 3. *Tamalameque*; 4. *Cividad de los Reyes*; 5. *Ramada*; and, 6. *Baranca*.

1. THE city of *SANTA MARTHA*, which gives name to the province, is ſituated on a branch of the *Rio Grande*, cloſe to the *North-Sea*, in 74° 12′

12′ of weſt longitude, and 11° 35′ of north latitude. *La Martiniere* ſays, it was formerly very populous; but that it is much decayed ſince the *Spaniſh* fleets have neglected touching here; though, at preſent, it is ſuppoſed to contain about 3000 inhabitants, including *Indians*, mulattoes, and negroes. The governor of the province reſides here, with the royal officers; and it is the ſee of a biſhop, ſuffragan to the metropolitan of *New Granada*. It lies near the great mountain of *St. Martha*, in the neighbourhood of a fine fruitful plain, and in a healthy pleaſant country; having a large, ſafe, and commodious port, where there is a conſiderable trade carried on in the richeſt commodities; and there is alſo a great manufacture of cotton cloth, which the *Spaniards* diſpoſe of to the *Indians*. There are good ſalt-ponds, about 5 miles from the town; and the ſalt is tranſported into the bordering provinces. Between the city and the mountains, which are rocky, and barren, the land is even, producing ſome grapes; with abundance of oranges, lemons, and pine-apples.

THIS place is well ſituated for trade; but it has been ſo frequently plundered, that people have been afraid to ſettle there: for, in 1525, it was entirely ruined by Sir *Francis Drake*; and the next year it was plundered by Sir *Anthony Shirley*. It fell into the hands of the *Dutch*, in 1630: and was ſeveral times afterwards taken by the buccaneers; who, in 1681, ſcarcely thought it worth the pillaging.

2. *TENERIFFE* is ſeated on the eaſtern bank of the great river *Santa Martha*, below its confluence with the river *Magdalena*; about 135 miles ſouth of the city of *Santa Martha*: but the

road from that city is very difficult; ſo that *Teneriffe* is of little conſequence with regard to trade.

3. *TAMALAMEQUE*, or *Villa de la Palmas*, is about 28 miles above *Teneriffe*, on the ſame ſide of the river; a little below which the two great rivers of *Santa Martha* and *Magdalena* form their junction: but it is only conſiderable for the great number of palm-trees in its neighbourhood; and its fine paſtures, where there are plenty of cattle.

4. *CIVIDAD de los REYES*, or the *City of the Kings*, is ſeated at the eaſt-end of a valley, called *Upari*, 110 miles ſouth-eaſt of *Santa Martha*, near the head of the river *De Ceſar Pompateo*; or rather the junction of two ſmall rivers, which, when joined, run ſouth-weſt, and fall into the river *Magdalena*, about 30 miles above *Tamalameque*. The climate here is not too hot in ſummer, which begins in *December*; becauſe the eaſterly winds temper the heat of the ſun: though it rains very much in winter. The ſoil abounds with good paſturage, and is fertile in fruit: but the *Spaniards*, who are not numerous in the town, cannot bring the neighbouring *Indians* to bear the yoke patiently; as they are a warlike, revengeful, and enterprizing people.

5. *RAMADA* lies at the foot of a mountain, on the *North-Sea*, upon the mouth of the river *Piro*; in 72° 35′ of weſt longitude, and 11° of north latitude, about 100 miles eaſt of the city of *Martha*; and is remarkable for its copper mines.

6. *BARANCA del MALAMBO*, is ſituated on the eaſt-ſide of the river *Grande*, in 74° 30′ of weſt longitude, and 10° 15′ of north latitude; about

about 70 miles ſouth of *Santa Martha*; being a place of great trade; becauſe the merchandize of *New Granada* is brought down there by the river, from whence it is conveyed to the bay of *Samba*, about 45 miles below; or elſe directly to *Santa Martha*, by means of a branch of the great river, which iſſues about 10 miles above *Baranca*, and falls into the *North Sea* at *Santa Martha*.

V. The province of *RIO de la HACHA*, is bounded by the *North Sea* on the north; by the province and gulph of *Venezuela* on the ſouth and eaſt; and by the province of *Santa Martha* on the weſt. It is a ſmall territory, in the form of a peninſula, between the gulph of *Venezuela* on the eaſt, and a bay of the *North Sea* on the weſt: the middle of the peninſula being about 50 miles broad; but increaſing to double that breadth within land: and it is about 120 miles in length.

The country is both pleaſant and fruitful; abounding with *Indian* corn, herbs, and fruits: nor is it ſo ſubject to rain as towards the weſt of *Santa Martha*; though there are tornadoes, or thunder-ſhowers, which are not ſo violent, or ſo frequent, as on the coaſt of *Porto Bello*. There are ſome mines of jaſper, and chalcedonies; as alſo ſalt-pits; and a pearl fiſhery on the coaſt, wherein the *Indians* are chiefly employed: but they retain their freedom up in the open country, where they form a numerous nation. They are a ſtubborn ſort of people; with long viſages, and black hair; their noſes ſomewhat riſing in the middle, and their looks very ſtern: however, they have ſome *Spaniſh* miſſionaries among them, who have opened a trade, and rendered them more ſociable than

formerly. The land is in common among theſe *Indians*; except their houſes, and ſmall plantations, which every man maintains with ſome kind of fence about his habitation: but they may remove from one place to another as they pleaſe; and no man has a right to any land but what he poſſeſſes.

THE principal towns, are, 1. *Rio de la Hacha*; and, 2. *Rancheria*.

1. *RIO de la HACHA*, which gives name to the province, and receives its own from the river at the mouth of which it ſtands, was formerly called, by the *Spaniards*, *Neuſtra Senora de los Neuves*, and afterwards *Neuſtra Senora de los Remedios*. It is ſituated on the weſt ſide of the peninſula, upon a little hill, near the banks of the river, in 72° 20′ of weſt longitude, and 11° 6′ of north latitude, about 120 miles eaſt of the town of *Santa Martha*; and contains about 100 houſes. There is a good road for ſhips, directly oppoſite to the town; with a clean and ſandy bottom; where the *Jamaica* ſloops frequently come over to trade. This has been a ſtrong town; but was ſo often taken by the buccaneers, that the *Spaniards* abandoned it in 1682: though they ſoon ſettled it again; and have ſince fortified it, ſo as to be no longer apprehenſive of ſuch viſits. It was formerly very rich, on account of the pearl fiſheries in its neighbourhood; which are now very much decayed.

2. *RANCHERIA*, or *Rancho Reys*, is a town on the ſame coaſt; about 18 miles north-eaſt of the town of *Rio de la Hacha*; being chiefly inhabited by *Indians*, who are pearl-fiſhermen; and the pearl-banks lie about 4 or 5 leagues off from the ſhore, where

where the *Spaniards* uſed to have two barks to fiſh for the oyſters.

THERE are alſo the towns of *Portete*, near *Honda-Bay*, upon the north part of the peninſula; and *Conquibacoa*, in the mouth of the gulph of *Venezuela*, from whence an adjacent cape is denominated: but they are places of little conſequence.

VI. THE province of *VENEZUELA*, including the diſtrict of *Caracas*, is bounded by *New Andaluſia* on the eaſt; by *New Granada* on the ſouth; by *Santa Martha*, and part of *Rio de la Hacha*, on the weſt; as alſo by a part of the laſt mentioned province, and the *North Sea*, on the north. The *Spaniards* have not aſcertained the limits of the ſeveral provinces, or diſtricts, of *Terra Firma*, and more eſpecially of this province; ſo that its extent has not yet been ſet down with any accuracy: however, the beſt accounts ſay, it extends about 400 miles along the coaſt of the *North Sea*, and above 300 into the heart of the continent.

THE climate is moderately temperate; and the ſoil is ſo rich that the inhabitants have two harveſts annually, which produces great plenty of corn. There are very good meadows, well ſtocked with cows and ſheep: beſides, there is much game, and many kinds of wild beaſts. In the heart of the country are the plains of *Corora*, where the ſoil is wonderfully rich, and feeds great numbers of *European* ſheep. The country is alſo remarkable for its plantations of cocoa, ſugar, and tobacco: but it labours under one great inconvenience, which is the want of freſh water; for there are very few rivulets, though there are ſome conſiderable lakes in the province.

THE lake of *Maracabo*, which the *Spaniards* call *Lago de Nueſtra Senora*, or the *Lake of our Lady*, is about 170 miles deep; and about 40 miles broad in ſome places, in others more, but in ſome leſs: though, where it opens into the ſea, it is called the gulph of *Venezuela*. The lake abounds with ſeveral kinds of fiſh, and ſome of them very large: but, as the tide comes up, the water is brackiſh, notwithſtanding it receives many freſh-water rivers. The *Spaniards* of this province carry on a trade with thoſe of *New Granada*, by means of this lake; which grows narrower, about the middle of it, like the mouth of a gourd bottle, where the town of *Maracabo* is ſituated.

THERE is alſo another lake, called *Tocarigua*; but nothing like ſo large as that of *Maracabo*.

IT is affirmed, that the *Spaniards* behaved with great cruelty to the original inhabitants, when they invaded and conquered this country: however, the *Indians* are very numerous at preſent in this province; and, though they have been ſubjected to the *Spaniſh* ſervitude, enjoy ſome portion of happineſs.

THE principal cities, and other places, are, 1. *Maracabo*; 2. *Truxillo*; 3. *Gibraltar*; 4. *Baracoa*; 5. *New Valencia*; 6. *Venezuela*; 7. *Paragoana*; 8. *Coro*; 9. *St. Jago de Leon*; 10. *Caraccas*; 11. *Porto Cavallo*; and 12. *La Guerre*.

1. *MARACABO*, or *Maracaibo*, is pleaſantly ſituated, on the weſtern banks of the lake of the ſame name, in 71 degrees of weſt longitude, and 10 degrees of north latitude; ſix leagues from the mouth of the gulph, and about 73 miles ſouth-weſt of *Coro*. It is well built, and has a great many

many ſtately houſes, very regular, and adorned with balconies, from whence there is a proſpect of the lake, which looks like a ſea, and has three ſmall iſlands near the town. The inhabitants are about 4000; out of which there are 800 men capable of bearing arms. There is a large parochial church, an hoſpital, and four convents; beſides a noble houſe for the deputy-governor, who is dependent upon the governor of the province, whoſe reſidence is at *Coro*. Veſſels, from 25 to 30 ton, are continually coming here, with the merchandize and manufactures from the other places near the lake, particularly cocoa, indigo, ſugar, tobacco, and green hides; which are afterwards put on board the *Spaniſh* ſhips that come here to purchaſe them: beſides, this place is ſo convenient for ſhip-building, that the *Spaniards* build ſeveral veſſels here, for trading all over *America*, and even into *Spain*. This place is alſo the ſtaple for the commodities of *Merida*, and ſome other towns ſituated upon the frontiers of *New Granada*: but all the gold, ſilver, and precious ſtones, are brought from *Merida*.

THE commodities proper for the gulph of *Venezuela*, and the lake of *Maracabo*, are ſilks, linnens, wire, huſbandmens implements, with hard and haberdaſhery wares.

THE town of *Maracabo* was taken and plundered by the *French* buccaneers: as alſo by captain *Morgan*, in 1669, who demoliſhed the forts at the mouth of the gulph, and got poſſeſſion of the town without any oppoſition; though his force conſiſted only of 500 men.

2. *TRUXILLO*, is ſituated at the top of the

lake of *Maracabo*, in 8 degrees of north latitude: but is a place of little conſequence in itſelf.

3. *GIBRALTAR* ſtands in a pleaſant country, on the ſouth-eaſt part of the ſame lake, in 70° 40′ of weſt longitude, and in 8° 24′ of north latitude. Its neighbourhood abounds with plantations of cocoa, ſugar, and tobacco; as alſo with cedar-trees, and other valuable timber, fit for building ſhips or houſes: but this town was alſo plundered by captain *Morgan*, as well as *Maracabo*.

4. *BARACOA* lies on the ſame ſide of the lake, about 25 miles north of *Gibraltar*: but is of little note.

5. *NEW VALENCIA* is ſeated in the heart of the province, at the north end of the lake of *Tocarigua*.

6. *VENEZUELA* is a ſmall town, lower down the lake, almoſt oppoſite to the town of *Maracabo*, in 70° 15′ of weſt longitude, and 10° 16′ of north latitude: but this is not the capital of the province; for that lies on the ſea coaſt, and is alſo called *Venezuela*, as well as *Coro*.

7. *PARAGOANA* lies on the gulph, about 50 miles weſt of *Coro*: but is of no conſideration.

8. *CORO*, or *Venezuela*, is ſituated on the *North Sea*, upon the north-eaſt part of the peninſula, in 69° 50′ of weſt longitude, and 10° 40′ of north latitude; about 54 miles ſouth-eaſt of *Cape St. Roman*. It is the capital of the province, the reſidence of the governor, the ſeat of the courts of judicature, and the ſee of a biſhop, who is ſuffragan to the archbiſhop of *St. Domingo* in *Hiſpaniola*: but it is not remarkable either for its commerce or buildings; though it is ſaid to derive its name of

Venezuela,

Venezuela, or *Little Venice*, from the ſimilarity of its ſituation to the city of *Venice* in *Italy*: for, like that, it ſtands upon a peninſula, near a gulph, to which it communicates its name.

9. *St. JAGO de LEON*, is about 120 miles ſouth-eaſt of *Coro*, and about 18 ſouth of the ſea. It is ſometimes the reſidence of the governor of the province: but it was taken by the *Engliſh*, in 1595, after they had made themſelves maſters of the town of *Caraccas*.

FROM the town of *St. Jago de Leon*, the country of the *Caraccas*, or *Curaccas*, extends as far as *Cape Blanco*; being ſo called from the native *Indians*, who bore that name: but it is under the government of *Venezuela*. This coaſt, according to *Dampier*, is remarkable upon ſeveral accounts; being a continued tract of high ridges of hills, and ſmall vallies, intermixed for about 20 leagues, ſtretching eaſt and weſt: though, in ſuch a manner, that they alternately run pointing upon the ſhore from ſouth to north. Some of the vallies are about 4 or 5 furlongs wide; and others not above one or two: but there are few of them above 4 or 5 miles long from the ſea; becauſe a long ridge of mountains runs at that diſtance from the coaſt, almoſt parallel to it, joining thoſe ſhorter ridges, and cloſing up the ſouth-end of the vallies, which lie open to the ſea at the north ends, and make ſo many little ſandy bays, that are the only landing places on the coaſt. Both the main ridge, and theſe ſhorter ribs, are ſuch very high land, that the vallies make little appearance about 3 or 4 leagues off at ſea; where all looks like one continued mountain: which is plainly ſeen on ſhipboard at the iſles of

Rocas,

Roques, and the iſles of *Aves*; the former being about 15, and the latter about 20 leagues diſtant: though, when ſhips are at anchor on the coaſt, thoſe iſlands are not to be ſeen; yet, from the tops of the hills, they appear, at no great diſtance, like ſo many hillocks in a pond. Theſe hills are all barren; except the lower ſides of them, which are covered with ſome of the ſame rich black mould that fills the vallies, and is very good. There is a ſtrong red clay in ſome of the vallies; which, in general, are extremely fertile, well watered, and populouſly inhabited by *Spaniards* and their negroes; who have maize and plantains for their ſupport; with *Indian* fowls, and hogs: but the principal product of theſe vallies, and the only commodity vended in the country, is the cocoa-nut, for making chocolate.

THE cocoa, or cacao, is a kind of nut, about the ſize of a moderate almond; being the ſeed, or fruit, of a tree of the ſame name, much reſembling the cherry-tree, and growing in ſeveral parts of *America*; particularly in the provinces of *Guatimala* and *Nicaragua*, in *Mexico*; *Maragnan*, in the north part of *Brazil*; in ſome of the *Caribbee* iſlands, and *Jamaica*; as alſo in the iſles of *Magdalen*, in the gulph of *St. Lawrence* in *Canada*. The largeſt ſort of the cocoa-tree, according to *Dampier*, is about a foot and a half thick; being 7 or 8 feet high to the branches, which are large, and ſpreading like an oak; with a pretty thick, ſmooth, dark-green leaf, ſhaped like that of a plumb-tree, and larger. The nuts are incloſed in cods, as big as both the fiſts of a man put together; at the broad end of which, there is a ſmall, tough, limber

limber ſtalk, whereby they hang from the body of the tree, in all parts of the greater branches from top to bottom, ſcattered at irregular diſtances, eſpecially at the joints, where they hang thickeſt; though never on the ſmaller boughs. There are generally about 20 or 30 cods upon a well-bearing tree: of which there are two crops annually; the one in *December*, and the beſt in *June*: there are ſometimes 100 nuts in a cod, which is about half an inch thick; being neither ſpongy, nor woody; but of a ſubſtance between both, brittle, and harder than the rind of the lemon; like which its ſurface is grained, or knobbed; yet more cloſe and unequal. The cods are at firſt of a dark green on the ſide next the tree; though the ſide next the ſun is of a muddy red: but, as they grow ripe, the green turns to a fine bright yellow, and the muddy to a more beautiful lively red, very pleaſant to the eye. They neither ripen, nor are gathered at once: for, when the ſeaſon happens, the overſeers of the plantations, go every day about, for three weeks, or a month together, to ſee which are turned yellow, and ſeldom cut above one from a tree. As ſoon as the cods are gathered, they are laid in ſeveral heaps to ſweat; when the planters burſt the ſhell with their hands, and take out the nuts, which are the only ſubſtance they contain; having no ſtalk, or pith, among them; and being very cloſely ſtowed together, more or leſs in number, according to the proportion of the nut, which varies in bigneſs: and, when the nuts are taken out, they are dried in the ſun, upon mats ſpread on the ground: after this, they require no more care; having a thin hard ſkin, and much oil, which preſerves

preſerves them ſo well, that they receive no prejudice from ſalt-water. The plantations are called cocoa-walks, in one of which, there are commonly from 500 to 2000 trees; the young ones being ſheltered for 2 or 3 years from the weather, by ſetting plantains, which are deſtroyed when the cocoa-trees are of a good body, and able to endure the heat. Of this nut, with the addition of vanilla, and ſome other ingredients, the *Spaniards*, and other *Europeans* after their example, prepare a cake; which is diluted in hot water, and makes a delicious drink, called chocolate: but, in ſome parts of *America*, particularly in the bay of *Campeachy*, the cocoa-nuts are uſed by the *Indians* for money; 12, or 14, being held equivalent to a *Spaniſh* rial, or 5*d*. $\frac{1}{2}$ ſterling: and ſweet-meats are made of cocoa in the *Carribbee* iſlands. The exceſſive duties in *Spain*, upon this commodity, made the prime coſt exceed the value of the cocoa, by a third part, to the *Spaniſh* merchants; which obliged them to abandon this commerce, and reſign it to foreigners. However, to prevent theſe, and other injurious conſequences, his Catholic majeſty, in 1720, publiſhed a decree, for the diminution of thoſe duties, and the encouragement of this commerce by the hands of the *Spaniards*; which will be taken notice of in the firſt diſſertation.

THE coaſt of the *Caraccas* is ſubject to dry winds, at different ſeaſons of the year, and generally north-weſt: tho', in other reſpects, it enjoys a ſweet, clear air, and is very healthy. The *Spaniards* uſed to have look-outs, or ſcouts, upon the hills, with breaſt-works in the vallies; and moſt of

of their negroes are furniſhed with arms for the defence of the bays: but the *Dutch* carried on ſo profitable a trade, that *Dampier* ſays, he has known three or four great ſhips at a time on the coaſt, each of them mounted with 40 or 50 guns; which carried there all ſorts of *European* commodities, eſpecially linnen; making great returns, chiefly in ſilver and cocoa: ſo that the ſame author obſerves, with regret, that none of his own countrymen found the way there directly from *England:* adding, that the *Jamaica-men* traded there, and found it very profitable; though they carried *Engliſh* commodities at ſecond or third hand.

10. *CARACCAS*, the chief town of the diſtrict, is ſituated in 67° 20′ of weſt longitude, and 10° 10′ of north latitude; about 56 miles north-weſt of *St. Jago de Leon*. *Dampier* ſays, the town lies a good way within land, and is a large wealthy place, inhabited by the proprietors of thoſe cocoa-walks, which are in the vallies along the ſhore, and worked by negroes, under the management of overſeers. It ſtands in a large ſavannah country, abounding with cattle; and is reported to be three times as large as *Corunna* in *Galicia:* but the way to it is very ſteep and craggy, over a ridge of hills, that cloſes up the valley and partition-walks of the cocoa coaſt; which is remarkable for the beſt nuts in *America*.

11. *PORTO CAVALLO*, or *Porto Cabelo*, is a port town on the *Caraccas* coaſt, ſituated in 67° 50′ of weſt longitude, and 10° 12′ of north latitude; about 25 miles north-eaſt of *St. Jago de Leon*, and 31 ſouth-weſt of the town of *Caraccas*. This port is inconſiderable for the number of its inhabitants;

bitants; yet they carry on ſome trade with the province of *Guatimala*, according to monſieur *Savary*, who was entirely miſtaken with regard to the ſituation and nature of this town.

12. *LA GUERRE*, *La Guaire*, or *La Guiara*, is about 40 miles eaſt of *Porto Cavallo*, and 15 weſt of *Cape Blanco*, ſituated cloſe by the ſea, and is one of the principal places upon the coaſt, though it has a bad harbour; which, however, is much frequented by *Spaniſh* ſhipping; beſides, the *Dutch* and *Engliſh* anchor in the ſandy bays, that lie interſperſed on the coaſts, in the mouths of ſeveral vallies, where there is very good riding. The town has a ſtrong fort; but is open to the ſea; and was taken by captain *Wright*, in the laſt century, with a few privateers: though commodore *Knowles* miſcarried before it, on the 18th of *February* 1743, when he had eight men of war, and three ſloops, under his command; with 2300 ſailors and marines, beſides 400 of *Dalzell*'s regiment on board: he had 92 men killed, and 308 wounded: however, the *Spaniards* had little reaſon to be elated; as their town and fortifications were greatly damaged, with the loſs of 700 men.

COMMODORE *Knowles* refitted his ſquadron at *Curaçao*, and attacked *Porto Cavallo*, on the 17th of *April* following; when, after ſilencing ſome batteries near the harbour, 1200 men were landed to aſſault the caſtle; who were ſuddenly put into great diſorder, and returned with the utmoſt precipitation. On the 24th, the attack was renewed from the ſhips: but, after the loſs of 200 men, the commodore was obliged to deſiſt from the enterprize, and return to *Jamaica*.

VII. THE

VII. The province of *NEW GRANADA*, *Santa Fè*, or *Caſtilla del Oro*, is bounded by *Popayan*, and part of *Carthagena*, on the weſt; by the provinces of *Saint Martha*, and *Venezuela*, on the north; by *New Andaluſia*, and *Guiana*, on the eaſt; and by the country of the *Amazons*, on the ſouth: being 340 miles in length, from north to ſouth; and as many in breadth, from eaſt to weſt.

This large inland country affords a great variety of hills and fruitful vallies; being well watered with navigable rivers, and eſteemed as healthful as any part of *Terra Firma*. The mountains have mines of gold, ſilver, and emeralds; abounding alſo with cedar trees, and other good timber. The vallies are not proper for ſheep: but there is no want of horſes, oxen, hogs, goats, and veniſon: beſides, there is plenty of fiſh and fowl; as alſo of corn and fruits, both *American* and *European*; with great quantities of guiacum, balm, and ſeveral other valuable gums and drugs.

The principal rivers, are 1. the *Rio Grande*, or *Magdalena*, which runs directly acroſs the province: and, 2. the river *Oroonoko*, which runs through all the eaſtern part of it.

The province is ſurrounded by ſeveral *Indian* nations, who have never been ſubdued, and inhabit a very hot country: though, in general, *New Granada* is cold, or at leaſt temperate; being firſt diſcovered, in 1536, by *Gonzalvo Ximenes de Queſada*; who reduced ſeveral of the *Indian* caziques, and called their country the new kingdom of *Granada*; becauſe he was a native of *Old Granada* in *Spain*.

The principal places are, 1. *Santa Fè de Bogota*;

gota; 2. *Trinidad*; 3. *Tunia*; 4. *Pampeluna*; 5. *Truxillo*; 6. *Tucuyo*; and, 7. *Merida*.

1. *SANTA FE de BOGOTA*, is the capital of the province, and of the whole *Terra Firma*; ſituated on the banks of the lake *Gutavita*, near the river *Magdalena*, in 73° of weſt longitude, and 3° 35′ of north latitude; about 180 miles eaſt of *Bonaventura* bay in the *South Sea*. It is adorned with fine buildings, and is very populous; being the reſidence of the governor, the ſee of an archbiſhop, and the ſeat of an univerſity.

2. *TRINIDAD*, or *Trinity*, lies about 23 miles north-eaſt of *Santa Fè*, and about 30 miles eaſt of the river *Magdalena*. It is remarkable for having ſome quarries of fine marble; as alſo ſome rocks of cryſtal, emeralds, and other precious ſtones: but the inhabitants are frequently diſturbed by the bordering *Indians*, who are of very turbulent and warlike diſpoſitions.

3. *TUNIA*, is the capital of a diſtrict of the ſame name, which has ſeveral mines of gold and emeralds. It ſtands on the top of a mountain, about 80 miles eaſt of *Santa Fè*, and ſerves to keep the neighbouring *Indians* in awe. It has two convents, and is the principal place of trade in the whole country.

4. *PAMPELUNA*, is ſituated 140 miles north-eaſt of *Santa Fè*; and has ſome gold mines in its neighbourhood; with rich paſtures, that feed great flocks of ſheep.

5. *TRUXILLO*, or *Noſtra Senora de la Paz*, is 215 miles north-eaſt of *Santa Fè*, and 125 ſouth of the lake of *Maracabo*: but there is a village of the ſame name, on the ſouthermoſt bank of that lake;

lake; where the inhabitants of *Truxillo* town carry meal, biſcuit, bacon, and other proviſions, which they embark on the lake twice a year, in *May* and *November*; from whence it is tranſported into the other provinces of *South America*.

6. *TUCUYO*, is 320 miles north-eaſt of *Santa Fè*, and 160 ſouth from the neareſt coaſt of the *North-Sea*; being ſituated in a valley, ſurrounded with mountains. It is about half a league in length, and as much in breadth; but it is divided into two, by a river which runs through it, and falls into that of *St. Pedro*. The ſoil in its neighbourhood produces plentiful crops of ſugar, wheat, and fruit: the woods abound with game, and particularly ſtags: but the inhabitants principally apply themſelves to the feeding of cattle, as cows, ſheep, and eſpecially horſes. The *Indians*, in this part of the country, are a warlike people, armed with bows and arrows, large clubs, and ſtones: though ſome of them pay a tribute of maize to the *Spaniards*, which they bring to *Tucuyo*.

7. *MERIDA*, lies almoſt on the limits which ſeparate *New Granada* from *Venezuela*, about 260 miles north-eaſt of *Santa Fè*, and 54 ſouth of the lake of *Maracabo*. It has ſome gold mines in its neighbourhood; and the ſoil abounds with all ſorts of fruit, which, as well as other merchandizes, the inhabitants carry to *Truxillo*, on the lake, once or twice a year, for ſale.

THERE are alſo the towns of *Marguetta*, *Velez*, *Placentia*, *El Deſembaradero*, *St. Chriſtophal*, and others of inferior note: but the accounts of all theſe places are very imperfect; becauſe this is an inland country, ſeldom viſited by foreigners; and be-

cauſe the *Spaniards* induſtriouſly conceal the produce of it from other nations, for fear they ſhould diſturb them in the poſſeſſion of theſe valuable acquiſitions.

VIII. THE province of *NEW ANDALUSIA*, including the diſtricts of *Cumana* and *Paria*, is bounded by the *North-Sea*, on the north; by the river *Oroonoko*, on the eaſt; by part of *Guiana*, and of *New Granada*, on the ſouth; and alſo by part of *New Granada*, and of *Venezuela*, on the weſt: extending about 500 miles in length, from north to ſouth; and about 270 in breadth, from eaſt to weſt.

THE inland part of this country is mountainous, and covered with woods; intermixed with vallies and meadows, that yield corn and paſturage: but this province is not ſo fruitful, or ſo full of towns and inhabitants, as that of *Venezuela*: and it is the moſt eaſterly of all the *Spaniſh* provinces; becauſe the *Spaniards* have few ſettlements in *Guiana*, though they uſually include it in their *Terra Firma*. The produce of *New Andaluſia*, conſiſts chiefly in ſugar and tobacco; brazil wood, and other woods for dying; with ſome gums, and drugs; as alſo other valuable timber.

THE ſtreight and gulph of *Paria* lie on the north-eaſt part of *Andaluſia*; and the ſtreight is formed by the iſland of *Trinity*.

THE principal river which waters this province, is the *Oroonoko*, whoſe ſource is near that of *Magdalena*, in the province of *Quito* in *Peru*, almoſt under the equator. It firſt runs to the eaſtward, and then turns to the north; receiving ſeveral other rivers in its courſe, which ſome

have computed to be about 3000 miles; though it is made much leſs by others, who alſo ſay, that it riſes in *Popayan* *: but, as this is ſo conſiderable a river, it deſerves a more particular deſcription; which has been extracted, as follows, from writers of the beſt merit, and maps of the greateſt credit.

The *Oroonoko*, or *Aranaca*; called alſo by the *French Oronoque*, or *Orinoque*; is formed of two principal rivers; the moſt conſiderable of which is at firſt called *Pato*; having its ſource in *Popayan*, in the mountains that ſtand to the ſouth of *Santa Fè de Bogota*; and, at the foot of thoſe mountains, it waters a town called, by the *Spaniards*, *Saint Juan de los Lanos*. It runs a great way eaſtward, winding and turning about to the north-eaſt; and, in five degrees of north latitude, it is joined by the river *San Pedro*, which comes from the northward, near the frontiers of *Venezuela*. The united rivers are called *Oroonoko*; and, at their junction, form a conſiderable iſland, called *Acamacori*; beyond which, to the eaſtward, is a large lake formed by theſe rivers, named *Caſipi*, containing two ſmall iſlands. The *Oroonoko*, lower down, receives the *Vararacayari*, *Coyrama*, *Maryowapanaha*, and ſome others from *Guiana*; as alſo three ſmaller rivers from *New Andaluſia*; continuing its courſe north-eaſt to the town of *Saint Thome*, which ſtands on its eaſtern banks; and ſo runs to the *North-Sea*, where it diſembogues itſelf, in nine degrees of north latitude, near the iſland of *Trinity*; and forms ſeveral little iſlands at its mouth, where it is above 100 miles over. Mr. *Sparrey*, who was

* See this Volume, p. 301.

left in the adjoining country by Sir *Walter Raleigh*, in 1595, ſays, this river is alſo called *Baraquan*, or *Paria*, and falls into the ſea by ſixteen mouths; though what he calls mouths are the ſtreights between the iſlands, that lie near the ſhore, at the entrance of the river; the chief of which is the fartheſt ſouth, and is called *Capuri*: but there is no good modern account of the *Oroonoko*; becauſe it is not much frequented for trade. The river *Europa* is formed by two branches which meet in 8° 40′ of north latitude, and the united ſtream falls into the gulph of *Paria*, in 9° 20′ of north latitude, oppoſite the iſland of *Trinity*. There is alſo another river called *Ouarabache*, which riſes in 9° 25′, and alſo falls into the gulph of *Paria*: but neither of theſe rivers are of any importance.

THE principal towns are, 1. *Cumana*; 2. *Verina*; and 3. *Saint Thome*.

1. *CUMANA*, *Comana*, or *New Corduba*, the capital of this province, which is ſometimes called by the ſame name, is ſituated in 65° 30′ of weſt longitude, and 9° 55′ of north latitude, nine miles ſouth of the *North-Sea*, and 80 ſouth-weſt of the iſland of *Margaretta*. It was built by the *Spaniards* in 1520, and is defended by a ſtrong caſtle: being ſo much ſurrounded by hills and woods, that it cannot be diſcerned till a ſhip enters the harbour: and it is a place of ſuch ſtrength, that the buccaneers were repulſed, when they attacked it, in 1670.

2. *VERINA* is a ſmall town, ſituated on the ſouth-weſt part of the gulph of *Curiaco*, about 60 miles eaſt of *Cumana*; and is remarkable for its plantations of excellent tobacco.

3. *SAINT*

3. *SAINT THOME*, or *Saint Thomas*, is alſo included in the province of *New Andaluſia*; though it is ſituated on the eaſt ſide, and near the mouth, of the river *Oroonoko*, in the country of *Surinam*, at the top of a peninſula formed by that river, and another called *Cuyrama*, in 62° 10′ of weſt longitude, and 8° 26′ of north latitude: being the only conſiderable ſettlement which the *Spaniards* have to the eaſtward of the *Oroonoko*. Sir *Walter Raleigh* took this town with the forces which he carried over to plant a colony in *Guiana*: though it proved fatal to that illuſtrious man; who loſt his ſon in the enterprize, and was himſelf afterwards beheaded in *England*, on a complaint preferred againſt him to king *James* I. by the *Spaniſh* ambaſſador: but the death of ſuch a ſubject, and on ſuch an occaſion, will always be a diſgrace to the annals of that monarch, and even a reproach to *England* itſelf. The *Spaniards* were then very apprehenſive, that the *Engliſh* would fix a ſettlement in this country, as it lay in the neighbourhood of ſome of their gold mines, which they were beginning to work: but theſe mines never anſwered their expectation; nor have any others, of any conſequence, been diſcovered in this province.

THERE are alſo the towns of *St. Jago*, and *St. Joſepho*; the one on the north-eaſt part of the gulph of *Curiaco*; and the other at the mouth of the bay *del Drago*: beſides which, there are the towns of *Comanagotta*, 23 miles weſt of *Cumana*; and *Otchierado*, about the ſame diſtance north-weſt of *Comanagotta*: but none of theſe are of any conſideration.

THE *Spaniards* pretend to have a right to thoſe countries ſtretching along this coaſt to the ſouth; though they have no ſettlements there: which, however, ſhould not be eſteemed ſo great a wonder, as that other *European* nations ſhould leave ſuch a fine country to a nation, ſo incapable of converting it to the utility of mankind.

SECTION II.

A deſcription of the ſeveral iſlands, on the coaſts of TERRA FIRMA, *both in the* South *and* North Seas.

THE principal iſlands along the coaſt of the general province of *Terra Firma*, are, 1. *Gorgonilla*; 2. *Gallo*; 3. *Gorgona*; 4. *Palmas*; and 5. *King's Iſlands*, or *Pearl Keys*, in the *South-Sea*: as alſo, 1. The *Baſtimentoes*; 2. the *Samballas*; 3. the iſle of *Pines*; 4. *Golden* iſland; 5. *Tortuga*; 6. *Forta*; 7. *Friend*'s iſland; 8. *Baru*; 9. *Arenas*; 10. *Monjes*; 11. *Aruba*; 12. *Curacoa*; 13. *Bonaire*; 14. *Tortuga*; 15. *Margaretta*; 16. *Trinity*; and 17. *Oroonoko* iſlands, in the *North Sea*.

1. THE iſland of *GORGONILLA* lies in 77° 46′ of weſt longitude, and 2° 20′ of north latitude, oppoſite to *Point Manglares*, on the coaſt of *Popayan*, and about 7 leagues ſouth-weſt from the continent. It is a ſmall iſland; but has a river, where ſhips may water, and anchor on a clean ground.

2. THE

2. The iſland of *GALLO* lies in a deep bay, in 77° 38′ of weſt longitude, and 2° 40′ of north latitude; about 7 leagues north-eaſt of *Gorgonilla*, and as many weſt of *Point Manglares*. There is good riding for ſhips on the north-eaſt part of this bay; and the land is pretty high, well furniſhed with good timber, as alſo with ſeveral ſprings of freſh-water: beſides, there are ſome other ſandy bays, where a ſhip may be cleaned; but the water is ſhallow all round the iſland; at the north and ſouth points of which are ſeveral rocks; ſome looking like barns, and others like ſhips under ſail.

3. The iſland of *GORGONA* lies in 77° 28′ of weſt longitude, and 3° 5′ of north latitude, about 7 leagues north-eaſt of *Gallo*, and about 8 north-weſt from the continent. It is about 6 miles long, and 3 broad; being very remarkable, on account of two ſaddles, or riſings and fallings, on the top. It is a deep water round the iſland, and no anchoring but at the weſt end, where there is a ſmall ſandy bay, and good landing. The ſoil is black, and deep, in the low ground: though it is a kind of red clay on the ſide of the high land. The iſland is very well furniſhed with ſeveral ſorts of large trees, which are green and flouriſhing all the year; for the rains are almoſt perpetual hereabouts; and many ſmall brooks iſſue from the high land. There are a great many little black monkies upon the iſland; as alſo ſome *Indian* conies, and a few ſnakes. At the eaſt and weſt ends are two other ſmall iſlands, which look white with the dung of wild fowls; where many periwincles and muſcles are to be had at low water; as alſo

great plenty of pearl-oyſters, which grow to the rocks, in four, five, or ſix fathom water, by beards, or ſmall roots, like a muſcle.

4. THE iſland of *PALMAS*, lies about two leagues weſt from the continent, and about 19 north-eaſt of *Gorgona*. But all theſe iſlands are uninhabited: though they have been frequently viſited by the buccaneers, and other adventurers, to take in wood and water, careen their ſhips, and wait for *Spaniſh* prizes; becauſe theſe iſlands lie directly in the road from *Peru* to *Panama*.

5. THE *KING's ISLANDS*, or *Pearl Keys*, are a numerous cluſter of low woody iſlands, almoſt in the middle of the bay of *Panama*; ſtretching about 14 leagues in length, from the ſouth-eaſt to the north-weſt. The northermoſt of them, called *Patheque*, or *Pathea*, is about 12 leagues ſouth-eaſt of *Panama*: and the ſouthermoſt of them, called *St. Paul*, is 12 leagues north-weſt of *Point Garrachina*: but the whole range of theſe iſlands are generally about 7 leagues diſtant from the main land of *Darien*. Between them and the main, is a channel 6 or 7 leagues wide, where there is a good depth of water, and anchoring all the way: though the iſlands border ſo thick on each other, that they make ſeveral ſmall, deep, narrow channels, only fit for boats to paſs between moſt of them: and, at the ſouth-end, about a league from the iſland of *St. Paul*, there is a good place for ſhips to careen, or hale aſhore.

CHEPELIO is the moſt pleaſant iſland in the bay; being about a mile long, and almoſt as broad; lying a league from the main, and 7 leagues from *Panama*; having ſeveral ſorts of delicate fruits

fruits planted there; ſuch as ſappadilloes, which are much like bergamot-pears; avogato-pears, as big as a large lemon; mammees; mammee-ſappotas, which is accounted the principal fruit in the *Weſt Indies*; the ſtar-apple, of the ſize of a large apple; and plantains.

THE iſland of *Tapago*, is about ſix leagues ſouth of *Panama*; being a large mountainous place, about three miles in length, and two in breadth: but the north ſide of it makes ſo very pleaſant an appearance, that it ſeems to be a garden of fruit-trees, incloſed with many other high trees; for there are ſeveral plantains and bananoes that thrive well from the foot to the middle of the mountain; and there are many cocoa-nut trees cloſe to the ſea, which afford a very agreeable proſpect: beſides, there is a fine ſmall brook of freſh water, that ſprings out of the ſide of the mountain, and, gliding through the grove of fruit-trees, falls into the ſea, on the north ſide.

THERE is a ſmall pleaſant iſland on the north-weſt ſide of *Tabago*, called *Tabogilla*; and another about a mile from it on the north-eaſt, with a good channel between them. Thoſe called *Perico*, are three ſmall iſlands, which lie before the city of *Panama*, about three miles from it; where the great ſhips lie at anchor, becauſe there is not depth of water to approach nearer the city. There are alſo the iſlands of *Otoque*, *Chuche*, *Gallera*, *Quicara*, *Sebaco*, and *Quibo*: but the laſt is the moſt remarkable, and was the place where commodore *Anſon* wooded and watered, in *December*, 1741, in his way from *Paita*, to *Acapulco*.

THE

THE iſland of *Quibo*, the ſouth-eaſt point of which is in 7° 20′ of north latitude, is extremely convenient for wooding and watering: for the trees grow cloſe to the high-water mark; and a large rapid ſtream of freſh water runs over the ſandy beach into the ſea. The whole iſland is of a moderate height, excepting one part; and conſiſts of a continued wood ſpread all over the ſurface of the country, which preſerves its verdure throughout the whole year. Among the other wood which commodore *Anſon* found upon the iſland, there was abundance of caſſia, and a few lime-trees: but there were no other birds than parrots, parroquets, and mackaws; of which laſt there were prodigious flights: there were many herds of deers; with plenty of guanos, and monkeys: though the *Spaniſh* priſoners aſſerted, that this iſland alſo abounded with tigers; and that a moſt miſchievous ſerpent, called the flying ſnake, was frequently found in the woods, which they ſaid darted itſelf from the boughs of trees, on either man or beaſt that came in its way; and whoſe ſting they believed to be inevitable death. Beſides theſe dangerous land animals, the ſea, hereabouts, is infeſted with great numbers of alligators, of an extraordinary ſize: and the *Engliſh* ſailors often obſerved, a large kind of flat-fiſh, jumping a conſiderable height out of the water; which they ſuppoſed to be the fiſh that is reported to deſtroy the pearl-divers, by claſping them in its fins, as they riſe from the bottom; but the divers are now always armed with a ſharp knife, which they ſtick into the belly of the fiſh whenever they are entangled, and thereby diſengage themſelves from its embraces.

COM-

COMMODORE *Anſon*, and his people, ſaw great heaps of ſhells of fine mother of pearl, ſcattered up and down in different places; which were the remains left by the pearl-fiſhers of *Panama*: for the pearl-oyſters abound very much at *Quibo*; being uſually large, but extremely tough and unpalatable.

THE oyſters moſt productive of pearls, are thoſe found in conſiderable depths; and the pearl partakes of the quality of the bottom on which the oyſter is lodged: ſo that, if the bottom is muddy, the pearl is dark and ill coloured. The taking up oyſters in great depths, for the ſake of the pearls, is a work performed by negro ſlaves, of which the inhabitants of *Panama*, and of the neighbouring coaſt, formerly kept great numbers, who were carefully trained to the buſineſs: but theſe are ſaid not to be complete divers, till they have, by degrees, been able to protract their ſtay under water ſo long, that the blood guſhes out from their noſe, mouth, and ears. For it is the tradition of the country, that, when this accident has once befallen them, they dive for the future with much greater facility than before: and, as the bleeding generally ſtops of itſelf, they have no apprehenſion, either that any inconvenience can attend it; or that there is any probability of their ever being ſubjected to it again.

THESE iſlands are of great uſe to mariners who frequent the *South-Seas*; though they are uninhabited: for they belong to the citizens of *Panama*; who keep negroes here to plant and cultivate them, at proper ſeaſons; as alſo to ſow rice in ſome of the ſmall iſlands: but the large ones are wholly uncultivated,

uncultivated, and overrun with weeds; notwithſtanding their ſoil ſeems to be productive of any tropical vegetables.

THE iſlands of *Terra Firma*, along the coaſt of the *North-Sea*, are as follow.

1. THE *BASTIMENTOES* are a few ſmall uninhabited iſlands, at the mouth of the bay of *Nombre de Dios*, about half a mile from the coaſt of *Terra Firma proper*, and about five leagues eaſt of *Porto Bello*. They are all of them pretty high, and cloathed with woods: there is alſo a ſpring of good water upon one of them; and they all together make a very good harbour, between them and the iſthmus: but they are chiefly remarkable for being the ſtation of the *Britiſh* ſquadron, commanded by admiral *Hoſier*, in 1727, when his orders reſtricted him from taking and deſtroying the *Spaniſh* fleet and galleons.

2. THE *SAMBALLAS*, or *Samballoes*, are a great multitude of little uninhabited iſlands, ſcattered in a row, at very unequal diſtances, along the eaſt part of the iſthmus, from *Nombre de Dios* to the iſle of *Pines*; ſome being three or four miles from the ſhore, others leſs, and the ſame diſtance from one another; which, with the hills and woods of the adjacent ſhore, make a delightful landſcape off at ſea. There are ſeveral navigable channels between the iſlands; and the ſea is alſo navigable from end to end, between the whole range and the iſthmus; with good anchorage every where, in hard ſandy ground; as alſo good landing on the iſlands, and on the main. Let the winds be how they will, there is always a good place for any number of ſhips to ride at, on the inſide of ſome

of

of theſe little keys, or iſlands: on which account, the *Samballas*, and particularly *La Sound's Key*, or *Springer's Key*, were the greateſt rendezvous of the buccaneers on this coaſt: for they not only afford ſhell-fiſh, and other refreſhments; but are covered with variety of trees, yield ſome wells of freſh water, and have good ſhelter for careening.

3. THE iſland of *PINES* is a ſmall uninhabited place, about three leagues eaſt of the *Samballas*, and is very remarkable off at ſea; being covered with tall trees, and having a fine rivulet of freſh water.

4. *GOLDEN ISLAND* lies at the mouth of the gulph of *Darien*, about four leagues eaſt of the iſle of *Pines*. It is ſmall, ſteep, rocky, covered with trees or ſhrubs, and uninhabited; having a fine deep channel between it and the continent. This iſland was recommended to the *Scotch Eaſt India* company, as a proper place for eſtabliſhing their firſt colony in *America*: but the adventurers found it too barren a ſpot, and were obliged to remove to the oppoſite ſhore; which they were ſoon afterwards compelled to abandon, and to relinquiſh their enterprize, as has been above related *. There is another low, ſwampy iſland, between this and the iſle of *Pines*; which is ſo much beſet with mangroves, that it is difficult to go aſhore; and ſhips can hardly paſs between this iſland and the iſthmus, even at high water.

5. 6. 7. 8. *TORTUGA*, *Forta*, *Friend's Iſland*, and *Baru*, are four little iſlands, lying ſcattered among ſome others, at a ſmall diſtance from each other; between 9° and 9° 48′ of north latitude: the

* See this Volume, p. 454.

the iſland of *Tortuga* being about 18 leagues eaſt of *Golden* iſland. 9. *Arenas* is a ſmall iſland oppoſite to the mouth of the river *Magdalena*; about 10 leagues north of the continent, and about 23 north-eaſt of *Carthagena*. 10. *Monjes* are ſmall iſlands at the mouth of the gulph of *Venezuela*. But none of all theſe iſlands are inhabited, or of any conſequence.

11. 12. 13. 14. *ARUBA*, *Curacoa*, *Bonaire*, and *Tortuga*, with *Margaretta*, *Trinity*, and ſome other inferior places, ſuch as *Orchilla*, *Roca*, and *Aves*; are what properly form the *Little Antilles* iſlands; being ſituated between 51° 28′, and 69° 40′ of weſt longitude; and between 9° 37′, and 12° 38′ of north latitude; extending from the gulph of *Venezuela* to the gulph of *Paria*: ſome of them being about 40 leagues north of the coaſt of *Venezuela*, and others very near it: but none of them are poſſeſſed by the *Spaniards*, except *Margaretta* and *Trinity*, for the others are ſubject to the *Dutch*, and ſhould be treated of under the grand diviſion of the *American* iſlands.

15. THE iſland of *MARGARETTA*, or *Santa Margareta de las Caraccas*, is ſituated between 64° and 64° 20′ of weſt longitude, and between 10° 54′ and 11° 15′ of north latitude; oppoſite to the gulph of *Caracca*, or *Curiaco*, on the coaſt of the *Caraccas*, from which it is ſeparated by a ſtreight, about ſeven or eight leagues over. It is about 48 miles in length from eaſt to weſt, and about 24 in breadth from north to ſouth; being about 108 miles in circumference; and was diſcovered by *Chriſtopher Columbus*, in 1498, when he made his third voyage to *America*. The iſland is very

fertile

fertile in maize, fruit, and many *European* vegetables: but the inhabitants are obliged to import all the water they drink from the continent; and there is little wood, or paſture, on the iſland; though what there is, has a perpetual verdure, and affords an agreeable proſpect. This iſland is under the command of a particular governor, who has his reſidence at the town of *Monpadre*, which is on the eaſt cape, and is defended by a good fort: but there is no other place of conſequence in the country. The iſland was formerly remarkable for its fine pearl-fiſhery; which ſeems to be exhauſted at preſent. The *Dutch* took *Margaretta*, in 1620, when they demoliſhed the caſtle, and plundered the town: upon which, the *Spaniards* retired to the continent; leaving the iſland to be inhabited only by the native *Indians*, and a few mulattoes, who were frequently plundered and carried off by the buccaneers.

16. THE iſland of *TRINITY*, or *Trinidad*, is ſituated near the mouth of the river *Oroonoko*, oppoſite to the eaſt end of the province of *New Andaluſia*; from which it is diſtant about three leagues, and 38 leagues ſouth-weſt of the iſland of *Margaretta*. It is about 90 miles long, and 60 broad: lying between 60° 26′, and 62° 20′ of weſt longitude; and between 9° 37′, and 10° 27′ of north latitude; the north end of it being about 12 leagues ſouth eaſt of the iſland of *Tabago*, which is one of the neutral iſlands in diſpute between the crowns of *Great Britain* and *France*.

THIS iſland was alſo diſcovered by *Chriſtopher Columbus*, in 1498: but the air is eſteemed unhealthful; though the ſoil is tolerably fertile, producing

ducing ſugar, cotton, *Indian* corn, and fruits; with the beſt tobacco that is cultivated by the *Spaniards:* beſides, it abounds with wild hogs and fowl. The principal town is called *St. Joſeph*; which ſtands on a bay, at the north-weſt part of the iſland, and was taken by Sir *Walter Raleigh*, in 1595; as alſo by the *French*, in 1676, who plundered the place, and extorted 80,000 pieces of eight, or 14,333 *l.* 6 *s.* ſterling, to ranſom it from flames.

17. THE iſlands of *OROONOKO* are ſeveral little iſlands, lying in the mouth of that river: but none of them are inhabited.

IT ſhould be obſerved, that there are ſeveral pearl fiſheries all along the coaſt from *Carthagena* to *Venezuela*; particularly thoſe of *Santa Martha*, *Rancheria* on the coaſt of *Ria de la Hacha*, *Comanagotta* in the gulph of *Curiaco*, and at the iſland of *Margaretta*; where the time of the fiſhery is from *October* to *March*; when 10 or 12 barks ſail from *Carthagena*, eſcorted by ſome men of war, called the *Armadilla*; and theſe ſhips, having made their tour, return again to *Carthagena*, which is the centre of the pearl trade: but the pearls are of different values, according to their fineneſs and magnitude.

SECTION

SECTION III.

A deſcription of the country of GUIANA. *Its three diviſions, of* Dutch GUIANA, *or* Surinam; French GUIANA, *or* Cayenne; *and* Indian GUIANA, *or* Caribana: *with an account of the commerce carried on by the* Dutch *and* French *coloniſts.*

THE province of *GUIANA* is bounded by the mouth of the river *Oroonoko*, and the *Northern*, or *Atlantic Ocean*, on the north and eaſt; by the country of the *Amazons*, on the ſouth; and by the provinces of *New Andaluſia*, and *Granada*, on the weſt. It extends from 49° 20′ to 64° of weſt longitude; and from the equator to 9° of north latitude: being about 1200 miles in extent, along the *Atlantic Ocean*, from the mouth of the river *Oroonoko*, to the mouth of the river of *Amazons*; and about 540 miles from north to ſouth.

THE beſt geographers divide this territory into two parts; *Guiana-Proper*, called alſo *El Dorada*, or the *Gold Country*, by the *Spaniards*, on account of the immenſe riches it was once ſuppoſed to contain; and *Caribana*, or *Caribiana*: the former of which is properly the inland country, and the latter lies along the coaſt. All that part of the coaſt, which lies to the ſouth of the north cape, has been yielded to the crown of *Portugal*, and is included as a part of *Brazil*. The *French* have ſome ſettlements in the iſle of *Cayenne*, as alſo upon the adjacent coaſt. And the *Dutch* have *Surinam*. But all the interior part of the country is inhabited by

ſeveral numerous nations of *Indians*; who are reported to have ſome flouriſhing cities, a regular polity, with the ſame manners, cuſtoms, and religion, as were eſtabliſhed among the *Peruvians*.

THE ſea coaſt of this country is generally low, and ſubject to inundations, from a multitude of rivers, that run precipitately from the mountains, in the inland country, during the rainy ſeaſon. The air is exceſſive hot, and very unhealthful; eſpecially in ſuch parts of the country as are not cleared of woods: but there are ſome ſituations tolerably cool and healthful, where the air has a free paſſage, and is uninfected by the ooze and ſalt-marſhes.

THERE are ſeveral conſiderable rivers, beſides thoſe of *Oroonoko*, and the river of *Amazons*; the principal of which are, the *Eſequibe*, *Berbie*, *Corretine*, *Surinam*, and *Maroni*: the *Mawarpari*, *Moraga*, *Uraque*, *Maiacaret*, *Cayenne*, and *Oyapoc*: as alſo the *Arcoa*, *Caſipura*, *Coraſſune*, *Aricary*, and *Machacari*; with ſome others that empty themſelves into the *Oroonoko*, and the *Atlantic*.

I. *Dutch GUIANA* extends along the coaſt, from the mouth of the river *Oroonoko*, in 9° of north latitude, to the river *Maroni*, where the *Engliſh* formerly built a little fort, in 6° 20′ of north latitude. The chief ſettlement is that of *Surinam*, which is ſituated 5 leagues within the river of the ſame name, in 6° 16′ of north latitude: but they have given the name of *Surinam* to all the country, for ſeveral hundred miles about this town; and look upon themſelves as ſovereigns of it: for, indeed, this is the only part of the continent of *America* left in the poſſeſſion of the *Dutch*, ſince

ſince the *Portugueſe* drove them from *Brazil*, and the *Engliſh* expelled them from *New-York*.

THE river of *Surinam* has ſand-banks at its mouth, over which there is three fathom water at high tide; it being about a league broad, and continuing the ſame breadth to the place where the river *Commewine* falls into it: but the united rivers are only about a league over above their conflux; though ſo deep, that they are navigable for large veſſels 30 leagues up into the country.

THE *Dutch* have a fort called *Zelandia*, two leagues above the mouth of the river *Surinam*, built with bricks: and alſo a ſmall town, called *Paramaraibo*, containing about 400 houſes. The *French* ſeized upon this fort, in the year 1640: but ſoon abandoned it, as they found the country very unwholſome: whereupon the *Engliſh* took poſſeſſion of it; though they made no difficulty of ſurrendering it to the *Dutch*, in the reign of king *Charles* II. in conſideration of the ſtates relinquiſhing their pretenſions to *New York*, and other places, in the northern colonies, which had been taken from them by the *Engliſh*. However, the *Dutch* afterwards cut down ſo many trees, that they gave the ſun and wind an opportunity of drying the ſoil; which rendered the climate much more healthy and pleaſant.

THIS colony is called *The Society of Surinam*; becauſe it is the joint property of the *Dutch Weſt-India* company, the city of *Amſterdam*, and the lord of *Somelſdyk*: but the ſovereignty of it belongs to the ſtates-general; who, in 1683, granted a patent, containing 32 articles, in favour of the

Weſt-India company, as alſo for the ſecurity and advantage of the coloniſts.

THE great number of *Dutch* people, who have made plantations here, have raiſed this colony to ſuch a very flouriſhing condition, that it has extended itſelf about 100 miles above the mouth of the river *Surinam*, where the mountains ſerve them as a barrier againſt the incurſions of the *Indians*, who cannot be civilized. Beſides, there are ſome other towns in this province: as *Machariby*, on the eaſtern banks of the river *Corretine*, about 60 miles ſouth-weſt of the town of *Surinam*; *Mapueta*, ſeven miles north-weſt of *Machariby*; *Kyckoveral*, 40 miles north-weſt of *Mapueta*; *Warawalli*, 44 miles weſt of the town of *Surinam*; the *Dutch Colony*, 18 miles north of *Warawalli*: *New Zeland*, 122 miles north-weſt of *Surinam* town; *New Middleburg*, nine miles weſt of *New Zeland*; and ſome others of no conſequence. There are between ſeven and eight hundred families in the colony, beſides *Indians*, and a great number of negroes; who cultivate about 400 plantations, which are ſituated along the rivers, and afford immenſe profits to the proprietors.

THE chief trade of this colony, conſiſts in the product of this country, which is ſugar, tobacco, coffee, gums, wood for dying, cotton, flax, and ſkins, that are ſent to *Holland*, in exchange for *European* commodities.

THIS colony is governed by a college, or council, of ten directors, at *Amſterdam*; five of whom are choſen by the magiſtrates of that city, four by the *Weſt-India* company, and one by the lord of *Somelſdyk*: but, though theſe directors have the nomination,

nomination, the governor muſt be approved by the ſtates-general, and take an oath to them as well as to the directors.

THERE are only three churches in the whole province, which is divided into eight parts, and each diviſion has a company of militia: beſides which, there are four companies of regular ſoldiers, for the defence of the colony; all of whom are under the command of the governor, who, upon any extraordinary matters, is obliged to conſult with the political council, of which he is chairman, as well as of the court of juſtice.

II. *FRENCH GUIANA*, called *Old Cayenne*, or *Equinoctial France*, becauſe it reaches ſo near the equator, extends from the eaſtern banks of the river *Maroni*, in 55 degrees of weſt longitude, and 6° 24′ of north latitude; to *Cape d' Orange*, in 51° 40′ of weſt longitude, and 4° 10′ of north latitude; being about 240 miles along the coaſt. The principal ſettlement is the iſland of *Cayenne*, which lies at the mouth of a river of the ſame name, about 100 miles north-weſt of *Cape d' Orange*; being about 17 leagues in circumference, five of which are waſhed by the ſea, and the reſt by the two branches of the river. The *French* have erected a fort, on a little riſing ground, at the point of the iſland; but it has no other freſh water than what is preſerved in ciſterns. There is good anchoring near the foot of the fort, where above a hundred ſhips may ride in ſecurity: and boats may come up without danger, on each ſide of the point of land on which the fort ſtands, till within a foot of the ſhore. There are ſome pleaſant hills, very convenient for ſettlements; as alſo

ſeveral meadows, producing very good graſs, in the iſland, which is almoſt cut in two by a ſalt water river, that affords an eaſy communication between the plantations, and facilitates the tranſportation of merchandize: but the iſland has alſo ſeveral ſprings, which afford good water for drinking, and are very proper to turn ſugar-mills.

THE *French* firſt eſtabliſhed themſelves here, in 1635, under the ſieur *Poncet* of *Bretigny*, who was maſſacred by the *Indians*; but the remains of his colony defended themſelves, till they received a reinforcement: though they afterwards abandoned it; when it was taken poſſeſſion of by the *Engliſh*, who, in 1664, were expelled by the *French*: in 1676, it was taken by the *Dutch*; but the *French* retook it the next year, and have retained the poſſeſſion of it ever ſince.

NEAR the fort of *St. Lewis*, is a village containing about 200 houſes, inhabited by tradeſmen, and the ſoldiers in garriſon. About 12 miles north-eaſt of the fort, is another village, called *Lance de Remire*, the lower part of which is inhabited by 60 *Jews*, and 80 negroes; but on the upper part are the habitations of 60 *French*, and 25 negroes. There are alſo ſeveral other plantations ſcattered up and down the iſland: beſides, as the *French* were inclinable to extend themſelves on the main, they have built a redoubt on one ſide of the river, to defend its entrance. Further in land, they have another fort, called *Sinarary*, which ſerves them inſtead of an advanced poſt, where they have 80 men in garriſon. And there are ſome other ſmall iſlands near the great one; as the *Devil's Iſland*, to the north-weſt; and thoſe of

Remire

Remire to the north-eaſt; each of them about three leagues diſtant from *Cayenne*.

THE principal trade of *Cayenne* conſiſts in ſugar, rocou, indigo, cotton, and vanilla. The commodities ſent from *France* for *Cayenne*, are chiefly corn, wine, brandy, linnen-cloth, mercury, hardware, and eſpecially ſalted-fleſh; becauſe large cattle are ſcarce in the iſland, and no oxen are allowed to be butchered, without a licence from the governor.

III. *INDIAN GUIANA*, or *Caribana*, is reported to contain all the country between *Cape d' Orange*, and the river of the *Amazons*; being about 240 miles along the coaſt, which is very dangerous, on account of the high tides, and great ſurges of the ſea: but the air is too unwholſome for *Europeans*, who fall ſick on board their ſhips, whenever their buſineſs obliges them to make any conſiderable ſtay: even the natives are put to great inconvenience; for they have no ground fit to build houſes upon; and, therefore, are obliged to make their huts in trees, which have more the appearance of large birds-neſts, than the habitations of human beings.

THE country, between *Cape d' Orange*, and the north cape, is pretty well known to the *Engliſh*, *French*, and *Dutch*; who frequently go there in barks, to trade with the natives for ſeals: but the country is very little known from the north cape to the equator.

DISSERTATION I.

On the SPANISH *Colonies in* SOUTH AMERICA.

The nature of colonies; and how they were eſtabliſhed in AMERICA: *with obſervations on the gold and ſilver brought from thence into* Europe, *and re-exported to* Aſia. *The claim of the* Spaniards *to the dominion of the* American Seas; *with remarks thereon. Their polity in their colonies; and in what manner their trade is conducted by the galleons, and regiſter ſhips. An eſtimate of the value of the gold, ſilver, and other commodities, annually imported into* Spain, *from* AMERICA: *with reaſons why the former country has been rather impoveriſhed than enriched by the latter.*

SOME of the ancient *Greeks* endeavoured to perſuade their countrymen, that all the weſtern nations were derived and peopled from them: but their opinion of being *Aborigines*, or of ſpringing out of the earth where they inhabited, ought rather to be looked upon as a frivolous notion in their philoſophy, than an error in their hiſtory: for, in arguing againſt their conceit, why might not the concluſion be made, that the primitive *Grecians* were only colonies from the ſouth-eaſt parts, inſtead of their land peopling itſelf; unleſs they pretended to prove, that their ſoil was better able, and more diſpoſed, to bear mankind than any other? The *Americans* have always retained the ſame opinion as the *Grecians*: but it is highly probable,

probable, that their extenſive tract of country was originally peopled by ſea, either by the *Phenicians*, or *Carthaginians*. If the *Americans* were pagans, ſo were the *Europeans:* and, if it is urged, that they went naked, or painted their bodies, when *Columbus* diſcovered their country; it is no more than what was done by the *Britons*, when their iſland was invaded by *Cæſar*; who found their ideas of religion, their form of government, their cuſtoms and manners, as imperfect and uncivilized as the *Spaniards* firſt found the *Americans:* though this ought not to be alledged againſt the *Britons* in particular; becauſe the ſame may be ſaid of all the northern nations in general, till they were refined by the *Roman* polity, or improved by the doctrine of chriſtianity. Beſides, when *Cæſar* diſcovered *Britain*, he took it for a new world; being uncertain whether it was an iſland, or a diſtinct continent; and *Columbus* was under the ſame uncertainty upon the diſcovery of the iſland of *Cuba:* nor were the *Romans* leſs tranſported at their *Britiſh* acquiſitions, than the *Spaniards* were at their *American* conqueſts: but the *Roman* provinces were like ſo many ſaplings, that impoveriſhed the mother root; while thoſe which the *Spaniards* eſtabliſhed in *America*, gave nutriment and ſtrength to their mother country, which was languiſhing beneath her own infirmities.

When the world became populous, it was neceſſary for ſome ſtates to make migrations, for the foundations of others: thus the *Phenicians* planted *Carthage*; and the *Romans* extended their provinces throughout the greateſt parts of *Europe*, and *Aſia*, as alſo in the moſt deſirable parts of *Africa:* but

colonies

colonies have properly three kinds of diſtinctions. The *Firſt*, are thoſe ſerving to eaſe, or diſcharge, the inhabitants of a country; where the people are become too numerous for ſome of them to get ſubſiſtence, without great inconvenience to others. The *Second*, are thoſe eſtabliſhed by victorious princes and people, in the middle of vanquiſhed nations, to keep them in awe and obedience. And the *Third*, are diſtinguiſhed by the name of commercial colonies; becauſe trade ſhould be the ſole occaſion and object of ſuch ſettlements.

IT was by means of the *Firſt* kind of colonies, that, ſome ages after the deluge, firſt the eaſtern, and ſucceſſively all the other parts of the earth, became inhabited: for, without mentioning any thing of the *Phenician* and *Grecian* colonies, it is well known, that it was for the eſtabliſhment of ſuch ſettlements, that the northern nations overrun *Gaul*, *Italy*, and the ſouthern parts of *Europe*; where, after ſeveral long and bloody military contentions, they divided the country with the ancient inhabitants.

THE *Romans* uſed the *Second* kind of colonies more than any other people; principally to ſecure the conqueſts they had made from eaſt to weſt, and to prevent the neceſſity of conſtant ſtanding armies: which policy they practiſed, till their conqueſts grew too numerous, the conquered countries too diſtant, and their empire too unwieldy to be managed by their native force; ſo that they became the ſlaves of thoſe whom they conquered.

THE *Third* ſort of colonies are for trade; being intended to encreaſe the wealth and power of the native kingdom; to which they will abundantly contribute,

contribute, if conducted with prudent management, governed by ſalutary laws, and kept under a proper regulation. No nation has, or ever had, all the materials of commerce within itſelf: no climate produces all commodities: and, yet it is the intereſt, pleaſure, or convenience of every people, not only to uſe or trade in moſt, or all of them; but to raiſe ſuch things themſelves, rather than to purchaſe them from others; unleſs in ſome inſtances, when they barter their own commodities for them, to employ as many, or more, people at home in that exchange, and ſuch perſons as would loſe their employment, if theſe commodities were purchaſed from abroad.

INDEED the *Spaniards*, after the diſcovery of *America*, ſet up a fourth pretence for the colonization of countries; which was the converſion of pagans to the chriſtian religion: but, in this, they had no more ſincerity than thoſe *Mahometans* that invaded *Spain*, and, for many years, kept poſſeſſion of a great part of the country.

THE preſent colonies of commerce are thoſe eſtabliſhed by the *Spaniards*, *Portugueſe*, *Engliſh*, *French*, *Dutch*, and *Danes*, within theſe two laſt centuries; and which they continue ſtill to eſtabliſh in ſeveral parts of *Aſia*, and *America*; either to keep up a regular commerce with the natives, to cultivate the ground, or to embowel the mines. The principal colonies, of this kind, are on the ſouthern and northern continents, as alſo in the iſlands of *America*; particularly *Chili*, *Peru*, *Brazil*, *Guiana*, *Mexico*, *Canada*, *Louiſiana*, *Carolina*, *Virginia*, *Maryland*, *Penſylvania*, *New England*, *Acadia*, and *Hudſon's Bay*; with the *Caribees*, *Jamaica*,

maica, *Cuba*, *Domingo*, and other iſlands. Theſe colonies, in *Africa*, are along the coaſt of *Guinea*, the cape of *Good Hope*, and all thoſe extenſive coaſts from thence as far as to the *Red Sea*. And, in *Aſia*, there are the famous *Batavia* of the *Dutch*; *Goa* and *Diu* of the *Portugueſe*; *Madras*, *Bombay*, and *Fort William*, of the *Engliſh*; *Pondicherry* of the *French*; and ſome other leſs conſiderable places.

PLANTATIONS are among ancient, primitive, and heroical works. When the world was young, it begat many children: though, lord *Bacon* ſays, now it is old, it begets fewer; for new plantations may juſtly be accounted the children of former kingdoms. But the ſame noble author ſays, he likes a plantation in a pure ſoil: that is, where people are not diſplanted, to the end to plant in others: for elſe, it is rather an extirpation, than a plantation.

MERCANTILE people have been generally prompted to enter upon well-grounded and practicable adventures; among which, the diſcovery of unknown lands have merited the firſt place in the attention of the wiſeſt and greateſt men. Theſe are things that carry along with them advantages in many reſpects, and are valuable in their own nature: for there is nothing chimerical in their intention; but glory and profit have attended them in the event: it being to ſuch adventures, and diſcoveries, that all maritime powers have been indebted for the increaſe of their trade and navigation; eſpecially thoſe *European* ſtates, whoſe riches flow in upon them from their ſettlements and plantations in *America*.

It has been fully ſhewn, in the ſecond and third chapters of PART 1. how the diſcovery of the new world was reſerved for *Chriſtopher Columbus*; and in what manner he accompliſhed the nobleſt undertaking that ever inſpired the human mind. The invention of the mariner's compaſs was made about the year 1302: the *Canaries* were diſcovered, or retrieved, in 1417: the *Portugueſe* found out the coaſt of *Guinea*, in 1471; and ſoon after proceeded by ſea to the *Eaſt Indies*: while *Chriſtopher Columbus*, in 1492, diſcovered *America* for the *Spaniards*; the benefit of which diſcovery was loſt to the *Genoeſe*, by their inſolence; to the *Portugueſe*, by their ungenerous treatment of *Columbus*; and to the *Engliſh*, by the unhappy accident of his brother *Bartholomew* falling into the hands of pirates, as he was upon his voyage to communicate the ſcheme to *Henry* VII. and to requeſt his patronage in the undertaking. It has alſo been repreſented, in the fourth and fifth chapters of PART 1. how thoſe adventurers who ſucceeded *Columbus*, compleated the diſcovery of *America*: and it has been ſhewn, that there is the higheſt probability of diſcovering a north-eaſt, or north-weſt paſſage, to the *Eaſt* or *Weſt Indies*: however, the empire of his Catholic majeſty in *America*, is a ſufficient demonſtration, that marvellous projects are not always chimerical.

THE *Greeks* and *Romans* were eminent for their military diſcipline: but what were the conqueſts, and acquiſitions, of *Alexander*, or *Cæſar*, in compariſon of thoſe which were made by the *Spaniards* in *America*; where they ſubdued a dominion of almoſt ſeven thouſand miles in extent? *Alexander* was maſter of *Greece*, and conqueror of *Perſia*:

Cæſar

Cæſar made himſelf emperor of *Rome*, and governed all her extenſive provinces: but *Charles* V. of *Spain*, ſurpaſſed them both in power; being king of that country, emperor of *Germany*, lord of the greateſt part of *Italy*, and ſovereign of the *Netherlands*; beſides his poſſeſſions in *Aſia*, *Africa*, and *America*.

THE rapidity of the *Spaniſh* conqueſts were owing to their ſkill in navigation, the uſe of fire-arms, and the temper of their ſwords; which made the naked *Indians* fall an eaſy ſacrifice to their mercileſs invaders; who are far from being meritorious of the name of conquerors; becauſe their expeditions were no more than bloody executions, and barbarous maſſacres, upon an innocent and unreſiſting people.

DE la VEGA obſerves, that the *Spaniards* introduced the chriſtian religion, together with the arts and ſciences, into *America*: in return for which, *Spain*, and the reſt of *Europe*, became poſſeſſed of an immenſe treaſure in gold, ſilver, and precious ſtones. But, conſidering the inexpreſſible devaſtations, and unparalelled oppreſſions, which the miſerable *Indians* ſuffered, by the uſurpations and tyrannies of the *Spaniards*; how many millions were entirely extirpated, and how many more enſlaved; as alſo, that the *Spaniards*, with the chriſtian religion, introduced the inquiſition, with all its terrors, whereby they have corrupted the chriſtian doctrines, and the morals of the *Indians*; it may be fairly concluded, that the *Indians* have been loſers by their alteration.

THE *Spaniſh* adventurers cloaked all their barbarities under the maſk of religion, and committed ſuch

ſuch enormities, that the bare recollection of them are ſhocking to human nature; murdering the *Indians* by thouſands with the ſword, hunting and tearing them to pieces with their dogs, enſlaving them in their mines, or torturing them with the utmoſt barbarity either in wantonneſs of cruelty, or through exceſs of avarice. For the biſhop of *Chiapa* ſays, that, by a modeſt computation, the number of *Indians* murdered in cold blood, exceeded the number of people living in *Europe*. Notwithſtanding, *Ovalle* remarks, that their Catholic majeſties, *Ferdinand* and *Iſabella*, moſt ſtrictly recommended to the adventurers and governors, that they ſhould always have before their eyes, in the conqueſt of the new world, not ſo much the dilatation of their royal power and monarchy, as the propagation of the goſpel, and the kind uſage of the *Indians*, whoſe converſion they had principally at heart. But the continued cruelties of the *Spaniards*, occaſioned it to be truly repreſented to the court of *Spain*, that *America* would ſoon be depopulated, if a ſeaſonable prevention was not put to theſe outrages: upon which, the emperor *Charles* V. cauſed particular orders to be drawn up in favour of the *Indians*, requiring them to be treated as ſubjects, and not as ſlaves: though all his ordinances were diſregarded by the *Spaniards*.

THE *Pizarro*'s, *Almagro*, *Baldivia*, and the other conquerors of *South America*, were far from being men of any illuſtrious extraction: though, with all their imperfections, it muſt be acknowledged, they were poſſeſſed of ſome virtues; ſuch as courage, fortitude, and temperance: otherwiſe they would never have ſtruggled ſo many years againſt * winds

* See this Volume p. 172, and 357.

winds and ſeas, endured the extremities of heat and cold, or traverſed countries almoſt impenetrable and impaſſable. But patience ſeems to have been a virtue adapted to the inhabitants of *Spain*: and, it has been conjectured, no other nation would have perſiſted with the ſame indefatigable induſtry, in the proſecution of theſe diſcoveries. However, it ſhould be remembered, that the *Spaniards*, in the time of *Columbus*, were the greateſt maritime power in *Europe*: beſides, they had ſome advantage over the other *Europeans* in their ſituation; becauſe they lay the fartheſt weſtward of any country in the old world; and their climate had a nearer reſemblance to that of *Peru*, than the countries of their northern neighbours.

THE ſucceſs of the *Spaniards* in *America*, cauſed their ſhipping to increaſe beyond that of any other *European* power; becauſe, they had occaſion, in their beginning there, for great number of tranſports, to carry men, horſes, other animals, and ſtores of every kind, to their new acquiſitions: in which flouriſhing condition they continued for a great part of the long reigns of their king *Philip* IId, and our queen *Elizabeth*; who had not a fleet to give their *Armada* battle; and, perhaps, *Spain* might have ſucceeded in her invaſion, if Providence had not favourably interpoſed a tempeſt for the protection of *England*; whoſe queen knew to what cauſes ſhe owed her danger and deliverance, which made her very attentive to the planting of colonies in *America*. Death prevented this excellent monarch from executing her great deſigns: but ſome of her wiſeſt ſubjects, and moſt gallant ſeamen, entered ſo deeply into the plan, and laid

it ſo nearly to their hearts, that what ſhe intended in the ſettlement of *Virginia*, was pretty well effected in the reign of *James* Iſt; though the undertaking was carried on with great difficulty, upon account of his timorous councils; becauſe he could not gain the approbation of the *Spaniards*, of whom he ſtood in ſervile awe: but his ſhame, with much debate, got the aſcendancy over his fears; and that fund of treaſure was opened to *Great Britain*.

THIS, with what elſe has been ſince executed in favour of *Great Britain*, both on the continent and in the iſlands of *America*, has conveyed ſuch an additional weight of maritime force to the natural ſtrength which ſhe owes to her ſituation, that ſhe would have always been able, by wiſe management, as ſhe now is, to give law on the ocean. *Spain* has greater countries, and more ſubjects, in *America*, than *Great-Britain*: but the former does not navigate a tenth part of the ſhipping in that trade, as the latter does. The *Britiſh* dominions in *America*, by a happy kind of poverty, have no mines of gold or ſilver: therefore, the *Britiſh* ſubjects muſt be contented to deal in ſugar, rum, rice, tobacco, horſes, beef, corn, fiſh, lumber, and other commodities that require great ſtowage; the perpetual carriage of which muſt employ above 100,000 tons of ſhipping; and the value of 5000*l.* in thoſe wares, will load a veſſel, which, in the *Spaniſh* trade, would be freighted homeward with 500,000 *l.* ſterling.

GOLD and ſilver, in fact, are only commodities; though they aſcertain the values of all others: thus, in *England*, about 800 years ago, an ox ſold for 2*s.* 6*d.* a cow for 2*s.* a ſheep for 1*s.* and a

ſwine for 8 *d.* which could be only owing to the little foreign trade the nation then had, and conſequently to the little quantity of gold and ſilver trade had then brought in. But if it ſhould be aſked, What is the reaſon, that, at preſent, all things are naturally ſo much advanced in price, to what they were in thoſe days? The anſwer is, That the quantities of gold and ſilver brought to *Europe*, ſince the progreſs made by the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe* in *America*, have made thoſe metals more common, and of leſs value, than formerly: ſo that 20 *s.* will now ſcarcely purchaſe what 1 *s.* would, before the diſcovery of *Peru* and *Brazil*.

GOLD and ſilver are the natives of few countries, and the propriety of few perſons; therefore, can be obtained by others only by their conſent, or by compulſion: and, conſequently, no ſtate can grow more conſiderable than their native ſoil will make them, without plundering their neighbours, or perſuading them to part with it willingly; which can be done only by arms or trade. No ſoil produces all things, and no nation works all ſorts of manufactures, which are of common and neceſſary uſe: nor can any man, by his own ſkill and labour, make or acquire any conſiderable part of ſuch things as he wants or deſires; ſo that he can have no means of obtaining them, but by exchanging ſuperfluities for neceſſaries. However, it frequently happens, that the perſon who is poſſeſſed of the commodity which one man deſires, has no occaſion for what he has to give in lieu of it, or not a ſufficiency of it to anſwer the value of what he parts with: upon which account, ſomething elſe muſt be found out to make the

account even. From hence, mankind have found themſelves under a neceſſity to agree upon ſome univerſal commodity, which ſhall meaſure the value of all the reſt, and at laſt balance all accounts: but nothing has been diſcovered, that will anſwer the purpoſe ſo effectually as gold and ſilver: becauſe their contexture hinders them from being periſhable; their diviſibility qualifies them to anſwer all occaſions; their ſcarcity enhances their price, ſo as to make a great value lie in a little compaſs, and eaſily portable; beſides, the more regular and equal ſupplies of them, than of other commodities, render them proper ſtandards for the valuation of other things: therefore, theſe metals, by general and almoſt univerſal agreement, are mediums of commerce, the ballance of all trade, and the ultimate view, or chief advantage, propoſed by it. But it is ridiculous to imagine, that any precautions, or the greateſt penalties, will keep gold or ſilver in any country, where it is the intereſt of numbers to carry it out; as it particularly is with the *Spaniards* in *America*, who take all opportunities of defrauding their ſovereign of his fifth, and of exchanging their gold or ſilver for ſuch *European* commodities as they can get from ſtrangers.

THE treaſures poſſeſſed by the *Spaniards* in *America*, have, in the opinion of *De la Vega*, tended to impoveriſh their mother country, which has been declining ever ſince: for theſe riches have inclined the principal *Spaniards* to pride, ambition, luxury, and indolence. "The truth is, ſays the royal "hiſtorian, the poor are become much poorer "than formerly: for the quantity of money be-

" ing ſo greatly increaſed, has enhanced the price " of proviſions to ſuch a degree, that the poor " ſtarve by the abundance of the rich :" beſides, by ſuch an introduction of wealth, the generality of mankind are become more depraved and diſcontented ; nations, once formidable, and dreaded by all the world, being now rendered impotent, deſpicable, and effeminate, by the corruption of riches.

THERE is an *active*, and a *paſſive* commerce, in all nations : the former ſignifies the exportation of thoſe commodities wherewith a kingdom trades, when they are ſent in kind for the uſe of other nations : and the latter implies the reverſe ; being the importation of thoſe commodities which foreigners ſend for the uſe of ſuch a kingdom : ſo that, when the quantities exported and imported are unequal, this inequality will ſhew, whether the ballance of trade is favourable to, or againſt, that nation. *Spain* has languiſhed under a *paſſive* commerce, ever ſince the diſcovery of *America* ; whereby the treaſures of her mines are dug up for other nations, who carry on an *active* trade, ſo as to ſupply the *Spaniards* either with the neceſſaries or luxuries of life : though, in the opinion of the marquis *Belloni*, this is the preſent ſituation of all the kingdoms in *Europe*, with reſpect to the trade which they carry on with the *Eaſt-Indies*. For the great quantities of jewels and manufactures, liquors and ſpecies, brought from thence, render the trade of the *Eaſt-Indies* ſo exorbitant, that the great advantage the *European* kingdoms receive from the *Weſt-Indies*, with the great quantities of gold and ſilver, and other uſeful things brought

from

from thence, are not ſufficient to compenſate the loſs ſuſtained by that expenſive trade: which gives juſt ground to make it a queſtion, Whether the money that is brought from *America*, is more conſiderable than what is exported by the *Europeans* to *Aſia*?

HOWEVER, this is too haſty a concluſion: for *Uztariz*, a noble *Spaniſh* writer, aſſerts, that from the year 1492, to 1724, the gold and ſilver brought from *America* into *Spain*, amounted to above five thouſand millions of dollars; which, one year with another, is more than twenty-one millions and a half, or upwards of five millions ſterling, yearly. Beſides, there are great quantities of gold and ſilver either coined, or in bullion, brought from the *Spaniſh Weſt-Indies*, by the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*, in the returns of the illicit trade which they carry on with the *Spaniards*: and there are alſo immenſe treaſures of gold brought from the *Braſils*, which have prodigiouſly increaſed the remittances from *America* to *Europe*.

BARON *Monteſquieu* remarks, that the ſpecies of *Europe* was doubled ſoon after the conqueſts of *Mexico* and *Peru*; which appeared from the price of commodities, that was doubled every where, as the ſpecie of *Europe* doubled. The profit of *Spain* diminiſhed in the ſame proportion, and the *Spaniards* had every year the ſame quantity of metals, which was become by one half leſs precious. In double the time, the ſpecie ſtill doubled; and the profit ſtill diminiſhed another half. By this progreſſion, of doubling and doubling, the cauſe and impotency of the wealth of *Spain* is eaſy to be diſcovered: for, it is upwards of 200 years ſince

they worked their *Indian* mines; and the preſent quantity of ſpecie in the trading world, compared to that before the diſcovery of the *Indies*, has been ſuppoſed to be as 32 to 1; that is, it has been doubled five times; and, in 200 years more, it may be doubled again, ſo as to make it 64 to 1.

THE emperor *Charles* Vth was ſo ſenſible of the bad conſequences of the trade to the *Eaſt-Indies*, that he was uſed to ſay, "It had been well if thoſe "countries had never been diſcovered; or at leaſt "not ſo much frequented:" for, as Sir *William Monſon* obſerves, the *Europeans* have enriched the *Aſiatics* with the wealth of *Europe* and *America*; at the ſame time as they have decreaſed the trades of all the civilized nations; of which the *Engliſh* have ſufficient proof by their unprofitable trade to *India*.

THE *Spaniards* have ſometimes thought fit to ſpeak favourably of the community of the ſea, and the freedom of navigation: but, when it was for their preſent purpoſe, they have as ſeverely maintained the particular dominion of it as any other nation: nor muſt it be forgot, that ſeveral *German* authors, in the titles of *Charles* Vth, emperor and king of *Spain*, ſtile him, *King of the iſlands and continent of the* Indies, *and of the ocean*; though the uſe of the ſea is declared to be free, by the common law of *Caſtile*. It is indiſputable that ſome particular ſeas are ſubject to the ſovereignty of ſome particular ſtates; as the *Britiſh* and *Adriatic* ſeas, to *Great Britain* and *Venice*: but it is impoſſible to poſſeſs the whole ocean, or to have a title to the dominion of it, unleſs a prince or people were ſovereigns of the whole world: for who can

ſay,

ſay, in the midſt of the vaſt deep, ſuch a channel, or ſuch a ſpace, is mine? and who has a right to exclude any one a paſſage through the main? However, many of the *Portugueſe* were formerly of opinion, that their king had acquired ſuch a right to the great ocean of the *Weſt-Indies*, that he might lawfully refuſe a paſſage through it to other nations. The *Spaniards* ſeem likewiſe to be of opinion, that no people, but themſelves, have a right to ſail through the ſpacious ſea that leads to *America*; as if they alſo obtained that right by preſcription. But the law of preſcription can be of no force in deciding controverſies which happen between princes and people acknowledging no ſuperior: becauſe, the peculiar civil laws of any country are of no more weight, in relation to foreign ſtates, than if ſuch laws had never exiſted: ſo that, for deciding controverſies of this nature, recourſe muſt neceſſarily be had to the general law of nations, originally or ſecondarily; which can never admit of ſuch an uſurpation of a title to the dominion of the ſea by preſcription: though, on ſome ſuch preſumption, it will be found, that the *Spaniards* have frequently moleſted the navigation of the *Engliſh* ſubjects in the ſeas of *America*.

EVERY nation has a right to enact what laws they judge proper for regulating the trade and navigation of their reſpective colonies, as well as of the mother country: but theſe laws and regulations ſhould never interfere with ſubſiſting public treaties, nor with the laws of nations, which give every ſtate a right and freedom of navigation to and from their ſeveral colonies and plantations: for ſuch laws and regulations which interfere with

public treaties, and the laws of nations, muſt tend to deſtroy all amity with ſuch nations who make them.

THE *Spaniſh* government are even jealous of their own ſubjects, as well as of foreigners, in *America*; and the only eſſential maxim which runs through the whole political œconomy of the *Spaniards*, in reſpect of their territories there, is the ſubjecting them to an abſolute dependance upon *Spain*: therefore, all things relating to their *American* empire, receive their firſt form, and laſt conſideration, from the council for the *Indies* in *Spain*; which is compoſed of ſuch perſons who have attained the beſt knowledge of theſe countries.

ALL the *Spaniſh* poſſeſſions in *South America* are ſubject to the * vice-roy of *Peru*; and the natural-born *Spaniards* are ſolely veſted with command throughout all the *Spaniſh Indies*, enjoying all the poſts of honour, profit, and truſt; which has occaſioned thoſe draughts that have ſo much exhauſted and debilitated their dominions in *Europe*: for, as they put no confidence even in the very firſt generation of their deſcendants, and abſolutely prohibit all ſtrangers from going there in their ſervice, there is a neceſſity of continually ſending large ſupplies to *America*, that the governing people may be ſtill in a condition of holding the reins with equal tightneſs and ſeverity. But this form of government creates an irreconcileable antipathy between the *European Spaniards* and the creolians, or thoſe born of *Spaniſh* parents in the *Weſt-Indies*; who, with indignation, find themſelves equally excluded from all conſiderable preferments, either in

* See this Volume, p. 151.

in church or ſtate; they ſee the moſt palpable partiality ſhewn in all judicial proceedings between them and the *Spaniards*; and know that the whole policy of their governors is bent to diſtreſs the creolians: while the ruling *Spaniards* are thoroughly ſenſible that the creolians entertain theſe ſentiments, and exert their utmoſt artifices to enfeeble them; by diſcouraging, as far as they are able, all ſorts of manufactures, and compelling them to purchaſe ſuch as are ſent from *Spain*: they alſo endeavour to prevent an increaſe of plantations, except eſtatians, or beef-farms; that the creolians may not have it in their power to poſſeſs rich and improved ſettlements: which is the cauſe why thoſe noble countries are ſo little cultivated. Beſides, the native *Spaniards* make it their aim to increaſe luxury, indolence, and puſillanimity, among the creolians, that they may the more eaſily be kept in obedience: from whence it is apparent, that the buccaneers, and other adventurers, in ſmall bodies, were able to commit great depredations. Thus, throughout all theſe rich, noble, and extenſive provinces, the inhabitants ſeem inſpired with a ſpirit of diſſention, which renders them perpetually uneaſy and diſcontented; ſo that the bleſſings conferred upon them, by indulgent Providence, are made almoſt uſeleſs, and inſignificant.

It has always been the prevailing maxim in the *Spaniſh* councils, to preſerve their *American* commerce, not only to the *Spaniſh* nation, but ſolely to the crown of *Spain*; which has this intereſting trade conducted by means of the galleons, flota, flotilla, regiſter-ſhips, and guarda coſtas, under the management of the council of commerce for the *Indies*,

Indies, eſtabliſhed at *Seville*, who have provided excellent laws for its ſecurity; among which are the following:

1. No ſhips are permitted to go to any of the *Spaniſh* dominions in *America*, without a ſpecial licence granted by the king; which licences are iſſued by the council of commerce at *Seville*.

2. No foreigner can be permitted to go to the *Spaniſh* dominions in *America* in any licenſed ſhip, on any terms whatever, either to ſettle or trade there; *Iriſhmen* only excepted, and they muſt be all Roman catholics.

3. No perſon, not even a native *Spaniard*, is allowed to go to the *Spaniſh Weſt-Indies*, without ſpecial licence from the council of commerce; which not only regulates the time the ſeveral fleets of ſhips are to ſail, to what places, and when they ſhall be obliged to come away; but it alſo limits the number of ſhips, and the quantity of gold; as the latter ſhould not exceed the demand, and glut the markets.

THE *Spaniſh* government ſends two fleets annually to *America*: the one, which they call the galleons, for carrying on the commerce of *Peru*; and the other, which they call the flota, for *Mexico*.

A GALLEON formerly denoted a large veſſel, or ſhip of war, of three decks; built in a particular manner to afford a great deal of room for merchandize, with which theſe ſhips are ſo much crowded, that they are in no condition of defending themſelves, if attacked by an enemy. The galleons are laden entirely upon the account of his Catholic majeſty; being eight in number; the principal of which, are the *Capitana*, the *Admirante*, *il Governo*,

verno, the *Patacha*, and *Margarita*, each of 50 guns; with an advice frigate of 40, called the *Aviſo*: however, beſides the royal galleons, there are uſually from twelve to ſixteen merchant ſhips in this trade, belonging to private perſons, who purchaſe their licences at a very high rate, and ſail in company with the galleons, laden with warlike ſtores, or merchandize, for *Peru*.

THE galleons are loaded at *Cadiz*; from whence they may put out at any time; and they are about two years in compleating their voyage. They ſteer directly for the *Canaries*; and, if the flota ſails with them, as it ſometimes does, they anchor together in the haven of *Gomera*; from whence they bear away for the *Antilles*, where they ſeparate; the galleons proceeding for *Carthagena* and *Porto Bello*; and the flota for *Vera Cruz*: though, on their return, they rejoin at the *Havannah*, in the iſle of *Cuba*. As ſoon as the galleons double *Cape de la Vela*, and appear before the mouth of the *Rio de la Hacha*, advice is ſent to all parts, that every thing may be got ready for their reception. They continue about a month at *Carthagena*, and about ſix weeks at *Porto Bello*; but, when they have tranſacted their buſineſs at the latter place, they return to the former, and remain there till they ſet ſail for *Spain*. They proceed firſt to the *Havannah*; then ſteer through the gulph of *Florida*; and ſo to the height of *Carolina*, where they meet with the weſtern winds, and ſhape their courſe for the *Azores* to take in proviſions; after which they continue their voyage to *Cadiz*.

A REGISTER ſhip is ſo called, from its being regiſtered, with all the effects embarked in *Spain*, in the books kept for that purpoſe in the chamber of

of *Seville:* but theſe regiſter ſhips belong to the merchants, who petition, and obtain leave from the council of the *Indies*, to ſend a ſhip of 300 ton burthen, or under, to ſome particular port; though the ſhip carries upwards of 600 ton of goods, and affords accommodation for paſſengers beſides. The regiſter ſhips proceed to *St. Martha*, *Porto Cavallo*, *Buenos Ayres*, and ſome other places, which are never reſorted to by the flota or galleons: yet they generally go out, and return with thoſe fleets. There is ſometimes a gain of two or three hundred per cent. in this trade; which enables the owners to pay very bountifully for their licence: however, it is carried on by foreigners, as well as by the native *Spaniards*; who lend them their names for this purpoſe; whereby the *Spaniſh* merchants render themſelves only as factors to the other *Europeans*. And, beſides this kind of ſurreptitious trade, there is another of a more illicit nature carried on along the *Spaniſh* main, by the *Engliſh* and *Dutch*, in the *Weſt Indies*, without the ceremony of a licence; in which they ſucceeded for many years, partly by employing force, and partly by the connivance of *Spaniſh* governors; till this evil grew ſo flagrant, that the court of *Spain* determined to put an end to it; and ſent new governors into *America*, with very preciſe orders on this head; declaring that they ſhould be carried fully into execution. This gave riſe to the guarda-coſtas, or guard-ſhips, who exceeded their commiſſions; and, by their depredations, brought on the laſt war between the crowns of *Great Britain* and *Spain*. But the commerce carried on by the flota, will be mentioned in the diſſertation following the deſcription of the *Spaniſh* colonies in *North America*.

THE

THE loading of the galleons is more valuable than others; which is evident from the following eſtimate of the money and effects annually returned to *Spain* from her *American* dominions.

	Pieces of Eight.
IN gold; of which the galleons bring home between two and three millions; and the flota, generally about one.	4,000,000
IN ſilver, by the galleons, from 18 to 20 millions; and by the flota from 10 to 12.	30,000,000
IN precious ſtones: by the galleons in pearls 200,000; in emeralds 300,000; in bezoars, turquoiſes, amethyſts, and others of inferior value, 30,000: as alſo ſome turquoiſes by the flota, to the value of 70,000.	600,000
IN *Vigognia* wool by the galleons.	50,000
QUINQUINA, by the galleons, 20,000; and as much by the flota.	40,000
IN raw hides by the galleons, 70,000; and as much by the flota.	140,000
IN logwood, by the galleons.	60,000
IN cochineal by the flota, and regiſter ſhips.	1.000,000
IN indigo about	200,000
BY hides from *Buenos Ayres*, in a regiſter ſhip.	200,000
IN ſugars, tobacco, and drugs.	2,000,000
	38,290,000

THUS, it appears, that this commerce of the *Spaniſh* continent and iſland of *America*, brings in annually 38,290,000

38,290,000 pieces of eight, or 6,843,159 *l.* ſterling: but this wealth is diſſipated among other nations, to whom the *Spaniards* have not been improperly called ſtewards: for, though their galleons bring the ſilver into *Spain*, it is not to be kept there, either by power or policy: it runs out as faſt, or faſter, than it comes in: and it has been aſſerted, that the little canton of *Bern* in *Switzerland*, has more opulence, and credit, than his Catholic majeſty, notwithſtanding his poſſeſſion of the *Indies*.

AT firſt ſight, this appears to be ſtrange and incredible: but the myſtery is far from being impenetrable, when it paſſes under examination: for the ſilver, and rich commodities of the *Indies*, are brought to *Spain* in return for *European* goods and manufactures, of which very few belong to the *Spaniſh* ſubjects, who ſupply their *American* provinces with what they receive, as negociators, for the merchants of *Great Britain*, *France*, *Holland*, and *Hamburgh*. All the neceſſaries of life, and many articles of luxury, are required by the inhabitants of *Spaniſh America*; who receive only wines, oils, olives, dried fruits, and ſweet-meats of the produce of *Spain*; all the reſt being ſupplied by other nations, the prime coſt of which amounts to a great ſum, and the profits upon them to a greater. The very probity of the *Spaniſh* merchants is deſtructive to their country: becauſe, they are never known to betray their truſt; and, conſequently, the foreigners who make uſe of their names to cover their commerce in the *Indies*, reap the entire advantage of the high price at which their goods are ſold: ſo that all which remains in

Spain,

Spain, is the ſilver and gold on the account of his majeſty, the profit of ſuch goods as were actually ſent by *Spaniſh* merchants, and the commiſſions received by the *Spaniſh* factors: all beſides is preſently drawn away, and other nations enriched by the poverty of *Spain*.

But, if the *Spaniſh* government had given encouragement to trade and manufactures, after the diſcovery of *America*, there is great probability that the ſupreme direction of the affairs of *Europe* would have fallen into the hands of the Catholic monarchs: for, if all the ſubjects of *Spain* had traded to theſe far diſtant regions, without reſtraint, this muſt have created ſuch a maritime force, as no other nation could have oppoſed: or, ſuppoſing the trade had been confined as it is at preſent, and manufactures had been encouraged, for driving a traffic to the greateſt part of the *Weſt Indies*, without having recourſe to foreigners, ſuch prodigious ſums of money muſt have centered in *Spain*, as would have enabled its monarchs to preſcribe law to all their neighbours. By neglecting theſe obvious and ſalutary rules, for eſtabliſhing a ſolid and extenſive dominion, the *Spaniſh* kings adhered to thoſe refinements in policy, which have never yet been found to anſwer in practice, however excellent they may appear in theory. They were for fixing their commerce by conſtraint, and for eſtabliſhing power by the ſword: but experience has ſhewn the firſt to be impracticable; and it is probable that the latter was the only method whereby they could have miſſed that end they endeavoured to obtain. By repeated attempts to ſecure the wealth of the *Indies* entirely to *Spain*, they ſcatter-

ed

ed it throughout *Europe*; and, by openly graſping at univerſal monarchy, they alarmed thoſe they might have ſubdued: ſo that, in proceſs of time, the people they intended for ſlaves, not only became their equals and allies; but ſome of them became their maſters, and gave law to the aſpirers of univerſal monarchy.

FERDINAND the Catholic, in whoſe reign *Columbus* diſcovered *America*, repoſed no confidence in that excellent man; but, by an unaccountable ſtroke of policy, was inclined to truſt any other perſon in the management of the new diſcovered world, only becauſe that diſcovery was made by *Columbus*. *Charles* V. who ſucceeded him, paid ſuch little regard to the intereſt of *Spain*, that he granted a whole province in *South America* to the citizens of *Augſburgh*, in *Germany*. *Philip* II. was ſo much taken up in endeavouring to reduce the *Netherlands*, enſlave *Italy*, conquer *England*, over-run *France*, and in annexing *Portugal* to his dominions, that he conſidered his ſubjects in *America*, only as the inſtruments of providing money for him to proſecute his ambitious deſigns. Nor were the ſucceſſors of this monarch more attentive to their *American* colonies, which they looked upon as a farm to be fleeced, rather than as an eſtate to be improved. This conduct of the *Spaniſh* monarchs impoveriſhed their ſubjects, whoſe expences in the army obliged them to ſeek new fortunes in *America*; which greatly depopulated their mother country: and it plainly appeared, towards the cloſe of the laſt century, that, with all their boaſted firmneſs and ſagacity, the *Spaniards* had ruined themſelves by acquiring too much power, and rendered

dered themſelves beggars by the miſapplication of their riches: for, with oſtentatious titles, and very extenſive dominions, they were reduced to a weak and deſpicable condition.

But the *Spaniards* are at laſt awakened from their lethargy, and ſeem to be ſenſible that commerce is the beſt foundation of power: they are preparing to carry on an active trade, and to conſult the intereſt of their colonies. His Catholic majeſty, in 1720, took into conſideration the ruin of the cocoa-trade between *Spain* and the *Indies*, in the galleons, flota, and regiſter ſhips; which was owing to the exceſſive duties chargeable at the port of *Cadiz*, and afterwards the inland duties that made this conſiderable branch of commerce be engroſſed by foreigners; who not only exported it to their reſpective countries; but brought it back to the *Spaniſh* ports, where they could introduce it by an advantage in the admeaſurement and indulgencies in the duties, excluſive of fraud; being privileges with-held from the *Spaniards*, as they imported it regiſtered, from the *Indies* to *Cadiz*, under an obligation to conſign it there, according to the tenor of the regiſter. His majeſty, therefore, ordered a reduction of thoſe duties; and made other proviſions for retrieving this branch of commerce; which is the principal freight of the galleons, and regiſter ſhips, on their return from *America*.

The *Spaniſh* government will not permit any foreigners to carry on any trade with their colonies: but the *Engliſh*, *French*, and *Dutch*, carry on a contraband traffic greatly to their own advantage, and to the benefit of the *American Spaniards*,

who encourage this illicit trade, as it gives them an opportunity of evading the royal duties, and purchasing the goods at a much cheaper price, than when they properly pass through the hands of the government. The *Spaniards* likewise pretend to have a right of visiting all ships, and of confiscating such as have any of their manufactures, produce, or money on board; which has given rise to several quarrels between the crowns of *Great Britain* and *Spain*, from 1670 to 1739, when the last war was declared entirely upon this account: but the remarks upon that occasion will be inserted in the second volume of this history, under the dissertation annexed to the description of the *Spanish* colonies on the continent of *North America*: which will also include several other observations relating to the commerce of the *Spanish* colonies, the interest of other *European* nations in that branch of trade, and how far it may be necessary for *Great Britain* to exert herself at any time in opposition to the measures that may be taken by the court of *Spain* to interrupt the navigation of the *American Ocean*.

Portuguese

Portugueſe AMERICA.

WITH

An Account of the Southern INDIANS;
and of the JESUITS *of* PARAGUAY.

PART III.



A

NEW HISTORY OF AMERICA.

PART III.

The DESCRIPTION *of* BRAZIL.

CHAP. I.

The extent, and boundaries, of this country: how the PORTUGUESE *eſtabliſhed themſelves there; and in what manner they were diſturbed by the* DUTCH. *The face of the country; its animals, vegetables, and commodities; with a particular deſcription of the brazil-tree. The cruelty of the* PORTUGUESE *to the* INDIANS. *An account of the preſent inhabitants of* BRAZIL, *and of the fifteen captainries into which the country is divided; with their rivers, towns, and trade: to which is added an eſtimate of the annual produce of the gold and diamond mines; as alſo of the brazil-wood, imported into* EUROPE.

THIS extenſive, and opulent country of *Brazil*, or *Braſil*, is ſubject to the crown of *Portugal*; being ſituated between the mouth of

the great river *Amazon*, under the equator; and the mouth of the river *La Plata*, in 35 degrees of ſouth latitude: ſo that, by meaſuring it in a direct line, it is upwards of 2000 miles in length, from north to ſouth; but near 4000, if all the windings and turnings of the coaſt are taken into the calculation: and, as it is ſaid to extend from the 35th to the 51° degree of weſt longitude, it is about 960 miles in breadth, from eaſt to weſt; though the *Portugueſe* have no ſettlements at any great diſtance from the coaſt.

THE country is bounded by the *Atlantic Ocean*, on the north and eaſt; by the country of the *Amazons*, and *Paraguay*, on the weſt; and by the river *La Plata*, on the ſouth. It was diſcovered by *Peter Alvarez Capralis*,* a *Portugueſe* admiral, in the year 1501; who was at the head of 13 ſail of ſhips bound to the *Eaſt Indies*; but was drove upon this coaſt, in 10 degrees of ſouth latitude: from whence he ſailed ſouthward, and landed at a place, which he called *Porto Seguro*; where he erected an altar, gave the name of *The Holy Croſs* to the country, and diſpatched one of his ſhips into *Europe*, to acquaint the court of *Portugal* with this diſcovery; which was accidentally made, nine years after *Columbus* had happily diſcovered the northern parts of *America*, by his ſagacity and fortitude: though *Herrera*, and ſome other *Spaniſh* writers, have ventured to affirm, that *Pinzon* and *Lopez*, both in the ſervice of *Spain*, diſcovered this country a year before the *Portugueſe*.

THE country ſoon loſt the name given to it by *Capralis*, and obtained that of *Brazil*, from the brazil-

* See this Volume, p. 130.

brazil-wood which is found there in abundance: but, notwithſtanding the *Portugueſe* made ſeveral attempts to eſtabliſh a proper ſettlement here, it was not done with any ſucceſs, till the year 1549; when they fixed themſelves at the *Bay of all Saints*, and built the city of *Saint Salvador*. The *French* alſo attempted to plant colonies on this coaſt: but they were prevented by the *Portugueſe*; who continued, almoſt without a rival, in *Brazil*, till the year 1623, when the crown of *Portugal* was ſeized by the king of *Spain*, with whom the united provinces were at war, who ſent a ſtrong fleet to *Brazil*, and took *St. Salvador*; which was ſoon retaken by the *Portugueſe*. However, the *Dutch* continued to harraſs the *Portugueſe* ſettlements, and at laſt poſſeſſed themſelves of the entire province of *Fernambuco*: whereupon, count *Maurice* of *Naſſau*, accepted the government of the *Dutch* conqueſts, which he not only extended, but detached a ſquadron from thence to the coaſt of *Africa*, and took the important fortreſs of *Del Mina* from the *Portugueſe*. Count *Maurice* was diſguſted with the ſtates general, and returned to *Europe* in 1644. After this, the *Dutch* intereſt declined ſo much in *Brazil*, that in 10 years the *Portugueſe* drove them entirely out of the country: but, as the *Dutch* interrupted the *Portugueſe* at ſea, the king of *Portugal*, by a treaty in 1661, agreed to pay them a conſiderable ſum of money, to relinquiſh their intereſt in that country, which was accepted; and the *Portugueſe* have ever ſince remained in the peaceable poſſeſſion of all *Brazil*.

The face of the country appears ſomewhat high near the coaſt: but exceeding pleaſant; being di-

verſified with woods and ſavannahs, and the trees are generally ever-greens. Though far within land, on the weſt ſide of the country, there are lofty mountains, which ſeparate it from the *Spaniſh* province of *La Plata*.

THE ſeaſons, air, and winds, vary throughout this extenſive country, according to the ſituation of the reſpective provinces. For, *Firſt*, the moſt northerly part, which lies next the equator, is ſubject to heavy rains, and variable winds, like other countries in the ſame latitude; particularly, in the months of *March* and *September*; when the country is overflowed with rain, and rendered unhealthful by ſtorms and tornadoes: but this part is very little inhabited; and the *Portugueſe* only keep poſſeſſion of the coaſts, to prevent foreigners making any ſettlements. In the *Second* place, from five degrees of ſouth latitude, to the tropic of *Capricorn*, the winds and ſeaſons are the very reverſe here, to what they are in other parts of the world, in the ſame latitude: becauſe, in other places ſouth of the equinoctial, the dry ſeaſon comes on when the ſun goes to the northward of the line; and the wet ſeaſon begins when the ſun goes to the ſouthward: but, in *Brazil*, the wet ſeaſon commences in *April*, when the ſouth-weſt winds ſet in with violent tornadoes, thunder, and lightening; and, in *September*, when the wind ſhifts to eaſt north-eaſt, it brings a clear ſky and fair weather, which is the time of their ſugar-harveſt. And, *Thirdly*, the moſt ſoutherly part of *Brazil*, which lies without the tropic of *Capricorn*, is one of the moſt deſirable parts of the world; being not only bleſt with a fruitful ſoil, but having a greater ſhare of fair weather, and a more temperate air, than thoſe countries that are nearer to,

or thoſe that are farther removed from, the equator.

THERE are only two winds that blow upon the middle of this coaſt: the ſouth-eaſt, from *April* to *September*; and the north-eaſt, from *September* to *April* again: but the conſtant trade-wind is met with, about 30 or 40 leagues out at ſea; which blows in the *Atlantic Ocean* all the year round, from the eaſtward, with little variation.

THERE are innumerable ſprings and lakes in the mountains, from whence iſſue abundance of ſtreams, that fall into the great rivers *Amazon* and *La Plata*; or run acroſs the country from weſt to eaſt, and fall into the *Atlantic Ocean:* but the laſt are very numerous; being of great uſe to the *Portugueſe*, in turning their ſugar-mills, and meliorating their lands, which they overflow annually.

As this country lies between the firſt, ſecond, third, and fourth climates, it is ſo very hot in ſome places as to breed a great number of poiſonous, and obnoxious creatures; beſides a great variety of wild and other animals. There are ſeveral of the ſerpentine kind; as the ibibaboka, between three and four yards in length; the boivivinga, or rattle-ſnake; the boycagu, ſix or ſeven yards long, and half a yard in circumference; and the liboya, or roe-buck ſerpent, about 30 feet in length, and two or three yards round; with ſcorpions, and other diſagreeable animals. There are alſo tigers, ant-bears, armadilloes, porcupines, janouveras, monkies, ayis, and tapiraſſous; the latter of which is a creature between a bull and an aſs, with long hanging ears, and a ſhort tail, but without horns: beſides, there is plenty of deer, hares, and other

game;

game; with great variety of birds, and fiſh: as alſo many of the *Peruvian*, and moſt of the *European* animals.

THE ſoil of *Brazil* is generally good, producing large trees of ſeveral ſorts, and fit for any uſes: the ſavannahs afford excellent paſture; and, if properly cultivated, produce cotton, tobacco, indico, ſugar-canes, maize, and tropical fruits. The chief foreſt trees are, the ſapiera, vermiatico, commeſſerie, guiteba, and ſerrie, which are uſed for building houſes and ſhipping: there are alſo three kinds of mangrove trees, as many of cotton trees, with the wild cocoa-nut-tree, whoſe nuts are uſed for making beads, and toys; there are likewiſe the ſpeckled wood, fuſtick, and other dying woods: but the moſt remarkable of them all, is that from which the country is denominated, and requires a particular deſcription.

THE brazil, or red-wood, is cut from a tree, ſomewhat like the *Engliſh* oak, for largeneſs and foliage; being hard to fell and ſplit, which is done by the negro ſlaves, who are alſo obliged to bring it to the ſea-ſide upon their ſhoulders. This wood is very heavy, and dry: it crackles much in the fire, and raiſes little ſmoak: it ſhould be choſen in thick pieces, cloſe, ſound, and without any bark on it: but from a pale-colour, upon ſplitting, it becomes reddiſh; and has a ſweetiſh taſte when chewed. It is uſed by turners; as alſo to make a kind of carmine, by means of acids; and a liquid lacca, for miniature: however, the principal uſe is in dying, where it ſerves for a red colour, which eaſily fades and evaporates; though it ſhould not be uſed without allum and tartar.

THERE

THERE are ſome fine woods of ebony, and five different kinds of palm-trees: with almoſt all kinds of fruit-trees, plants, herbs, and flowers, growing in *America*, or brought over from *Europe*.

THE principal commodities of this country are ſugar, tobacco, dying woods, ambergreaſe, roſin, train-oil, hides, ginger, indico, balſams, and ſweetmeats: but, of late years, the *Portugueſe* have diſcovered ſeveral mines of gold and diamonds; as alſo jaſper, emeralds, chryſtal, and other precious ſtones, which have moſt amazingly enriched their mother country.

THE firſt *Portugueſe* adventurers were deſtroyed by the natives, and no ſettlement was made, till *John* III. king of *Portugal*, ſent a great fleet there, with a thouſand ſoldiers on board, commanded by *Thomas de Soſa*; accompanied by ſeveral jeſuits, ſent by pope *Paul* III. for the converſion of the natives, who were divided into ſeveral ſtates, and at war among themſelves; which gave the *Portugueſe* an opportunity of reducing the whole, and making them ſlaves without any diſtinction. The *Portugueſe* have repreſented the *Brazilians* as ſavages, without any notion of religion; and as canibals, without any ſenſe of humanity: but this was done to juſtify their invaſions of the country, and the barbarous maſſacres they committed on the poor inhabitants; for, notwithſtanding what the *Spaniards*, or *Portugueſe* have aſſerted, it is very manifeſt that the *Indians* were no more canibals, or men-eaters, than the *Europeans*.

THE preſent inhabitants of *Brazil*, are *Portugueſe*, creolians, meſtizoes, negroes, and *Indians*;

of

of whom the former, who are the governors, are the feweſt in number, and have divided the country into fifteen provinces, or captain-ſhips: but the whole is now called a principality; becauſe it gives a title to the preſumptive heir of *Portugal*, who is ſtiled prince of *Brazil*.

THESE governments, captainrics, or capitanias, are 1. *Para*; 2. *Maragnano*; 3. *Siara*; 4. *Rio Grande*; 5. *Parayba*; 6. *Tamarat*; 7. *Pernambuco*; 8. *Seregippe*; 9. *Bahia de Todos los Sanctos*; 10. *Rio dos Ilheos*; 11. *Porto Seguro*; 12. *Eſpirito Santo*; 13. *Rio de Janeiro*; 14. *St. Vincent*; and, 15. *del Rey*. Eight of theſe captainrics belonged properly to his *Portugueſe* majeſty: but the others were granted to ſome of his nobility; though they were obliged to acknowledge the ſovereignty of the vice-roy of the whole country, who has his reſidence in the city of *St. Salvador*, or *Bahia*, in the captainſhip of *Bahia de Todos los Sanctos*.

1. THE captainric of *PARA*, or *Paria*, is the moſt northerly of all; being bounded by the mouth of the river *Amazon*, and the ocean, on the north; by the province of *Maragnano*, on the eaſt; by the country of the *Tapuyer*, on the ſouth; and by the country of the *Amazons*, on the weſt: being about 190 miles in extent from eaſt to weſt; but uncertain from north to ſouth.

THE river *AMAZON* is reported to be the greateſt river in the world; conſidering the length of its courſe, and the depth of its water; for it riſes in *Peru*, near the equator, runs upwards of 3000 miles eaſtward, and falls into the *Atlantic Ocean* by ſeveral channels, under the equinoctial; being 150 miles broad at the mouth, where there

are

are ſeveral little iſlands. The river *Para*, which gives name to this province, runs through it from ſouth to north, and falls into the mouth of the river *Amazon:* but there are alſo the rivers of *Paranayba*, *Pacaxes*, and *Tocantes*, which fall into the river *Amazon*.

The principal town is *Belem*, or *Para*, ſituated at the mouth of the river *Amazon*, in 47° 20′ of weſt longitude, and one degree of ſouth latitude: being tolerably well fortified, and inhabited by about 300 *Portugueſe*, with their ſlaves; whoſe principal buſineſs is the cultivation of tobacco, and ſugar; as alſo the gathering of cotton, which grows wild in this neighbourhood.

COMMUTA is another town, about 90 miles ſouth-weſt of *Belem*; having a ſmall fort to keep the *Indians* in awe, and protect the plantations of the *Portugueſe*. Beſides, there are ſome other ſettlements, though of little conſideration.

2. The captainric of *MARAGNANO*, or *Maranhao*, is ſo called from an iſland of the ſame name, which is contiguous to *Para*; being bounded by the ocean, on the north; by *Siara*, on the eaſt; by the *Tapuyers*, on the ſouth; and by *Para*, on the weſt; extending about 240 miles from eaſt to weſt: though, like all the other provinces, it runs only a little way from the coaſt. The principal rivers are *Maracu*, *Topocora*, and *Mony*; which unite their ſtreams in the bay of *Maragnano:* but there are four others, the *Paragues*, *Paramiri*, *Camuſſimiri*, and *Barreiras Vemeilhas*, which run the ſame northern courſe through the province.

The iſland of *Maragnano*, lies at the mouth of the three principal rivers, and is about 135 miles

miles in circumference, very fertile, and well inhabited. The *French*, who ſeized on it, in 1612, built a town there, in 42° 20′ of weſt longitude, and 1° 44′ of ſouth latitude, which they called *St. Louis de Maragnan:* but it was afterwards taken by the *Portugueſe*. It is a ſmall ſtrong town, with a caſtle built on a rock towards the ſea, which commands a convenient harbour beneath. There are alſo the towns of *St. Andero*, and *St. Jago*; beſides ſeveral villages of *Indians* who live upon the iſland: and the *Spaniards* have likewiſe the town of *Cuma*, ſituated upon the continent, oppoſite to the iſland of *Maragnano*.

3. THE captainric of *SIARA*, is ſo called from a river of the ſame name, which riſes far up in the continent, and diſcharges itſelf into the northern ocean, in three degrees of ſouth latitude, about ſeven or eight leagues north of the bay of *Mangerypa*. It is about 360 miles broad from eaſt to weſt: but the principal part of the country is inhabited by free *Indians*, who confine the *Portugueſe* to a very ſmall territory, where they have only the town of *Siara*, and the fort of *St. Luke*; the former being ſituated at the mouth of the river *Siara*, in 39° 50′ of weſt longitude, and 2° 35′ of ſouth latitude; and the latter on the mouth of a ſmall river, about 60 miles eaſt of the other, between *Rio Buranduba* and *Porto das Oncas:* though there are ſome other rivers which run through the province, and fall into the *Atlantic*.

4. THE captainric of *RIO GRANDE*, lies on the eaſt of that of *Siara*, and winds itſelf from eaſt to ſouth, where it is bounded by *Parayba*; being about 68 miles in extent from ſouth-eaſt to north-weſt.

The

The *Rio Grande*, or *Great River*, which gives name to this government, falls into the ocean in 34° 26′ of weſt longitude, and 5° 30′ of ſouth latitude: but has nothing to deſerve that pompous title; except that, towards the mouth, it is able to bear ſhips of ſome bulk: for its entrance is difficult and dangerous; though, farther in, it is wide and deep enough. The natives call this country *Porigi*, or *Polingi*, which is poorly inhabited; and has only two forts for the protection of a few *Portugueſe* plantations.

5. The captainric of *PARAYBA*, is about 100 miles in extent from north to ſouth; being divided into two equal parts, by a river of the ſame name, which diſcharges itſelf by two mouths into the ocean, in 6° 24′ of ſouth latitude. There are ſeveral towns and villages in this diſtrict, well inhabited either by *Portugueſe* or *Indians*: but *Parayba* is the capital, which is ſituated at the mouth of the river, on the ſouth bank of it, about three leagues from the ſea, in 35° 10′ of weſt longitude, and 6° 50′ of ſouth latitude. The town is well built, and ſurrounded with ramparts; the mouth of the river being defended by three forts; and a ſhip may carry ſix or 700 barrels of ſugar up to the town with great ſecurity; though not without a pilot. The port of *Lucena*, which is a good harbour for ſhips, is about two leagues north of the capital. There are alſo ſeven large villages inhabited by *Indians*; for there is a great fertility throughout the whole country, which abounds in brazil-wood, ſugar, tobacco, cotton, roucou, hides, barley, *Indian* wheat, potatoes, ananas, melons, citrons, oranges, bananas, pakanas, and other neceſſaries of life.

6. The

6. THE captainric of *TAMARAC*, or *Tamarica*, is ſo called from an iſland, lying on its coaſt, near the mouth of the river of the ſame name; which makes the principal part of its diſtrict, though its territory extends upwards of 90 miles upon the continent. The iſland of *Tamarica* is ſituated in 35° 6′ of weſt longitude, and 7° 54′ of ſouth latitude: it is about three miles in length, one in breadth, and eight in circumference; being parted from the continent by a very narrow channel, and having a commodious haven on the ſouth ſide, with ſome good ſprings, and ſmall rivers of freſh water.

THE capital town is called *Noſtra Signora da Conceizao*, or *da Tamarica*, which lies at the entrance of the river, and is defended by a ſmall caſtle, with a redoubt to command the avenues. There is alſo the town of *Goyana*, ſituated on the river of the ſame name, about 10 miles north of *Conceizao*; and there are ſeveral *Indian* villages in the diſtrict, with many ſugar plantations, and 22 ſugar mills.

7. THE captainric of *PERNAMBUCO*, or *Fernambucca*, is one of the moſt conſiderable provinces of *Brazil*; extending about 180 miles along the eaſtern coaſt, and a conſiderable way up the country. It is divided into eleven ſmall diſtricts, each of which has its denomination from its chief city, or village, 1. *Olinda*; 2. *Garazu*; 3. *Arracife*; 4. *Meribela*; 5. *Sant Antonio*; 6. *Poyulca*; *Serinhaim*; 8. *Gonzalo de Una*; 9. *Porto Calvo*; 10. and 11. the north and ſouth *Alagoa*: but the moſt conſiderable of them are *Olinda*, and *Garazu*; the reſt ſcarcely deſerving the names of towns,

towns, and ſome even of villages; conſiſting only of a few hamlets for the overſeers and ſlaves at the ſugar plantations.

THE whole province of *Pernambuco* abounds with variety of fruits, paſture-grounds, and cattle: being well watered with ſeveral conſiderable rivers, and particularly the *Capibaribi*, which falls into the *Biriribi*, near *St. Antonio de Vaz*.

THE town of *Olinda*, was the capital of the province; being ſeated on the northern part of it, near the harbour of *Arracife*, in 35° of weſt longitude, and 8° 10′ of ſouth latitude. It was formerly a remarkable place for trade; becauſe the greateſt part of the product of *North Brazil* was conveyed here to be exported to *Portugal*: but it was ſo unhappily ſituated among hills, which commanded it, that it could not be fortified enough againſt an enemy, without great difficulty and expence; on which account, it became an eaſy prey to the *Dutch*, in 1630, who ruined a great part of the town, and demoliſhed the fortifications in ſuch a manner, that it is now looked upon as an inconſiderable place by the *Portugueſe*, notwithſtanding they have inhabited it ever ſince it was abandoned by the *Dutch*.

SINCE the decline of *Olinda*, the town of *Permambuco*, or the *Recief*, is become the capital of the captainric; which is the ſame place that was called *Maurice* town by the *Dutch*, who built it on the iſland of *St. Antonio de Vaz*, a little to the ſouth of *Olinda*. The harbour of the *Recief*, or *Arracife*, is compoſed partly of a peninſula on the continent, and partly of ſeveral ſmall iſlands oppoſite to it; which were built upon, and fortified by

the *Dutch*, who made a communication by a bridge between *Maurice Town* and the continent.

THE port of *Arracife*, oppoſite the town of *Pernambuco*, is ſo called from its ſituation among a ridge of rocks or ſands; and the harbour of *Pernambuco*, or rather *Infernoboco*, the mouth of hell, was ſo named by the *Portugueſe*, on account of the rocks and ſhoals, under water, at its entrance: but *Arracife* is now reported to be the ſtrongeſt port in all *Brazil*; being defended by two caſtles, and ſome other forts. It is ſhut up by thoſe rocks and ſands, which form a kind of bar, and ſtreighten the entrance ſeveral leagues: ſo that great veſſels are obliged to enter by a very narrow opening; after which they come into a little bay, where a ſmall river, flowing from the inland, diſcharges itſelf, about a league from *Olinda*. The port conſiſts of a ſuburb, containing ſome large ware-houſes for ſugar, and other merchandizes; being defended by a caſtle, built upon a narrow paſſage, from whence the garriſon can eaſily obſtruct the entrance of ſhips: though it was taken by captain *Lancaſter*, in 1595, with ſeven *Engliſh* veſſels: but, after his departure, the *Portugueſe* built another caſtle on a rock in the ſea, together with ſome other forts and outworks; from which time, the entrance has been inacceſſible to all ſtrangers.

GARAZU is about 18 miles from *Olinda*; but is rather a large village, than a town: and there are no other conſiderable places upon the coaſt.

8. THE captainric of *SEREGIPPE*, receives its denomination from a river that runs almoſt through the middle of it, and diſembogues itſelf into

into the ocean, between the mouths of two other rivers, called *Guaratiba* and *Vazabaris*. The country extends from north to ſouth about 96 miles, along the eaſtern coaſt, between 10° 50′, and 11° 45′ of ſouth latitude. It is divided into ſeveral inferior diſtricts, which abound with plantations of ſugar and tobacco: but the only remarkable town is *Seregippe*, the capital of the captainric, diſtinguiſhed by the title of *Del Rey*, or *Villa de bon Succeſſo*, and more commonly *St. Chriſtopher*: being ſituated on the north ſide of the river *Vazabaris*, 7 leagues from the ſea, in 36° 57′ of weſt longitude, and 11° 15′ of ſouth latitude: though it is now become inconſiderable.

9. The captainric of *BAHIA de TODOS los SANCTOS*, or *Bay of all Saints*, receives its name from a large bay, about two leagues and a half over; being in ſome places 12, and in others 18 fathom deep; intermixed with a number of little pleaſant iſlands, producing abundance of cotton.

The country extends about 200 miles along the coaſt, excluſive of its windings; being eſteemed one of the richeſt, and moſt conſiderable of all *Brazil*, eſpecially for its great plenty of ſugar: but it is very unhealthy, on account of the exceſſive heat of the climate.

The principal city is *St. Salvador*, or *Cividad de Bahia*; which is the metropolis of all *Brazil*, the ſee of an archbiſhop, and the reſidence of the vice-roy; being a populous, magnificent, and opulent place, ſituated on the eaſt ſide of the bay, in 38° 25′ of weſt longitude, and 12° 7′ of ſouth latitude. It is well fortified, both by art and nature: the principal avenues being guarded by ſeven forts about the town, be-

ſides thoſe which command the entrance of the harbour. There is a great trade carried on in this capital, whoſe principal inhabitants have much politeneſs and civility; but the lower kind are intolerably proud and inſolent. The city is ſuppoſed to contain about 2000 houſes; inhabited by 12000 *Portugueſe*, and double that number of negroes, who are kept in the moſt abject degree of ſlavery by their imperious maſters, either in carrying them about in ſedans, or working them in the plantations of ſugar and tobacco, in which ſome maſters have above 500 ſlaves, whoſe labour is ſo hard, and ſuſtenance ſo ſmall, that they are reputed to live long if they hold it out for ſeven years.

10. The captainric of *RIO dos ILHEOS*, receives its name from ſeveral iſlands lying before the main bay of it, and extends about 140 miles from north to ſouth, excluſive of the windings of the coaſt; having ſome rivers that croſs it from weſt to eaſt, particularly the *Rio das Contas*, *das Ilheos*, *de Duna*, and *Juſſia*. The chief places are, *Ilheos*, the capital; *Noſtra Signora da Victoria*, *St. Anna*; and *St. George*; beſides ſome hamlets, and ſeveral ſugar plantations: but *Ilheos* is the only town of any conſequence; which is ſituated on the ſouth ſide of the bay, in 39° 40′ of weſt longitude, and 15° 12′ of ſouth latitude; being watered by the river *Ilheos*, and containing about 200 *Portugueſe* families.

11. THE captainric of *PORTO SEGURO*, received its name from a bay, which was ſo called by *Peter Alvarez Capralis*, the firſt diſcoverer of this part of the continent; and the country extends itſelf about 200 miles from north to ſouth; being

being watered by ten rivers, the principal of which are, the *Rio Grande*, and *Rio Dolce*, on both its extremities. The chief places, are *Porto Seguro*, the capital; *Santa Cruz*; and *St. Amaro*: but the two latter are very inconſiderable; though the former contains about 500 *Portugueſe* families; being ſituated on the top of a white rock, near the mouth of a ſmall river, in 39° 41′ of weſt longitude, and 17° of ſouth latitude.

12. The captainric of *ESPIRITO SANTO*, or the *Holy Ghoſt*, is ſo denominated from its capital town, which is ſituated on a bay, about three leagues from the ſea, in 40° 6′ of weſt longitude, and 20° 30′ of ſouth latitude; being inhabited by about 200 *Portugueſe* families: but there is no other town in the province; which is watered by ſome rivers that render it extremely fertile; and the coaſt extends about 200 miles from north to ſouth.

13. The captainric of *RIO de JANEIRO*, is ſo called from the remarkable river and bay of the ſame name, which was diſcovered in *January* 1575. It extends about 250 miles along the coaſt; which, having run almoſt in a direct line from north to ſouth, from the bay *de Todos Sanctos*, to that of *Janeiro*, begins to wind from eaſt to weſt. The principal city is *Rio Janeiro*, or more properly *St. Sebaſtian*; which is a populous place, ſituated on the ſmall bay of *St. Salvador*, about two leagues from the ſea, and 16 north-eaſt from the *Rio Janeiro*, in 40° 5′ of weſt longitude, and 22° 40′ of ſouth latitude; being about 190 leagues ſouth of *Bahia*, or *St. Salvador*. The plains which ſurround the city, and the banks of the *Janeiro*, are extremely fertile in ſugar-canes, indico, tobacco,

and cotton: while the mountains are covered with brazil-wood.

ANGRA de los REYES is another port town, about 100 miles ſouth-weſt of *St. Sebaſtian*. There is alſo the town and harbour of *St. Salvador*: but neither of theſe are remarkable for trade; and the reſt of the country is chiefly inhabited by *Indians*, who are no better than a kind of ſlaves to the *Portugueſe*.

14. THE captainric of *St. VINCENT*, extends upwards of 300 miles from north to ſouth. The chief town is *St. Vincent*, which is ſituated at the confluence of three rivers, on a fine bay of the *Atlantic Ocean*, in 45° of weſt longitude, and 23° 45′ of ſouth latitude. There is alſo the town of *Santos*, and ſome others no ways remarkable: though *St. Vincent* is much frequented, on account of the gold mines that have been diſcovered in the mountains to the weſtward.

15. THE captainric of *DEL REY*, or the *Royal Captainric*, has been erroneouſly made a province of *Paraguay*; for it is part of *Brazil*, and extends from the river of *St. Francis*, in 26° 40′ to the mouth of *Rio de la Plata*, in 34° 52′ of ſouth latitude. The *Portugueſe* had only a few towns in the country, which is alſo but poorly inhabited by the *Indians*, who abandoned it to the new-comers, and fled into *Paraguay*, to avoid their cruelty: however, ſince the diſcovery of the gold mines, the *Portugueſe* have erected ſeveral forts on the north ſide of the river *La Plata*, and on the iſlands at the mouth of it, to prevent the *Spaniards* from making any eſtabliſhments on that ſide of the river.

BESIDES,

BESIDES, the *Portugueſe* have made a regular ſettlement upon the iſland of *St. Catherine*, which lies upon this coaſt, in 49° 45′ of weſt longitude, and extends from 27° 35′ to 28° of ſouth latitude; being 27 miles in length, and 6 in breadth: though this iſland, till of late years, was only a retreat for vagabonds, and out-laws, from all parts of *Brazil*; who had plenty of proviſions in the iſland, and exchanged them with ſuch ſhips as touched there for cloathing, and other *European* commodities.

BUT the *Brazils* are moſt remarkable for their rich mines of gold and diamonds. The firſt gold mine was diſcovered in 1680, near *St. Sebaſtian*; and, after this, many others were found in ſeveral parts of the country, that have greatly enriched the *European* world, as they furniſh to the value of five millions ſterling every year, of which a fifth belongs to his *Portugueſe* majeſty. The diamond mines lie to the weſtward of *St. Sebaſtian*, and are farmed by the king of *Portugal*, to a company of merchants at *Rio Janeiro*, for the annual rent of 138,000 cruſadoes, or 26,000 *l.* ſterling; on condition that they ſhall not employ any more than 600 ſlaves in theſe mines. And the brazil-wood alſo produces to the value of 30,000 *l.* annually: ſo that the produce of this country alone ſupports the crown of *Portugal*, which, on every other ſide, has been deprived of its former ſources of wealth.

CHAP. II.

An account of the different countries of SOUTH AMERICA, *which are ſtill poſſeſſed by the* INDIANS. *The deſcription of* PARAGUAY, *and of the government eſtabliſhed there by the* JESUITS. *The republic of* ST. PAUL. TERRA MAGELLANICA; *with its bays, and iſlands; particularly* TERRA DEL FUEGO, *and* STATEN Iſland. *An account of the* Indians *of* CHILI; *and of the country of the* AMAZONS: *as alſo of the* Indians *of* POPAYAN *and* TERRA FIRMA.

THE countries which are already under the dominion of the *Spaniards*, are of ſuch great compaſs, and afford ſuch immenſe riches, that they have no ſtrong temptations to extend their conqueſts, or to increaſe their diſcoveries. The ſame may be aſſerted of the *Portugueſe* ſettlements in *Brazil*: though it is evident, that there is a very large tract of country in *South America*, altogether undiſcovered, or at leaſt unpoſſeſſed, by any *European* nation. It is imagined, that this unknown country is about 2000 miles in length from eaſt to weſt, and near 1000 broad from north to ſouth; as alſo, that it contains more people than all the provinces of the *Spaniſh* empire: beſides, it is highly probable, that this country is extremely rich in gold, ſilver, and jewels; as well as in cattle, corn, ſugar, rich drugs, and fine fruits.

THE people poſſeſſed of theſe parts, are not only deſcendants from the original inhabitants; but alſo conſiſt of great numbers of other *Indians*, who have

have ſheltered themſelves here from the cruelties of the *Spaniards* and *Portugueſe*: nor is there any juſt reaſon to ſuppoſe they ever will be conquered, or that they will ſubmit to any *Europeans*; unleſs the miſſionaries extend their power over all theſe *Indians*, in the ſame manner as they have ſubdued the natives of *Paraguay*.

THOSE territories of *South America*, which are ſtill poſſeſſed by the *Indians*, are, the greateſt part of *Paraguay*; *Terra Magellanica*; *Patagonia*; part of *Chili*, and *Peru*; the country of the *Amazons*; moſt of *Guiana*; and part of *Terra Firma*.

1. THE country of *PARAGUAY*, or *Rio de la Plata*, has been already deſcribed in PART II. chapter II. of this work;* with an account of the *Indians*, the ſettlements made by the *Spaniards*, and ſome mention of the miſſionaries: but the laſt have now arrived to ſuch a degree of power, that it is neceſſary to ſhew what ſort of an independent monarchy they have been endeavouring to eſtabliſh among the *Indians* of this remote part of the world.

IT has been the misfortune of the chriſtian church in *South America*, for more than a century paſt, that no prieſts, but the jeſuits, have taken any pains, either to convert the *Indians* by their promulgating the doctrine, or to influence them by the regularity of their conduct; which has thrown that important buſineſs upon the jeſuitical miſſionaries, whereby they have acquired ſuch amazing power in *Paraguay*.

THE country under the government of the fathers, lies about 600 miles ſouth-eaſt of the captainric

* See this Volume, p. 267, and 281.

tainric of *Janeiro* in *Brazil*, about the ſame diſtance north of the province of *Buenos Ayres*, 540 north-eaſt from *Tucuman*, and about 300 north-weſt from the *Spaniſh* province of *Paraguay*. It is an extenſive, pleaſant, and fertile country, watered with a variety of rivers and ſtreams; abounding with timber and fruit-trees. It produces great quantities of cotton, indico, ſugar, pimento, ipecacuana, and other valuable drugs. The plains are full of horſes, mules, black cattle, and ſheep. The mountains contain great treaſures of gold and ſilver: beſides which, ſome iron mines have been lately diſcovered.

THE *Paraguayan Indians* were a brave warlike people, who ſcorned to ſubmit to the *Spaniards* or *Portugueſe:* but ſubmitted to the government of the jeſuits, who learnt their languages, and conformed to their uncivilized cuſtoms, till they had an opportunity of cultivating their minds, and improving them with the knowledge of the ſocial virtues. They began with gathering them into towns, and forming them into ſocieties; which they engaged to protect againſt the inſults of the *Spaniſh* ſoldiery, and from the tyranny of the *Spaniſh* governors. Theſe promiſes eaſily induced the *Indians* to put themſelves under the ſole direction of the miſſionaries, who converted them to chriſtianity, and entirely won their affections, by ſuffering them to continue free from all taxes, and other denotations of ſlavery, except barely acknowledging the king of *Spain* for their ſovereign, and living under a ſpiritual ſubjection to their fathers. But the *Brazilian Portugueſe*, called mamalukes by the *Europeans*, poured in their numerous bands againſt theſe new converts,

ſlaughtered

ſlaughtered all that reſiſted them, and carried great numbers into ſlavery: however, the miſſionaries obtained permiſſion, from the court of *Spain*, to arm the *Paraguayans*, and encourage them to ſtand in their own defence; from which time they reſolutely engaged the mamalukes in ſeveral encounters, and have met with no farther oppoſition.

THE miſſion gradually increaſed, till it attained its preſent extent, which comprehends at leaſt 300,000 families, who are moſt abſolutely ſubſervient to the fathers, and pay them all the reverence that can be ſhewn to mortals.

THESE *Indians* are divided into 42 pariſhes, extending along the banks of the rivers *Paraguay*, and *Parana*; none of them being above 30 miles diſtance from another. Each pariſh is governed by a ſingle jeſuit, who is like a provincial prince: his word is not only a law, but even an oracle: his nod infers ſupreme command; and there is no appeal from his deciſion, which is abſolute in all cauſes both civil and eccleſiaſtic.

EVERY family has its proportion of land and labour; of plenty and reſt: for induſtry is common to all: though wealth is attained by none: becauſe the product of their harveſt is carried into the magazines of the ſociety; from whence the fathers diſperſe whatever they think neceſſary, to every family, according to its degree. The ſurplus is ſo conſiderable, that the moſt judicious *Spaniards* conceive it to be about four millions of pieces of eight, or 716,666 *l.* ſterling; which is ſent either to *Cordoua*, or *Santa Fè*, where there are procurator-generals, who take care of what belongs to the ſociety, and occaſionally tranſport their wealth into *Europe*.

IT

IT is impoſſible to imagine any thing more magnificent than their pariſh churches, where divine ſervice is celebrated with the utmoſt ſplendor and ſolemnity. The houſes, or rather palaces, of theſe ſpiritual fathers, are alſo extremely ſuperb. There is an annual meeting of all the miſſionaries, who then confer on the methods neceſſary to be taken for promoting the common concerns of the miſſion, eſtabliſhing new laws, or aboliſhing old ones. This is the ſupreme council, which is no ways accountable either to the pope, or his Catholic majeſty: but the caziques are accountable to this council, or congregation; from which they receive ſuch orders as concern the miſſion in general: though they are entirely directed by the preſiding prieſts in matters relating to their particular pariſhes.

THE military eſtabliſhment is ſo very conſiderable, that each pariſh has a numerous body of horſe and foot, regularly exerciſed every ſunday afternoon, and divided into regiments, conſiſting each of ſix companies, and every company of fifty men. Theſe regiments are properly officered; and the whole eſtabliſhment conſiſts of about ſixty thouſand men, under the command of ſeveral general officers: but, one of the fathers always commands in chief, when any body of their forces takes the field: for it is their invariable maxim, never to permit their *Indians*, either in peace or war, to acknowledge any other authority. This *Indian* army is ſurprizingly well diſciplined; for they know how to handle the muſket and bayonet, like *European* troops; as alſo to throw heavy ſtones, or bullets, out of their ſlings, with great force and dexterity.

dexterity. The fathers pretend, that theſe forces are kept up to ſecure their ſubjects againſt the *Portugueſe*, who formerly invaded them, and committed many devaſtations: beſides, the fathers make uſe of theſe troops for ſcowering the country, to prevent the *Spaniards*, or any other ſtrangers, from coming privately into the miſſionary territories.

The fathers ought to pay to his Catholic majeſty, a piece of eight for every head under their juriſdiction; which capitation-tax would produce a conſiderable revenue, if it was fairly collected, and honeſtly paid: but the jeſuits have eluded the payment, by bribing the governor of *Buenos Ayres*, whoſe duty it is to viſit the miſſion once in five years.

Such a government ſeems to be unchangeable, while it proceeds upon the ſame principle: nor is it ſurprizing that theſe jeſuits are extremely careful, in keeping the poor natives ſlaves to ignorance and bigotry; as alſo in concealing ſo much empire and wealth from the world, eſpecially *Spain*, at whoſe expence they were ſent to convert the *Indians*, and to make them ſubjects to the *Spaniſh* monarchy.

This was the ſituation and authority of every jeſuit in *Paraguay*; where leſs than 50 monks have above a million of ſouls under their government; who, like abject ſlaves, worſhip the prieſts as if they were ſo many gods. But the miſſionaries have very lately renounced all allegiance to the crown of *Spain*; and proclaimed father *Nicholas de Leuco*, one of their order, king of *Paraguay*; who, according to advices from *Buenos Ayres* and *Panama*, has been crowned by the name of

of *Don Nicholas* I. and has made a progreſs down the river *Paraguay*; which makes the *Spaniards* entertain a ſuſpicion, that he has an intention of attacking the towns of *Santa Fè*, or *Buenos Ayres*, ſituated upon that river: however, the *Spaniards* have thrown ſtrong garriſons in both places; and it is expected they will be aſſiſted by the *Portugueſe*, who have been alſo offended by the jeſuits, as they lately prevented an advantageous exchange of territory between the crowns of *Spain* and *Portugal*. It is reported, that this extraordinary conduct of the jeſuits in *Paraguay*, has occaſioned the late diſgrace of father *Francis Ravago*, confeſſor to his Catholic majeſty; whereby the ſociety ſeems to be excluded from this important poſt, which they have retained for upwards of two centuries. Beſides, the court of *Spain* has iſſued orders for the embarkation of a conſiderable body of troops, under the command of Don *Pedro de Cervallos*, for the protection of the *Spaniſh* ſettlements, and the ſuppreſſion of the general juriſdiction of the jeſuits.

THE republic of *St. PAUL*, is a little ſtate, about 120 miles eaſt of *Paraguay*, and about 30 north of the captainric of *St. Vincent* in *Brazil*; being ſurrounded with inacceſſible mountains, and by the impenetrable foreſt of *Pernabacaba*. It conſiſts of *Spaniards*, *Portugueſe*, creoles, meſtizoes, mulattoes, and negroes; who lived at firſt without religion, laws, faith, or honeſty; but were drove by neceſſity into this kind of government. They are about 4000, and call themſelves a free people, by the name of *Pauliſts*, their capital town: though they pay a kind of tribute to the king of *Portugal*, out of their gold mines, which

are

are frequently found in the mountains, where they employ ſeveral *Indian* ſlaves in their drudgery.

2. *TERRA MAGELLANICA*, the *Streights of Magellan*, and *Patagonia*, comprehend a great tract of territory, extending from *Paraguay*, to the utmoſt extremity of *South America*; that is, from the 35th to the 54th degree of ſouth latitude: but it is difficult to aſcertain its boundaries on the weſt ſide; for *Ovalle* makes the kingdom of *Chili*, reach quite to the *Magellanic Streights*:* however, as the *Spaniards* have no poſſeſſions on that coaſt beyond 44 or 45 degrees, all that lies farther to the ſouth muſt be included in this *Magellanic* tract; which is therefore bounded by *Chili*, and the *South Sea*, on the north and weſt; by the *Southern Ocean*, on the ſouth; and by the *Atlantic Ocean*, on the eaſt. It lies between 53 and 71 degrees of weſt longitude: being about 1140 miles long; and above 530 broad towards the north, but much more contracted towards the ſouth: being firſt diſcovered by *Ferdinand*† *Magellan*, a *Portugueſe* in the ſervice of *Spain*, who communicated his name to the country, and the adjacent ſtreights, by which he found a paſſage into the *South Seas*.

MAGELLAN himſelf made no great diſcoveries on this coaſt: but thoſe adventurers who followed him this way, aſſert, that many of the inhabitants were of a gigantic ſtature, and that they went naked; which is ſomewhat ſtrange, conſidering the coldneſs of the climate, and the ſterility of the country.

It is to be obſerved, that the name of *Patagonia* is ſometimes given to all the eaſtern coaſt of this part-

* See this Volume, p. 154. † p. 137

part of the country, from the *Spaniſh* ſettlements to the ſtreights of *Magellan*. The whole territory to the northward of the river of *Plate* is full of wood, and ſtored with immenſe quantities of large timber-trees: but no trees of any kind are to be met with to the ſouthward of that river, except a few peach-trees, firſt planted and cultivated by the *Spaniards* in the neighbourhood of *Buenos Ayres*; which is a peculiarity not to be paralleled in any other known part of the globe: for Sir *John Narborough*, in particular, who was ſent out by king *Charles* II. expreſsly to examine this country, and the ſtreights of *Magellan*, in 1670, ſays, that he never ſaw a ſtick of wood in the country, large enough to make the handle of a hatchet.

BUT, though the country is deſtitute of wood, it abounds with paſture; the land, in general, appearing to be made up of downs, of a light dry gravelly ſoil, and producing a great quantity of long coarſe graſs, which grows in tufts interſperſed with large barren ſpots of gravel between them. This graſs, in many places, feeds very numerous herds of black cattle; which were firſt brought over by the *Spaniards*, on their eſtabliſhing themſelves in *Paraguay*; and they are increaſed ſo much, that they are not conſidered as private property; but many thouſands at a time are ſlaughtered every year, by the hunters of *Buenos Ayres*, only for their hides and tallow; who ſometimes take theſe cattle alive in nooſes, for the uſes of agriculture. There are great numbers of wild dogs, which feed upon the carcaſes of the dead cattle. The country is alſo over-run with horſes, originally brought there by the *Spaniards*, which run wild like the

black

black cattle, and are of ſuch little value, that the beſt of them when caught, are ſold for a dollar a-piece in the neighbouring ſettlements. Theſe herds of wild cattle, and droves of horſes, may increaſe ſo much as to fill all the ſouthern parts of this continent with their breed; which muſt prove of conſiderable advantage to ſuch ſhips as touch upon the coaſt. There are great numbers of *Peruvian* ſheep in all parts of this country; with immenſe quantities of ſeals; and a great variety of ſea fowl, among the moſt remarkable of which are the penguins. But freſh-water is very ſcarce; the land being generally of a nitrous and ſaline nature, which frequently makes the ponds and ſtreams have a brackiſh taſte: though, as good water has been found there in ſmall quantities, it is probable, on a farther ſearch, that the inconvenience may be removed.

The weſtern coaſt is not only of leſs extent; but, on account of the *Andes* * which ſkirt it, and ſtretch quite down to the water, is a very rocky and dangerous ſhore: though it has ſeveral conſiderable rivers that deſcend from the *Andes*, and water the country in their courſe to the *South Sea*; the principal of which are, the two *Campanas*, that of the *Giants*, *St. Gillian*, *de los Apoſtolos*, *de los Martyres*, *de St. Steven*, *Gallegos*, *St. Domingo*, and *Sinfondo*; the laſt dividing this weſtern part from the ſouth of *Chili*.

This country is inhabited by ſeveral different nations of *Indians*: but they are very imperfectly known; and have ſeldom been ſeen above two or three at a time, by any ſhips that have touched upon the coaſt; though, towards *Buenos Ayres*, they

* See this Volume, p. 160.

they are numerous enough to be very troubleſome to the *Spaniards*; appearing, in their manners, to be nearly allied to the *Chileſians*, who have long ſet the whole *Spaniſh* power at defiance, have frequently ravaged their country, and to this day retain their independency. The *Pampas* ſeem to inhabit a conſiderable part towards the north; and the *Patagons* another towards the ſouth, who received this name from *Magellan*, on account of their gigantic ſtature. The *Ceſſares* are ſituated between the *Pampas* and the *Patagons*, extending weſtward beyond the *Andes*; and are ſuppoſed to be the deſcendants of ſome *Spaniards*, who were ſhipwrecked upon the coaſt, in 1540; where they intermixed with the *Indians*, and have formed themſelves into a kind of republic. There are alſo the *Envos* of *Coſſi*; the *Kenemets* of *Karay*; the *Kennecas* of *Caramay*; and the *Karaiks* of *Morena*; with ſome other nations of a moderate ſtature, and more polite than the *Chunions*, and *Huillons*, who inhabit the continent and iſlands about the ſtreights of *Magellan*.

THERE are ſeveral bays along theſe coaſts, either formed by nature, or by the many rivers that diſcharge themſelves into the ocean: but little more of them is known than by their ſituations, which may be ſufficiently underſtood by conſulting the map. Thoſe of *Anegada*, *St. Mathias*, *Camarones*, *Port Deure*, and *Port St. Julian*, are the moſt conſiderable; and the laſt is more ſo than the reſt; being a convenient rendezvous, in caſe of ſeparation, for all cruizers bound to the ſouthward, and the whole coaſt of *Patagonia*, from the river of *Plate* to the ſtreights of *Magellan*, as it lies nearly

nearly parellel to their uſual route, in 63° 35′ of weſt longitude, and 49° of ſouth latitude, where commodore *Anſon* ordered his ſhips to rendezvous, and take in a ſupply of ſalt, in *February* 1741, before he undertook his remarkable paſſage round *Cape Horn* into the *South Seas*; after which they were ordered, in caſe of ſeparation,*to cruize off the iſland of *Nueſtra Senora de Socoro*, on the weſtern coaſt. This ſquadron left port *St. Julian*, on the 27th of *February*; and, on the 7th of *March*, paſſed the ſtreights *Le Maire*, on the ſouth-eaſt of *Terra del Fuego*, inſtead of ſailing through the ſtreights of *Magellan*, on the oppoſite part of that iſland: but, this was a very unproper ſeaſon of the year to make the paſſage of *Cape Horn*; to which they were now neceſſitated by their too late departure from *England*: for, after a continual ſeries of the greateſt calamities from the ſeverity of the moſt tempeſtuous weather, the whole ſquadron was ſeparated, and it was the 30th of *April*, before the commodore completed his paſſage round *Cape Horn*, which ſhould have been made in the height of ſummer; that is, in the months of *December* and *January*; for the more diſtant the time of paſſing is taken from this ſeaſon, the more diſaſtrous it may be reaſonably expected to prove.

THERE are a great many iſlands all along the three coaſts; the largeſt, and moſt conſiderable of which lies on the ſouthern ſide: thoſe on the eaſt are inconſiderable: nor are thoſe on the weſt of any great conſequence.

I. On the eaſtern coaſt are the following iſlands. 1. *Pepy's Iſland*, which is ſituated in 64° 20′ of

* See this Volume, p. 221.

weſt longitude, and 47° 30′ of ſouth latitude; about 55 leagues eaſt of *Cape Blanco*, on the continent. 2. The iſle of *Penguins*, about three leagues from the ſhore, and about 18 ſouth of *Cape Blanco*. 3. The three iſlands of *Sebaeld de Werds*, between 67° 20′, and 67° 50′ of weſt longitude; and between 50° 50′ and 51° 5′ of ſouth latitude; about 53 leagues ſouth-eaſt of port *St. Julian*. 4. *Falkland*'s iſles, or *New Iſlands*, ſomewhat to the ſouth-weſt of *Sebaeld de Werds*. All theſe iſlands are ſmall; but may be of ſervice for cruizers to the *South Seas*.

PEPY's iſland was diſcovered by captain *Cowley*, in 1686, who repreſents it as a commodious place for ſhips to wood and water at: he alſo ſays, that it is provided with a very good capacious harbour, where a thouſand ſhips might ride at anchor in great ſafety: it likewiſe abounds with fowls; and, as the ſhore is either rocks or ſands, it ſeems to promiſe great plenty of fiſh. *Falkland*'s iſles have been ſeen by ſeveral navigators, and particularly by *Woods Rogers*, who run along the north-eaſt coaſt, in 1708; and ſays, that they extended about 120 miles in length; appearing with gentle deſcents from hill to hill, and ſeeming to be good ground, interſperſed with woods, and not deſtitute of harbours.

II. THE moſt conſiderable iſlands of all, being on the ſouthern coaſt, are as follows.

1. *TERRA del FUEGO*, *Fogo*, or *Land of Fire*; being ſo called, by the firſt diſcoverers, on account of ſome vulcanoes, which emitted great quantities of fire and ſmoke. It is ſaid to be ſituated between 60° 40′ and 69° 20′ of weſt longitude;

tude; and between 52° 30′ and 56 of ſouth latitude: though ſome writers make its longitude more extenſive; by whoſe accounts it may be about 480 miles in length from eaſt to weſt, and about 220 in breadth from north to ſouth. This iſland is rough and mountainous; but has ſeveral fertile vallies, plains, and paſture grounds, watered with a multitude of fine ſprings that come down from the mountains. There are ſeveral bays and roads, between this and the adjacent iſlands: the lands abound with wood, and ſtones for ballaſt: but the weſterly winds are extremely violent and impetuous along the ſouth coaſt; ſo that thoſe who ſail weſtward muſt be careful to keep as much to the ſouth of them as poſſible; for which purpoſe, the beſt directions are given in the relation of lord *Anſon*'s voyage round the world, in the 9th chapter of the 1ſt book. The inhabitants are naturally as white as the *Europeans*; but go naked, and paint their bodies with a variety of colours: thoſe on the ſouth ſide being very uncivilized, cunning, and barbarous: but, thoſe on the other ſide, are reported to be a poor, harmleſs, and affable people; whoſe cloathing are the ſkins of beaſts; and their huts are made of poles ſtuck round about two or three feet into the ground, meeting on the top like a ſugar-loaf, and covered with ſkins, or bark of trees.

2. The iſland called *STATEN*, from its having been firſt diſcovered by the *Dutch*, is about ſeven leagues to the eaſt of *Terra del Fuego*; being divided from it by the ſtreights *La Maire*, which received this name from the firſt diſcoverer, who was a merchant of *Amſterdam*, in 1615. Theſe

ſtreights are often eſteemed to be the boundary between the *Atlantic* and *Pacific Oceans*; and are between five and ſix leagues in length; through which commodore *Anſon* made his paſſage into the *South Seas*, inſtead of paſſing through the ſtreights of *Magellan*, which are above 100 leagues in length, from the cape of the *Virgins* at the entrance of the *North-Sea*, to the cape of *Deſire*, at the oppoſite extremity; and in ſome places about 30 leagues over, between the iſland and the coaſt of *Patagonia*, though in others not more than a league or two. This iſland of *Staten* is about 30 miles long, and 16 broad; having great wildneſs and horror in its appearance: for it ſeems to be entirely compoſed of inacceſſible rocks, without the leaſt mixture of earth or mould between them. Theſe rocks terminate in a great number of ragged points, which ſpire up to a prodigious height, and are perpetually covered with ſnow: the points themſelves are on every ſide ſurrounded with frightful precipices, and often overhang in a moſt aſtoniſhing manner; the hills, which bare them, being generally ſeparated from each other by narrow clifts, that appear as if the country had been frequently rent by earthquakes; for theſe chaſms are nearly perpendicular, and extend through the ſubſtance of the main rocks, almoſt to their very bottoms: ſo that nothing can be imagined more ſavage and gloomy, than the whole aſpect of this coaſt, which has no inhabitants. But it is to be obſerved, that mention is made of a paſſage called *Brewer*, about 13 leagues eaſt of this iſland, which was the route taken by Mr. *Gwin*, in 1701, in his return from the *South Seas*; who alſo diſcovered

a ſmall iſland, about 45 leagues north-eaſt of *Staten* iſland.

THERE are alſo ſeveral other ſmall iſlands, ſcattered at different diſtances from 55° 20′ to 56° 40′ of ſouth latitude, between *Staten* iſland and *Cape Horn*; being the iſland of *Cezambre*, *Vanverland*, thoſe of *Evouts*, the *Hermits*, *St. Alfonſe*, and *Barneveld*'s iſlands. Beſides theſe, there are ſome other iſlands to the north-weſt of *Cape Horn*, extending along the ſouthern coaſt of *Terra del Fuego*, as far as the ſtreights of *Magellan*; in which there are likewiſe a great number of little iſlands ſcattered up and down: but none of them are any ways remarkable.

III. THE iſlands on the eaſtern coaſt of *Terra Magellanica*, are parted by very narrow channels from the continent; being as follow.

1. *TRINIDAD*, or *St. Madre de Dios*, is ſuppoſed to have received the denomination on account of three mountains, or headlands, that are ſeen at ſome diſtance. It lies in 71 degrees of weſt longitude; and under the 51ſt. and 52d. degree of ſouth latitude; being 105 leagues long, and 30 broad: but the inhabitants, who are a rude race of uncivilized *Indians*, called the iſland *Catana*. The ſoil is ſtony, wild, and barren; which obliges the natives to live upon fiſh, and to drink the oil preſſed out of ſea wolves. The trees yield a diſmal aſpect; being blaſted by ſtrong winds, parched for want of freſh water, and ſeldom covered with any verdure. There are alſo about 80 very ſmall iſlands, lying upon the weſtern coaſt of *Trinidad*; with that of *St. Martin*, and ſome others, to the eaſt; but they are ſo little known,

that few of them have received any particular name.

2. THE iſland of *St. BARBARA*, is about 46 leagues north of *Trinidad*, and about ſeven weſt from the continent: being about 30 miles long, and 10 broad.

THERE are alſo the iſlands of *St. Katherine*, and *Guafo*, or *Nomans*; with ſeveral other ſmall inconſiderable iſlands along the coaſt, as far as *Chili*: but the iſland of *Noſtra Senora de Socoro*, and thoſe of the *Archipelago* of *Chonos*, are included among, and deſcribed under, the *Chileſian* iſlands.*

IV. THAT part of *CHILI*, which is in the poſſeſſion of the native *Indians*, compoſes a very extenſive territory, on both ſides the *Andes*, inhabited by ſeveral diſtinct tribes or nations; of whom ſome account has already been given under the deſcription of *Chili*.† Some of thoſe *Indians* are under a tributary ſubjection to the *Spaniards*; and others retain their original independency.

THE free *Indians* are very numerous, and inhabit the greateſt part of the country, eſpecially towards the mountains. They are the braveſt people of all the natives of *America*; ſtrong in body, and intrepid in mind; conſtant in their reſolutions, and prodigal of loſing life when they think it neceſſary to be hazarded for glory or liberty. Their habitations are only huts, made of branches of trees, large enough to ſhelter a whole family. Their furniture is coarſe, and their diet plain; for they deſpiſe all ſuperfluities. Their apparel is a ſort of a waiſtcoat of woollen ſtuff, with drawers of the ſame that come down to their knees; and they have a kind

* See this Volume, p. 248. † See p. 170, 191, 192, 219, and 251.

kind of cloak or mantle when they go abroad; but uſe no linnen under their cloaths. They have a circle of wool, of various colours, on their heads; with fringes hanging from it, which they move in token of reſpect to their acquaintance: their necks are adorned with ſtrings of ſhells, which they gather on the ſhore; though ſome of them have pearls curiouſly wrought; and others hang little birds, of beautiful colours, to their caps, on each ſide of which is a plume of feathers about half a yard high. The women partake of the ſpirit and bravery of the men; being as abſtemious in their living, as patient of fatigue, and as reſolute in defence of their country.

THEY have the ſame way of keeping ſingular accounts, remarking particular events, and conveying traditional intelligence, as is in uſe among the *Peruvians*. The people are governed by their reſpective chiefs; who claim no authority but in the adminiſtration of juſtice, and commanding their tribes in time of war; having neither palaces nor revenue; or any other marks of reſpect paid them, except in the execution of their office: but they manage the whole affairs of their nation in certain general aſſemblies, where every queſtion is decided by a majority of voices.

OGILBY ſays, they are governed by particular chiefs, called ulmens and curacens; but theſe are ſubject to a governor general, called a nentoke or apucoraw, who, upon a vacancy, is elected by them, on a formal condition to govern for the common benefit and honour of the ſtate.

THEIR religious tenets are full of abſurdities; and their conceptions of the immortality of the

ſoul

ſoul are very imperfect: but they are not ſuch barbarians as the *Spaniards* have repreſented them; for they have too much bravery to delight in cruelty, and too much ſpirit to ſubmit to ſlavery.

V. THE country of the *AMAZONS* is bounded by the equator, which ſeparates it from *Terra Firma*, on the north; by *Brazil*, and the *Atlantic Ocean*, on the eaſt; by *Brazil*, and *Paraguay*, towards the ſouth; and by *Peru*, on the ſouth-weſt: lying between 50 and 75 degrees of weſt longitude, and between the equator and the 15th degree of ſouth latitude.

THIS denomination of the country was given to it from a ſuppoſed nation of female warriors, that were reported to inhabit the banks of one of the greateſt rivers in the world, which runs from weſt to eaſt all through this extenſive territory: but the *Amazons* were only a nation invented by the *Spaniards*. The country enjoys a more temperate air than could be well expected ſo near the equator: it abounds in large foreſts, of ebony, iron wood, logwood, brazil, and cedars; with ſome fertile fields, and verdant meadows; having plantations of tobacco, cotton, ſugar, yarn, ſarſaparilla, and other roots: there are many rivers that water the country; but they all of them fall into the great river of the *Amazons*, which riſes at the foot of the *Andes*, and falls into the *Atlantic Ocean*.

THE nations who inhabit the banks of theſe rivers are computed to be about one hundred and fifty; who have ſome manufactures of cotton: but delight moſt in making war upon one another, and taking their priſoners into ſlavery.

THE

THE *Spaniards*, in 1540, penetrated into this country, under the command of *Gonzalo Pizarro*; who was obliged to return to *Peru*, after loſing moſt of his men on ſuch an unſucceſsful expedition: beſides, he was deſerted by *Franciſco de Orellana*, who ſailed down the river of the *Amazons*, and proceeded to *Spain*, where he gave ſuch a deſcription of the riches of the country, that his Catholic majeſty appointed him governor, and ſent him over with a conſiderable body of forces: though he periſhed in the enterprize, which was afterwards ſeveral times renewed, as well by the *Portugueſe* as by the *Spaniards*, but without any ſucceſs. Nor would ſucceſs have been equivalent to their trouble: becauſe, they were convinced that there were no mines of gold and ſilver to be found in this country.

HOWEVER, it is ſaid, the jeſuits have entered this country, where they have built thirty-nine towns, and converted ſeveral thouſands of the inhabitants. They have likewiſe engraved a map of the river *Amazons*, or *Orellana*, which they call *Maranhon*; and ſay, it runs 1800 leagues before it falls into the *Atlantic Ocean*, into which it diſembogues itſelf by 84 mouths.

VI. THE country of *POPAYAN*, and the whole province of *Terra Firma*, abound with ſeveral nations of *Indians*, governed by their own caziques; who are fond of the retention of that liberty which they have magnanimouſly preſerved againſt the invading *Spaniards*: for liberty is the greateſt bleſſing that providence can confer upon human nature, as it ennobles the ſpecies by inſpiring men with the moſt virtuous ſentiments, and encouraging them to the moſt

honourable

honourable actions: therefore, upon the whole, what ſervices have the *Spaniards* conveyed to the world by their conqueſts in *America?* they have depopulated kingdoms, and murdered millions by the ſword; when they pretended to ſubdue them for the promotion of religion; and when they might have gained infinite more advantage to themſelves by the arts of peace.

DISSERTATION II.

Reflections on the PORTUGUESE *colony of* BRAZIL; *the trade there; and the extraction of gold from* PORTUGAL.

THE *Portugueſe* ſhewed themſelves a penetrating and enterprizing people in their diſcoveries; which led the way, and ſuggeſted the deſign to *Columbus:* their conqueſts in the *Eaſt Indies* were won and loſt with rapidity: but they had better fortune in the *Brazils*, where they recovered their poſſeſſions from the *Dutch*, after the *Spaniards* had ruined the trade of *Portugal*, ſunk her naval power, and reduced her *American* plantations almoſt to a ſtate of annihilation.

DON *Emanuel* king of *Portugal*, pretended to be ſole lord of the navigation and trade of the *Atlantic Ocean*; which gave occaſion to a very warm diſpute between *Elizabeth* queen of *England*, and Don *Sebaſtian* king of *Portugal*; wherein it was apparent, that his *Portugueſe* majeſty had not acquired ſuch a dominion, by right of occupation, or otherwiſe,

wiſe. Before *Portugal* was annexed to *Spain*, her monarchs were remarkable for their attention to the increaſe of naval power, the ſupport of their colonies, and whatever might extend their commerce; which facilitated their amazing progreſs in *India*, whereby they introduced a new channel of trade to the oriental world, and ruined the old one which had been ſucceſsfully carried on for ſeveral years by the *Italians*. But, in 1580, the crown of *Portugal* was ſeized upon by *Philip* II. of *Spain*, who annexed it to the reſt of his dominions; nor had the *Portugueſe* an opportunity of ſhaking off the *Spaniſh* yoke till 1640, when *John* duke of *Braganza*, by a moſt amazing revolution, aſcended the throne of *Portugal*, and recovered the liberties of his countrymen; who, under the tyranny of *Spain*, were ſunk into a miſerable ſtate, from whence they were thus happily extricated, and have ſince recovered their internal ſtrength.

The colonizing of *Brazil* occaſioned the aggrandizement of *Portugal:* but the *Portugueſe* were in poſſeſſion of this extenſive province many years before they were ſenſible of its ſubterraneous wealth. They expected ſilver at firſt, yet found little: though, in 1680, they diſcovered a great deal of gold in the mountains; which has ſo much increaſed the inhabitants of *Brazil*, and enlarged their trade, that it has been imagined the *Portugueſe* in that province will, in a few years, be more numerous and opulent than in *Portugal*: for, beſides the annual extraction of gold, coined and uncoined, to the value of five millions ſterling, the kingdom of *Portugal* receives a great advantage by the importation of the diamonds, ſugar, tobacco,

and

and hides of *Brazil*; eſpecially the tobacco, which is eſteemed the moſt valuable in the world.

THE *Portugueſe* ſhewed no great concern, either for extending or improving their territories in *Brazil*, after the expulſion of the *Dutch*, till the Infant Don *Pedro*, the regent of *Portugal*, in 1685, began to think of improving the *American* dominions, and eſpeeially the two extremities of *Brazil*, which were well ſupplied with people in a ſhort time after, who found out the mines of gold.

AS the ſucceſs of their mines and plantations, depends upon the labour of negroes, the *Portugueſe* conſtantly take care to obtain a competent number for this purpoſe, by virtue of their *African* ſettlements, which are of greater extent than what is poſſeſſed by any other *European* power in that country. It is reported, that they annually carry over 50,000 ſlaves to *Brazil*, from the eaſtern coaſt of *Africa*; and that they have above 200,000 in the country adjacent to the bay of *All Saints*, as alſo about a third of that number at *Fernambuco*.

IN return for all the wealth brought from *Brazil*, the *Portugueſe* ſend over in every fleet large quantities of all kinds of the richeſt *European* goods, and eſpecially of *Britiſh* manufactures; whereby *Great Britain* obtains a balance of about a million ſterling every year from *Portugal*: but the native poverty of the *Portugueſe* was ſo great, on their diſcovery of the gold mines, that they would have found it impoſſible to work them, if it had not been for the credit they received from other countries, particularly *Great Britain*, in the neceſſary commodities for that purpoſe. As their

returns

returns of bullion augmented, their credit was extended: but, though now much enriched themſelves, they ſtill work their very mines, and carry on almoſt all the colony commerce, as well as much of their home trade, with foreign capitals: for they are credited with all articles of traffic, till the returns arrive; inſomuch, that the merchants of other countries ſtand the diſburſe of the coſt of their goods, and charges of tranſporting them to *Portugal*, with the duties there, which are very high on moſt of the articles re-exported.

THE extraction of gold from *Portugal* is prohibited; notwithſtanding that kingdom muſt pay a great balance in bullion to every other nation with which ſhe has any trading connexion. Therefore it is neceſſary for the *Portugueſe* government to conſider gold as a commodity, and to wink at its exportation; without which indulgence to foreigners, the natives could not carry on any of their commerce: for the *Portugueſe*, by parting with their gold, enjoy the comforts and elegancies of life; make a reſpectful figure in *Europe*; and are ſecure, ſingly from *Great Britain*, of a fuller and ſafer protection than they could poſſibly buy from the hire of any number of mercenary troops.

THE general trade to *Portugal* continues to increaſe among the *European* powers, and it is likely to remain in that ſituation; becauſe as the wealth of the *Portugueſe* in the *Brazils* is increaſing, the number of inhabitants is increaſed; for every fleet carries away multitudes of people who improve the country, and conſequently will make ſtill larger demands from *Europe*; whereby *Great Britain* is intitled to have a ſhare equal to the encouragement

ſhe

ſhe gives to the conſumption of the wines and fruit of *Portugal.*

UPON the whole, this colony is the moſt profitable of any in the world: ſince, conſidering the proportion between the two kingdoms, *Portugal* draws more profit from the *Brazils*, than *Spain* from both *Mexico* and *Peru:* the whole commercial intereſt of *Portugal* lies now chiefly in the *Weſt*, as it formerly lay in the *Eaſt Indies:* and their ſtrength is ſo great in *America*, that they have no reaſon to apprehend any thing from their neighbours; for the only danger to which they are expoſed, is from an inſurrection of their own negroes, which might be attended with lamentable conſequences.

F I N I S.

2 JY 61